CENTURY OF GENOCIDE

SECOND EDITION

CRITICAL ESSAYS AND EYEWITNESS ACCOUNTS

Samuel Totten

William S. Parsons

Israel W. Charny

EDITORS

Routledge
New York • London

Also available as a printed book
see title verso for ISBN details

CENTURY OF GENOCIDE

CENTURY OF GENOCIDE

SECOND EDITION

CRITICAL ESSAYS AND EYEWITNESS ACCOUNTS

Samuel Totten

William S. Parsons

Israel W. Charny

EDITORS

Routledge
New York € London

Published in 2004 by
Routledge
270 Madison Avenue
New York, NY 10016
www.routledge-ny.com

Published in Great Britain by
Routledge
2 Park Square
Milton Park, Abingdon
Oxfordshire OX1 4RN UK
www.routledge.co.uk

Copyright © 2004 by Taylor & Francis Books, Inc.

Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group.

This edition published in the Taylor and Francis e-Library, 2005.

"To purchase your own copy of this or any of Taylor & Francis or Routledge's collection of thousands of eBooks please go to www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk."

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilized in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission from the publishers.

Library of Congress Cataloging-In-Publication Data:

A century of genocide: critical essays and eyewitness accounts / edited by Samuel Totten and William S. Parsons and Israel W. Charny. … 2nd ed.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 0-415-94429-5 (hc: alk. paper) … ISBN 0-415-94430-9 (pb: alk. paper) 1. Genocide…History…20th century. 2. Crimes against humanity…History…20th century. I. Totten, Samuel. II. Parsons, William S. III. Charny, Israel W.
HV6322.7.C46 2004
909.82…dc22

2004000759

ISBN 0-203-49569-1 Master e-book ISBN

ISBN 0-203-57638-1 (Adobe eReader Format)

Contents

Acknowledgments vi

Map Credits ix

Preface xi

Editors xvii

Contributors xix

Introduction 1
SAMUEL TOTTEN AND WILLIAM S. PARSONS

1 Genocide of the Hereros 15
JON BRIDGMAN AND LESLIE J. WORLEY

2 The Armenian Genocide 53
ROUBEN PAUL ADALIAN

3 Soviet Man-Made Famine in Ukraine 93
JAMES E. MACE

4 Holocaust: The Genocide of the Jews 127
DONALD L. NIEWYK

5 Holocaust: The Gypsies 161
SYBIL MILTON

6 Holocaust: The Genocide of Disabled Peoples 205
HUGH GREGORY GALLAGHER

7 The Indonesian Massacres 233
ROBERT CRIBB

8 Genocide in East Timor 263
James Dunn

9 Genocide in Bangladesh 295
Rounaq Jahan

10 The Burundi Genocide 321
René Lemarchand

11 The Cambodian Genocide „ 1975…1979 339
Ben Kiernan

12 The Anfal Operations in Iraqi Kurdistan 375
Michiel Leezenberg

13 The Rwanda Genocide 395
René Lemarchand

14 Genocide in Bosnia and Herzegovina 415
Martin Mennecke and Eric Markusen

15 Genocide in Kosovo? 449
Martin Mennecke

16 Out of that Darkness Responding to Genocide in the 21st Century 455
Jerry Fowler

17 The Intervention and Prevention of Genocide: Where There Is the Political Will, There Is a Way 469
Samuel Totten

Index 491

Acknowledgments

Above all, we wish to sincerely thank all of the contributors to this book. All are extremely busy and dedicated scholars, and we greatly appreciate their contributions. At Routledge, we wish to thank our initial editor, Eric Nelson, for his interest in publishing the second edition of this volume, and we also wish to thank Robert Tempio, our new editor, and Angela Chnapko.

We also wish to thank Dr. George McCleary and his students in the Geography Department at the University of Kansas for the research, thought, and hard work they put into the development of the maps that accompany each of the case studies of genocide in this new edition of *Century of Genocide*.

As we did in the first edition, we wish to thank Kristy L. Brosius and the late Sybil Milton for their excellent work in translating court testimonies that appear in Chapter 6, "Holocaust: The Genocide of Disabled Peoples." With Rouben Adalian, we offer a heartfelt thanks to Donald E. Miller and Lorna Touryan Miller for granting us permission to publish several of the interviews they conducted with survivors of the Armenian genocide. René Lemarchand and the editors also wish to acknowledge and sincerely thank Liisa Malkki for granting us the right to reproduce the accounts of the Burundi genocide from her doctoral dissertation, *Purity and Exile: Transformation in Historical-National Consciousness among Hutu Refugees in Tanzania*. Finally, we greatly appreciate, too, all of the publishers and organizations that provided us with permission to use excerpts of various eyewitness accounts that previously appeared in their publications.

Map Credits

The maps for this volume were created by George F. McCleary, Jr. (of the University of Kansas) with the assistance of Matthew Stratton (Armenia), Christopher Parker (Ukraine), Georgia Palos (Gypsies), Danli Li (Indonesia), Fredrick Tucker (East Timor), Geoffrey Folker (Bangladesh), and Peter Gogol (Cambodia). Additional assistance was provided by Darin Grauberger (of the University of Kansas Cartographic Services), John C. Kostelnick, Matthew Harman, William S. Parsons (and his staff at the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum), Leslie Dienes, and Rouben P. Adalian.

Base maps were derived from Digital Chart of the World, World, and Geoart, as well as from The Times Atlas of the World: Comprehensive Edition (1967 and later editions), Goode's World Atlas (1923 and later editions), other atlases and sheet maps (in the Thomas R. Smith Map Collection of the University of Kansas), and Web sites (including the Geographic Names Database of the National Imagery and Mapping Agency and the U.S. Board on Geographic Names „ http://gnswww.nima.mil/geonames/GNSindex.jsp).

Data for the individual maps were derived from area-specific atlases, such as Historical Atlas of the Holocaust (United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, 1996); Atlas of the Holocaust (Martin Gilbert, 1993), Armenia: A Historical Atlas (Robert W. Hewsen, 2001), and Ukraine: A Historical Atlas (Paul Robert Magocsi, 1985); publications about specific genocides, for example, Gerhard Pool (1991), Samuel Maharero, and Roman Smal-Stocki (1960); and Web sites (including the Perry-Castañeda Library Map Collection of the University of Texas „ http://www.lib.utexas.edu/maps/, and the Yale University Cambodian Genocide Program „ http://www.yale.edu/cgp/index.html).

For further information about the maps, contact mcleary@ku.edu.

Preface

Which Genocide Matters More? Learning to Care about Humanity

ISRAEL W. CHARNY

> He was all alone after the inferno had ended. He had lost his wife and six children, also his parents, three brothers and two sisters.

This is the vignette I begin with when I speak to audiences on "uniqueness versus universality of the genocide," a subject I have been invited to talk about not only in professional settings but also on several occasions before both specifically Jewish and Armenian audiences.

In each case for a specific ethnic audience, the living survivors of the tragic hell of their respective genocide have no doubt in their minds that their genocide, the Holocaust or the Armenian genocide, was unique. I never argue with the survivors; for I have no question that on an experiential level, the staggering suffering endured in any genocidal event is in the eyes and hearts of those who undergo it "beyond belief," and beyond anything that any other civilized people could have endured.

In the small events of our everyday lives, too, each of us tends naturally to speak excitedly about our own individual experience of events „ "I shook the hand of the President," "I was at the scene of the fire," "I heard the shot a block away," and so on. Certainly each survivor of a forced march or a death camp is entitled to speak of his/her personal horror as overwhelmingly unique in much the same way, and collective groups of

peoples who have suffered genocide quite naturally frame the tragedy and suffering they have endured as unique.

I then turn to my audience and say, in each case according to the audience•s objective ethnic identity:

> I am aware of the pain you felt for this survivor, but I have to point out to you that I did not actually say to you that this 52-year-old man and his family were (Jewish/Armenian). How would you feel if I now told you that, in fact, they were an (Armenian/Jewish) family?

and I then reverse the identity from that of the audience. The feeling in the audience seems to change immediately. Something of the terrible heaviness of shock and mourning that had been filling the room seems to lift the moment I suggest the victims are not of the people of the audience.

Now I comment on this phenomenon:

> I have the feeling that the pain in the room has lessened now, but why have your feelings changed?
>
> You seem now to feel less deeply for the victims than when you thought they were of your people. Of course, I believe that it is entirely natural to feel more deeply about one•s own people, and less for another people, and I don•t think that is wrong in any way. But you and I nonetheless need to ask ourselves whether we feel sufficiently involved and caring for this other people. How much do you as a (Jew/Armenian) <u>want</u> to care about this other people?

A discussion then generally ensues in which some members of the audience acknowledge that, of course, they feel more intensely about their own people, but that they also do care about the (Holocaust/Armenian genocide). Typically, some will add that they know many (Jews/Armenians), they have learned a good deal about their history; and, in fact, that there are historical connections between the Armenian genocide and the Holocaust because in the opinions of many scholars, the •successful• completion of the Armenian genocide paved the way for the Holocaust 20 years later.

Obviously, it is the simple nature of humans that we care more about ourselves first of all. Each of us cares selfishly about our own survival first, next for our loved ones, and then for our people, but we also should not be indifferent to the plight of others and the tragedies of their losses of life. In any case it is also a matter of self-interest to care about the genocide of others. In cases of genocide of peoples other than our own, it should also be obvious to us that any and every event of mass murder, to any and every

people, also opens the door to greater possibilities of further genocidal massacres of additional peoples, perhaps again including our own people.

I turn to the audience once again and now add as follows:

> The truth that I haven't told you is that the family I have described was neither Jewish nor Armenian. Please see now how you feel if I tell you that, in fact, the family that I described was Cambodian.

Now the mood in the room changes once again. It is evident that, unwittingly, somelesse degree of caring than before settles on the majority of the members of the audience; in both cases, Jews and Armenians tend to feel less familiar with and less involved with the much more different and far-away Asiatics.

Again I comment on the naturalness of the phenomenon:

> As I said earlier, I believe it is proper to accept the naturalness of the fact that we all tend to care less about other people the further away we feel from them. In this case, these are people who live on the other side of the world, look very different from us, speak a more unfamiliar language, practice a religion with whom we have less historic connection, and so on, but again the question has to be how much genuine empathy do we want to feel for this other people?
> How much do we want to expect of ourselves to feel towards a "strange" people who have suffered a horrifying extermination of their innocent men, women, and children?

In western consciousness, there is generally widespread acceptance of the Holocaust as the single most terrible event of genocide to date in human history, to such an extent that it has become the archetypal or generic statement of mass murder, referring not only to its own incredible events, but now also standing as a reminder of other instances of genocide to other people.

Consciousness of the Holocaust has become not only a memorial to the terrible Jewish tragedy but a reminder of all mass murders, with the welcome result that, hopefully, humankind can never again be as indifferent or unaware of the dangers of genocide in the future history of our species.

The Holocaust is unique in a number of ways, but these actually underscore that much more how capable human beings and society have been „ and still are „ of destroying different peoples en masse.

Never was there a society so totally committed to an ideology of the total destruction of another people; never were the near-total resources and the organizational genius of a modern society devoted toward creating an actual "industry of death"; never were the tools of science and engineering harnessed so extensively for making more efficient deaths of civilians in assembly-line machinery that transformed people into disposable refuse

to be burned in ovens; and never were a people persecuted so relentlessly as sub-human, degraded, and tortured cruelly and systematically for long periods of time on their way to their tormented •appointments Ž with death.

The Holocaust was a decidedly unique event which is superimposed on a pattern of genocidal killing long familiar in human history, and this is the reason it has forced us into a new stage of awareness of the dangers of mass murder in the evolution of human society.

Caring about Oneself and Others

There should be a scale along which one should be able to judge both the extent of devotion to one•s own people and then also the extent to which one sincerely and maturely feels a kinship to the plights of other human beings.

Learning to care about human life is, of course, a psychological developmental process. It begins with an infant caring about itself and the unfolding of its natural narcissism of healthy self-ness. Disturbances of this vital foundation for life are seen in later years either when people undervalue themselves or when they overcompensate with overvaluation of themselves (pathological narcissism which might be defined as much more selfishness than healthy self-ness).

As the child grows in warm self-regard and as a secure human being, the child•s caring extends through a natural progression to take in mother, father, and siblings, then extends to and becomes a basic loyalty to one•s entire family.

From the connection to family grows a sense of connection to one•s extended family, and then also a sense of inner loyalty to one•s tribe, religion, ethnic identification and nation. There are also other important focuses for one•s identification-loyalty such as pride and acceptance of one•s gender as male or female, and pride and loyalty to one•s occupational group „ profession, guild or union, and place of employment. However, one must note that these natural loyalties also show up at times as obligatory and forced loyalties to one•s kinfolk Ž when, in fact, the person does not have a healthy foundation of self-love and there is no genuine love of one•s family or people. Unfortunately, as in many other aspects of human nature, people can force an approximation of the subsequent stages of development. Many times people even make understandable unconscious efforts to continue growing, or at least to simulate growth and convince themselves that they are okay, even though, sadly, they are not really developing inside themselves. An example is how many people get married when they really are not ready for a marriage relationship. People who are pretending to feel loyalty to their family or nation, even if for understandable and decent reasons of wanting to be connected to their worlds will,

nonetheless, not be able to move easily to still higher levels of development of caring about and for other peoples and nations.

Along the way, any of one's natural reference groups – family, tribe, religion, etc. – can, and often do, betray or so insult the feelings and values of a person that the loyalty and identification with that reference group lessen. However, for a psychologically healthy person, even reduced identification, say, with a relative who has greatly disappointed us, or with one's nation when it has gone into a war that we do not believe is just, does not cause a final rupture in the more basic sense of belonging to the group identity. There may be mourning and sadness over not being able to enjoy fully our connection to those who have betrayed us, but the deepest connection to who we are and come from persists.

For fully alive people, the range of belonging and identification continues to expand steadily with the unfolding of their lives and becomes part of an overall love of life. Slowly but surely, the developing personality becomes aware of new connections that go far beyond the concrete personal connections to which one was born by chance of one's specific family, tribe or nation, and one becomes aware of many other human beings and their families, tribes and nations.

A sense of kinship with all other peoples begins to take form, and a notion of a common humanity begins to transcend identifications with any specific sector of that humanity. One's sense of connection with one's own personal territory expands to a sense of larger geographic regions and of the common destinies of peoples who share oceans, forests, skies and weather-zones that go beyond artificial political territorial boundaries. There then develops even further a sense of being part of our entire planet Earth together with all the peoples who inhabit our one planet. Moreover, as mankind grasps dimly the enormous vastness of the universe and then other universes far beyond the territory of our own planet, the fully developing human being will also feel a tug towards a nameless, not understandable identification with a larger cosmos and its infinite history and future.

Within the context of such optimal psychological development, there grows an appreciation of the holiness of all life, and there develops a value-commitment to opposing the mass destruction of any people, religion, ethnicity or nation.

Real and False Caring about Others

As indicated earlier, along the way people can fool themselves and others by seemingly adopting later stages of development that they have not really reached inwardly. Thus, many people can look like or talk about their apparent caring for other people, but not really feel caring.

Some of the most familiar examples of such false development of people and groups who take on appearances of connection and caring to others but do not really experience genuine respect and caring are found in connection with religious orders who preach "tolerance" but do not practice it towards the minorities in their midst. Many religious leaders, of many faiths, have risen high in their organization hierarchies but do not really have in their hearts a spiritual connection with their Creator as having created the many different peoples of our planet "in the image of God." Moreover, as overall organizations, any number of religious movements have failed bitterly to fight against genocide. Many religions have not taken a stand against the genocides perpetrated by their own societies/nations; and many religions have themselves supported and themselves committed genocide in the very names of their gods.

Similarly, there are political leaders and movements that ostensibly call for "freedom" and "democracy" and "justice," but in the process allow themselves to murder masses of people as if in the name of these values. In the names of liberte, egalite and all manner of idealistic values people have gone into orgies of murdering. Self-righteousness is often the basis for arrogant self-entitlement to create ever-expanding definitions of who "deserves" to die as the "enemies" of whatever grand idealistic values.

Tragically, many times in history even previously oppressed groups and minorities who justifiably turn to revolution and battle against their cruel and exploitative rulers will adopt in the course of their battle a use of force that includes torture, cruelty and mass murder of others. Then, like everyone else, the previous victims enter into a progressively expanding lust for killing. Once having gained power, the revolutionaries are transformed into new versions of preening narcissists and ugly dictators, e.g., the bizarre megalomanic mass murders by Stalin and the Communists, Idi Amin in Uganda or Ceausescu in Romania, all of whom cultivated bizarre forms and degrees of idolatry to their images, and all of whom oppressed and brought about mass deaths of their "opponents."

> It is entirely natural to care the most deeply about one's self and one's own people, and to care more intently for some other peoples with whom one feels a more immediate kinship, but ultimately the challenge of human development, both for the benefit of individual mental health and happiness and for the benefit of humanity, is for more people to care about all human life.

Editors

Samuel Totten, who now specializes in the study of the intervention and prevention of genocide, is a member of the Council of the Institute on the Holocaust and Genocide (Jerusalem, Israel).

Among the books he has edited, co-edited, or written on genocide are First-Person Accounts of Genocide Committed in the Twentieth Century: An Annotated Bibliography (Westport, CT: Greenwood Publishers, 1991); Genocide in the Twentieth Century: Critical Essays and Eyewitness Accounts (New York: Garland Publishers, 1995); Pioneers of Genocide Studies (New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers, 2002); Teaching About Genocide: Issues, Approaches, and Resources (Greenwich, CT: Information Age Publishers, 2004); The Intervention and Prevention of Genocide: An Annotated Bibliography (Westport, CT: Greenwood Publishers, forthcoming); The United Nations and Genocide: An Annotated Bibliography (Westport, CT: Greenwood Publishers, forthcoming); and Dictionary of Genocide (Westport, CT: Greenwood Publishers, forthcoming).

His essays on genocide have appeared in such publications as Genocide: A Critical Bibliographical Review (Volumes 1, 2, and 3, 1988, 1991, and 1994, respectively); Encyclopedia of Genocide (Santa Barbara: ABC CLIO Publishers, 1999); The Holocaust Encyclopedia (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001); Annihilating Difference: The Anthropology of Genocide (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002); Will Genocide Ever End? (St. Paul, MN: Paragon House, 2002); The Genocidal Temptation (Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 2004) and Encyclopedia of Crimes against Humanity and Genocide (New York: Macmillan, forthcoming). Since 2000, he has served as the book review editor of the Journal of Genocide Research.

William S. Parsons is chief of staff of the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum in Washington. Before becoming chief of staff, he served as the Museum's director of education and was responsible for developing educational programs both in Washington and throughout the nation. For the past 30 years, he has been involved in writing, speaking, and creating programs that advance public awareness and knowledge about the Holocaust and genocide and its implications for the world we live in today.

Parsons was a co-founder of the Massachusetts-based Facing History and Ourselves National Foundation, Inc. His published works include Facing History and Ourselves: Holocaust and Human Behavior (Margot Strom, co-author, 1982); The Middle Passage (contributing writer and editor, 1986); Everyone's Not Here: Families of the Armenian Genocide, A Study Guide (1989); Genocide in the Twentieth Century: Critical Essays and Eyewitness Accounts (co-editor with Samuel Totten and Israel W. Charny, 1995); and Century of Genocide: Eyewitness Accounts and Critical Views (co-editor with Samuel Totten and Israel Charny, 1997).

Parsons holds a BA in history from Cornell College and an MA from the University of Wisconsin, Madison. In 2002, he received the Distinguished Achievement Award from Cornell College for his career work in the field of Holocaust and genocide studies.

Israel W. Charny is executive director of the Institute on the Holocaust and Genocide in Jerusalem, which he founded in 1979 with the late Shamai Davidson and Elie Wiesel.

Among his major contributions to the field of genocide studies are developing and hosting the first international conference on the Holocaust and genocide in Tel Aviv in 1982; publishing How Can We Commit the Unthinkable? Genocide, the Human Cancer in 1982; founding and editing the series, Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review (four volumes 1988, 1991, 1994, 1997); founding and editing Internet on the Holocaust and Genocide from 1985 to 1995, the first interdisciplinary network for researchers from many different fields; and developing and editing The Encyclopedia of Genocide (Santa Barbara, CA: ABC CLIO Publishers, 1999, French edition 2001, e-book on Internet 2003).

Among some of his many other publications on genocide are Book of the International Conference on the Holocaust and Genocide (editor, with Shamai Davidson), 1983; Toward the Understanding and Prevention of Genocide (Westview Press, 1984); and Genocide in the Twentieth Century: Critical Essays and Eyewitness Accounts (with Samuel Totten and William S. Parsons, 1995).

Contributors

Rouben Paul Adalian is the director of the Armenian National Institute (ANI) in Washington. He is a specialist on the Caucasus and the Middle East, and has taught at a number of universities, including the School of Foreign Service, Georgetown University, and the School of Advanced International Studies, Johns Hopkins University.

In 1993 he completed a project to document the Armenian genocide in the United States National Archives, which resulted in Chadwyck-Healey Inc. publishing the 37,000 pages of American evidence on microfiche. The accompanying 476-page Guide to the Armenian Genocide in the U.S. Archives 1915…1918 was issued in 1994.

Adalian is the associate editor and resource editor on the Armenian genocide of the award-winning Encyclopedia of Genocide (1999) and has contributed to a number of publications, including Genocide in Our Time (1992), Genocide in the Twentieth Century (1995), Studies in Comparative Genocide (1999), Genocide: Essays Toward Understanding, Early-Warning, and Prevention (1999), Actualité du genocide des Arméniens (1999), and America and the Armenian Genocide (2003).

He is also the author of From Humanism to Rationalism: Armenian Scholarship in the Nineteenth Century (1992) and the Historical Dictionary of Armenia (2002). Furthermore, Adalian is the compiler and editor of the ANI Web site (http://www.armenian-genocide.org), which holds extensive information on the Armenian genocide. He received his Ph.D. in history from the University of California, Los Angeles.

Jon Bridgman received his Ph.D. from Stanford in 1961 and is a professor of history at the University of Washington, where he teaches classes in modern European history. He is the author of Revolt of the Hereros (1981) and The End of the Holocaust: „ The Liberation of the Camps (1990).

Robert Cribb is Senior Fellow in the Research School of Pacific and Asian Studies at the Australian National University in Canberra, Australia. He has written extensively on violence in Indonesia and is the editor of The Indonesian Killings of 1965…1966: Studies from Java and Bali (Clayton, Victoria, Australia: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies, 1990). His most recent book is Historical Atlas of Indonesia (London: Curzon, 2000).

James Dunn has degrees in political science and Asian studies from Melbourne University and the Australian National University. Initially, he served as a defense analyst specializing in Asian affairs, then as a diplomat in Western and Eastern Europe, and finally as an Australian Consul to Portuguese Timor. In 1974, he was a member of a two-man fact-finding mission sent to Timor by the Australian government; and in 1975, at the beginning of Indonesian military intervention in East Timor, he led an aid mission. For the ten years prior to his retirement he was senior foreign affairs advisor to the Australian parliament, with a specialization in Soviet affairs, Southeast Asia, and human rights issues. In 2001, Dunn carried out an investigation of crimes against humanity in East Timor for UNTAET. Dunn is the author of Timor: A People Betrayed (Brisbane: Jacaranda-Wiley, 1983).

Jerry Fowler is the staff director of the Committee on Conscience at the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum. He previously was legislative counsel for the Lawyers Committee for Human Rights. Fowler is also on the adjunct faculty of George Washington University Law School and has been a scholar-in-residence at the American University School of International Service. He is a graduate of Stanford Law School and Princeton University.

Hugh Gregory Gallagher, an independent scholar, is the author of By Trust Betrayed: Patients, Physicians and the License to Kill in the Third Reich, and FDR's Splendid Deception. His paper ""Stamping out Spastics": Euthanasia's Ž was presented at the first International Conference on the Holocaust sponsored by the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum. Gallagher is a polio quadriplegic and has used a wheelchair for 40 years. He resides in Cabin John, Maryland.

Rounaq Jahan is currently affiliated with the Southern Asian Institute at Columbia University as a senior research scholar. She was a professor of political science at Dhaka University, Bangladesh, from 1970…1993. Her publications include Pakistan: Failure in National Integration (New York:

Columbia University Press, 1972), and Bangladesh Politics: Problems and Issues (Dhaka: University Press Ltd., 1980).

Jahan also worked for the United Nations for many years and was the coordinator of the Women•s Program at the United Nations Asia-Pacific Development Centre in Kuala Lumpur, Malaysia, from 1982 to 1984. She was also Head of the Rural Women•s Employment Program at the International Labour Organization in Geneva, Switzerland, from 1985 to 1989. Jahan received her Ph.D. in political science from Harvard University in 1970 and did post-doctoral research at Columbia, Chicago, and Harvard.

Ben Kiernan is A. Whitney Griswold Professor of History and director of the Genocide Studies Program at Yale University, and Convenor of the Yale East Timor Project. Kiernan is author of *How Pol Pot Came to Power* (London: Verso Books, 1985), *The Pol Pot Regime: Race, Power and Genocide in Cambodia under the Khmer Rouge, 1975…1979* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2002), three other works, and a hundred scholarly articles on Southeast Asia and the history of genocide. He is also editor of *Genocide and Democracy in Cambodia: The Khmer Rouge, The United Nations, and the International Community* (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1993).

From 1994…1998, Kiernan was founding and managing director of Yale University•s Cambodian Genocide Program, which he established with grants from the United States and other governments. He founded Yale•s Genocide Studies Program in 1998. Kiernan is a member of the Editorial Boards of *Critical Asian Studies*, *Human Rights Review*, the *Journal of Human Rights*, and the *Journal of Genocide Research*. Currently, he is writing a global history of genocide since 1500.

Michiel Leezenberg teaches in the Department of Philosophy of the Faculty of Humanities at the University of Amsterdam. He has conducted extensive research on the Anfal operations and subsequent developments in Iraqi Kurdistan, and made several field trips to the region. Among his main publications relevant to the Anfal operations are •Between Assimilation and Deportation: History of the Shabak and the Kakais in Northern Iraq,Ž in B. Kellner-Heinkele and K. Kehl-Bodrogi (Eds.) *Syncretistic Religious Communities in the Near East*. Leiden: Brill, 1997; •De Anfal-operaties in Iraaks Koerdistan: tien jaar straffeloosheid.Ž (•The Anfal Preparations in Iraqi Kurdistan: Ten Years of Impunity.Ž) in *Soera*, June 1998; •Politischer Islam bei den Kurden.Ž in *Kurdische Studien*, 2(2001)5…38; and *Genocide and Responsibility: International Reactions to Iraq•s Chemical Attack Against Halabja* (in preparation).

René Lemarchand is professor emeritus of political science at the University of Florida (Gainesville). He has written extensively on Rwanda, Burundi, and the Congo. His book, Rwanda and Burundi (Praeger 1970), received the Melville Herskovits Award of the African Studies Association in 1970. He served as Regional Advisor on Governance and Democracy with USAID from 1993 to 1998, first in Abidjan and then in Accra. He has been visiting professor at Smith College, Brown University, the University of Copenhagen, the University of Bordeaux, and Berkeley.

James E. Mace is currently professor of political science at Kiev-Mohyla Academy National University and a feature writer for The Day (a newspaper and Web site in Kiev). Mace was staff director of the U.S. Commission on the Ukraine Famine created by the U.S. Congress. Prior to his work with the Commission on the Ukraine Famine, he had been affiliated with the Russian and European Center at the University of Illinois at Champaign and the Ukrainian Research Institute of Harvard University.

Among his publications are Communism and the Dilemmas of National Liberation: National Communism in Soviet Ukraine, 1918…1933 (Harvard Series in Ukrainian Studies, Cambridge, MA: Harvard, 1983), • The Man-Made-Famine of 1933 in the Soviet Ukraine: What Happened and Why Ž in Israel W. Charny (Ed.), Toward the Understanding and Prevention of Genocide: Proceedings of the International Conference on the Holocaust and Genocide (Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1984), and • Genocide in the U.S.S.R. Ž in Israel W. Charny (Ed.), Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review, Volume One (London and New York: Mansell Publishers and Facts on File, 1988); and • The Ukrainian Genocide Ž in The Encyclopedia of Genocide (Santa Barbara, CA: ABC CLIO Publishers, 1999).

Eric Markusen is senior research fellow at the Danish Institute of International Studies, Department for Holocaust and Genocide Studies, and professor of sociology and social work at Southwest State University, Minnesota.

Among his publications on genocide are The Genocidal Mentality, with Robert Jay Lifton; The Holocaust and Strategic Bombing, with David Kopf; and • Professional Ethics and Denial of the Armenian Genocide, Ž with Roger Smith and Robert Jay Lifton; he is also associate editor of the Encyclopedia of Genocide.

Martin Mennecke, who has a LL.M. from the University of Edinburgh, is a doctoral candidate in international law at the University of Kiel, Germany. The focus of his thesis is the most recent evolution of the legal definition of genocide, and it is supported by the Friedrich-Ebert-Stiftung and Herbert-Quandt-Stiftung.

Currently affiliated with the Danish Institute of International Studies, Department for Holocaust and Genocide Studies, he is mainly working on issues of international criminal law. Among his publications are • The International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia and the Crime of GenocideŽ (with Eric Markusen) in Steven L. B. Jensen (ed.) Genocide: Cases, Comparisons and Contemporary Debates. Copenhagen: The Danish Center for Holocaust and Genocide Studies, 2003.

Sybil Halpern Milton was born in New York City in 1941 and died in Bethesda, Maryland, in 2000. A graduate of Barnard College, she received graduate training at Stanford and Munich. From 1974 to 1984, she served as director of archives of the Leo Baeck Institute in New York; from 1985 to 1997, she was associated with the U.S. Holocaust Memorial Council, and then served as an archival consultant, research curator, and finally senior resident historian with the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum. From 1997 until her death she served as vice president of the Independent Experts Commission: Switzerland „ World War II.

In addition, she served as curator or contributor to 11 exhibits and published numerous articles on Nazi Germany and the Holocaust. She was co-author of Art of the Holocaust (1981) and author of In Fitting Memory: The Art and Politics of Holocaust Memorials (1991). She co-edited the Simon Wiesenthal Center Annual (1984…1990) and the 26 volumes of Archives of the Holocaust (1990…1995). She also edited or co-edited The Stroop Report (1979), The Holocaust: Ideology Bureaucracy, and Genocide (1980), Genocide: Critical Issues of the Holocaust (1983), Innocence and Persecution: The Art of Jewish Children in Nazi Germany, 1936…1941 (1989), The Story of Karl Stojka: A Childhood in Birkenau (1992), and a special issue on the Holocaust of the journal History of Photography (winter 1999).

Donald L. Niewyk is a professor of modern European history at Southern Methodist University. A specialist in the history of antisemitism, he is the author of six books, including Fresh Wounds: Early Narratives of Holocaust Survival (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1998); The Jews in Weimar Germany (New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction, 2001); and most recently The Holocaust: Problems and Perspectives of Interpretation (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2003).

Leslie J. Worley received his Ph.D. from the University of Washington, where he also served as a lecturer in history.

Introduction

SAMUEL TOTTEN AND WILLIAM S. PARSONS

Will the killing ever stop? Will the scourge of genocide ever be eradicated? Will humanity ever be wise enough to prevent the deaths of potential genocidal victims before they become yet another set of statistics in the welter of statistics?

These and similar thoughts continue to weigh heavily on our minds as we complete this second edition of *Century of Genocide: Critical Essays and Eyewitness Accounts*. How could they not? In the not-too-distant past, daily broadcasts and reams of print journalism issued terrible news about the genocide taking place in Bosnia-Herzegovina; the genocide of some 800,000 Tutsis and moderate Hutus by Rwandan government forces and paramilitary extremists; the Indonesian army–sponsored "killings in East Timor in the late 1990s; the sporadic and ongoing mass killings in Burundi; the continuing conflict and killing in the Sudan; and the horrific violence and killings that have recently erupted in the Congo. That's not even to mention the hateful epithets and actions of neo-Nazis in Germany, the United States, and elsewhere; the insidious and incremental destruction of indigenous peoples' ways of life across the globe; and the ubiquitous deprivation of various peoples' human rights (which sometimes explodes into genocidal actions).

It is also, to say the least, disconcerting that we live in a world in which certain parties and nations perpetuate the denial of certain genocides that have occurred. Such denial has run the gamut from those who refuse to acknowledge the issue of genocide due to the discomfort the subject causes them to those who distort history for personal or political gain to those who deny and distort out of sheer ignorance or hate. Scholars often arrive at different historical interpretations, but those who purposely distort the

historical record and disregard vast amounts of historical documentation know exactly the game they play. As every attorney knows, it is often easier to create doubt and win than it is to prove what actually took place. Indeed, such deniers, minimizers, and obfuscators (Hawk, 1988, p. 151) seem to gain some sort of satisfaction from the fact that they drain the energy and limited resources of legitimate scholars in genocide studies who are compelled to repudiate the distortions in order to keep the historical record intact.

By minimizing or distorting a particular genocide, deniers assault survivors one more time. In fact, one of the key rationales for including accounts by survivors and other eyewitnesses in this book is to send a message that no matter how hard the deniers try to manipulate history, accounts of the genocide will be recorded and remembered.

The essays in this book also reveal, time and again, the attempts by governments to cover up genocides or to minimize the destruction of such acts. In essay after essay we read about the efforts of governments to rationalize mass killings; thus, we hear about "security zones," "enemies of the state," and "regrettable losses of life." We also read about the excuses and compromises offered by outside govenments as to why they chose not to intervene in order to prevent acts of genocide from being perpetrated.

At times it is difficult not to be disheartened, especially when governments deny and distort the historical record of genocide or do too little or nothing at all when new genocides erupt somewhere across the globe. Indeed, at times it is difficult not to wonder whether all the scholarship, all the words, and all the pledges to "Never Forget" are simply some type of anodyne to ease the pain of the survivors or soothe the conscience of those who deeply care about such tragedies but feel impotent to staunch genocide early on. And at times it is difficult not to wonder whether those of us who hold out hope that genocide can, at a minimum, be halted early on are doing so more out of desperation than any sense of objectivity or reality.

We recognize that these were bleak words and thoughts with which to introduce a book, but we believe that they are apropos. Certain situations demand bluntness and anger, and the continued perpetration of genocide, in our minds, is one of them. That said, and despite the ostensible ludicrousness of it, we do hold out hope — no matter how slim — that somehow, someway, someday, this bleak situation will be altered.

Certainly a primary reason why we harbor such optimism — guarded though it is — is due to the fact that we see glimmers of hope on the horizon in regard to combating genocide. Among them are the following: The field of genocide studies is growing at a phenomenal rate and coming into its own; an ever-increasing amount of research into a wide array of issues germane to the prevention and intervention of genocide is being

conducted and disseminated; there is an ever-increasing number of activists and other nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) that are focusing on the goals of intervention or prevention of genocide; an increasing number of scholars and activists are becoming more vocal about the need to break the stranglehold that realpolitik, the lack of political will, and the sacrosanctness of sovereignty have on efforts to put a quick end to genocidal actions; the establishment of both the International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia (ICTY) and the International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR), where perpetrators of two of the most recent genocides are being tried; the establishment of the International Criminal Court (ICC), which sends a clear message that those who contemplate genocide in the future will face potential capture, trial, and punishment; and, last but not least, the ever-increasing focus in universities, colleges, and even secondary schools, on educating the young about genocide.

A key reason we are co-editing this book is to inform, educate, cajole, prod, and encourage people to break out of their mold of silence, to objectively reach out to the victims and the voiceless, and to demand that such atrocities be halted before the tally of deaths becomes, once again, nothing more than another statistic in the welter of statistics.

Definitional Issues vis-à-vis the Term "Genocide"

Ever since Raphael Lemkin, a Polish Jewish émigré and noted scholar who taught law at Yale and Duke universities, coined the term genocide in 1944, there has been an ongoing, and often heated, debate in regard to that which constitutes the most exact and useful definition of "genocide." To form the new term, Lemkin combined the Greek genos (race, tribe) and cide (killing). He went on to define genocide as

> *[t]* he coordinated plan of different actions aiming at the destruction of essential foundations of the life of national groups with the aim of annihilating the groups themselves. The objectives of such a plan would be the disintegration of the political and social institutions of culture, language, national feelings, religion, economic existence, of national groups and the destruction of the personal security, liberty, health, dignity, and even the lives of the individuals belonging to such groups. Genocide is directed against the national group as an entity, and the actions involved are directed against individuals, not in their individual capacity, but as members of the national group. (Lemkin, 1944, p. 79)

As one can readily ascertain, Lemkin's definition is extremely broad.

After lengthy debate over the definition of genocide and ample compromise on how it should be defined by the international community, the United Nations adopted the Genocide Convention on December 9, 1948, and in doing so defined genocide in the following manner:

> In the present Convention, genocide means any of the following acts committed with the intent to destroy, in whole or in part, a national, ethnical, racial, or religious group, as such:
>
> a. Killing members of the group
> b. Causing serious bodily or mental harm to members of the group
> c. Deliberately inflicting on the group conditions of life calculated to bring about its physical destruction in whole or in part
> d. Imposing measures intended to prevent births within the group
> e. Forcibly transferring children of the group to another group

This definition is, at one and the same time, extremely broad and extremely narrow. As a result, it is not surprising that over the years many scholars have proposed alternative definitions of genocide (Chalk and Jonassohn, 1990, p. 23; Charny, 1988a, p. 4; Drost, 1975; Fein, 1990, pp. 23…25; Horowitz, 1980). To this day, though, no single definition has been generally accepted as definitive. This constitutes a serious problem, especially as it relates to the intervention and prevention of genocide „ not to mention the prosecution of cases that involve genocidal-like actions. It also complicates the work of scholars as they undertake the study of the preconditions, processes, and ramifications of genocide.[1]

It should be noted that we, along with many other scholars (Charny, 1988a; Charny, 1988b; Drost, 1975; Kuper, 1981; Kuper, 1985; Whitaker, 1985; Totten, 2002b), believe that both political and social groups should be included in any definition of genocide. In light of that, we have purposely chosen to include certain cases of mass destruction of political and social groups in this book.

Focus of the Book

Century of Genocide is comprised of critical essays by some of the most noted scholars in the field of genocide studies about various genocidal acts committed during the course of the 20th century. Each essay on a particular genocide is accompanied by oral testimony about the genocide. All but two of the previous essays have been updated and revised. One was not

revised to due to death of our good friend and colleague Sybil Milton. Two genocides not previously addressed in Century of Genocide are included herein: the Iraqi genocide of the Kurds in northern Iraq (1988) and the genocide perpetrated in Bosnia-Herzegovnia in the 1990s.

Additionally, this second edition contains essays on whether the events in Kosovo constituted genocide, the early warning efforts of the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum•s Committee of Conscience, and the intervention and prevention of genocide. Due to space constraints two chapters that appeared in the earlier edition of Century of Genocide have been removed: one on the Soviet deportations carried out by Stalin and one on the genocide of various indigenous groups.

The historical cases addressed in this revised edition are as follows: genocide of the Hereros; the Armenian genocide; the Soviet man-made famine in Ukraine; the Nazi genocide of Jews, Gypsies, and disabled peoples; the Indonesian massacre of suspected •Communists Ž; the genocide in East Timor; the Bangladesh genocide; the genocide of the Hutu in Burundi; the Cambodian genocide; the Iraqi genocide of the Kurds in the late 1980s; the 1994 Rwandan genocide; the genocide perpetrated in the former Yugoslavia in the 1990s; and an essay on the situation in Kosovo in the late 1990s.

The cases presented in this book were chosen because the editors believe that each one constitutes an act of genocide or, at the very least, constitutes an action that involved a genocidal process. Another factor that was taken into consideration was whether eyewitness accounts were available. If no such documentation was available, then a genocide was not included herein.

In order to assure some semblance of continuity, each author was asked to address a series of questions posited by the editors: Who committed the genocide? How was the genocide committed? Why was the genocide committed? Who were the victims? What was involved (e.g., state, societal institutions, various peoples ethnic groups, individuals with certain job roles/professions, bystanders, etc.)? What were the outstanding historical forces and trends at work that led to the genocide? What was the long-range impact of the genocide on the victim group? What have been the responses of individuals, groups, and nations to this particular genocide? Is there agreement or disagreement among •legitimate scholars Ž as to the interpretation of this particular genocide (e.g., preconditions, implementation, ramifications)? Do people care about this genocide today? If so, how is that concern manifested? And what does a study of this genocide contribute to the field of genocide studies?

Since the intent of this book is to highlight a range of genocides in the 20th century, readers need to keep in mind that the essays provide only a basic overview, detailed though they are, of the various historical events.

Each of the contributing authors was also asked to select one to four of the most informative eyewitness accounts that they could locate in regard to the genocide that they discussed in their essay. A couple of the authors were hard-pressed to locate much at all in the way of eyewitness accounts. This is an acute problem, and one that will be discussed in more detail elsewhere in this Introduction.

Value and Limitation of Eyewitness Accounts

Time and again, scholars have noted the unique contribution such eyewitness accounts make in regard to providing a more thorough understanding of the genocidal process. In speaking about eyewitness accounts of the Armenian genocide, Richard Hovannisian (1973), professor of history and director of the Near Eastern Center at the University of California at Los Angeles, asserted: "Eyewitness accounts of decisive events may be as valuable as official dispatches and reports. It is in such versions especially that the human element becomes manifest, affording insights not to be found in documents" (p. xxiii).

Totten (1991b) commented: "First-person accounts by victims and others are capable of breaking through the numbing mass of numbers in that they provide the thoughts, the passions and the voices of those who experienced and/or witnessed the terrible calamity now referred to as genocide. And while first-person accounts serve many purposes among the most significant is the fact that authentic accounts constitute valuable testimony as to what it means to be caught up in the maelstrom of hatred and savagery that is genocide" (p. xi).

Oral accounts also remind scholars, educators, and students who record or study statistics, examine documents, and argue over definitions of genocide and interpretations of genocidal actions that the victims are human beings just as they and their family members are — that is, innocent men, women, and children.

Although eyewitness accounts are a valuable means for documenting historical events, their validity as a primary source is only as good as the procedures by which they are collected as well as the accuracy of the witnesses whose accounts are documented. The same research standards used to develop historical works need to be applied to gathering, recording, authenticating, and interpreting eyewitness accounts.

Dearth of Oral Testimony

Just as the documentation and scholarship is much richer for certain genocides and genocidal processes than others, the same is true of the availability of eyewitness accounts for certain genocidal situations.

There are numerous reasons as to why there is a dearth of first-person accounts of various genocidal acts, but among the main ones are the following: The survivors may not have been literate, and thus did not have the means to develop a written record; in the aftermath of the genocide the survivors may have had to struggle simply to survive, thus documenting their tragedy was not foremost on their minds; the survivors may not have had the financial means to take the time to record and collect testimony; the survivors may not have had a consituency that was interested in their plight, and thus no one collected or supported documentation of their tragedy; the survivors may have been (or continue to be) leery of people who question them about their plight; and some survivors may have continued to live under the very regime that perpetrated the genocide, which, in turn, prevented (through censorship, coercion, or threats of violence) the survivors or others from documenting the atrocities (Totten, 1991, pp. xliii–liii).

In the introductions to the oral testimony that accompany their essays herein, a number of contributing authors address the dearth of first-person accounts. For example, in his introduction to the eyewitness accounts of the Burundi genocide, René Lemarchand notes that "oral witness accounts of the events surrounding the 1972 genocide are extremely scarce, in part because of the restrictions placed by the Burundi authorities on unaccompanied travel throughout the countryside — especially when the aim is to interview survivors of the genocide — and in part because of the logistical, administrative, and political difficulties involved in gaining access to refugee camps in neighboring states".

Speaking about the dearth of eyewitness accounts of the Indonesian genocide of suspected "Communists", Robert Cribb reports that:

> [T]he Indonesian killings have produced remarkably few direct testimonies by survivors or participants [. . .] [In fact,] few records of any kind were made or kept of the killings as they took place. The few foreign journalists who were in the country found access to the countryside very difficult and were in any case kept busy reporting the complex political changes taking place in national politics. [. . .] Indonesians on the whole have remained reluctant to speak about the killings, except in very general terms. This reluctance probably stems both from a sense of shame at the magnitude of the massacres and an unwillingness to discuss what is still a sensitive topic in a country dominated by the military who presided over the killings in the first place.

Despite the aforementioned impediments and difficulties that scholars, activists, and others face in regard to collecting eyewitness accounts of

certain genocidal acts, it is still disturbing that there has not been a concerted and collective effort by both the scholarly and activist communities to collect as many accounts as possible of the least-documented genocides in this century. While not wishing to appear cynical, it seems that by not assisting those who have largely remained voiceless, we (the scholars and the activists) have contributed to, rather than ameliorated, the problem. Instead of locating the survivors and other witnesses in order to •return Ž the voices to the voiceless, we have remained on the sidelines.[2] Certainly a place to begin the collection of such testimony would be many of the refugee camps located across the globe. Other places are those communities and enclaves in various parts of the globe where relatively large numbers of survivors of the same genocide now reside and where censorship and political constraints do not pose a problem to the researchers or the witnesses.

In regard to those genocidal acts where survivors and witnesses to the genocide are still alive, it is incumbent upon scholars and activists to collect as many accounts as possible. Not to do so leaves the historical record bereft of what could prove to be invaluable information. It also consitutes a further injustice to the victims.

Scholarly Activity: The Critical Need for an Intensified Study of Genocide, Its Preconditions, and Methods of Prevention and Intervention

The amount and quality of scholarly study of different genocidal acts has varied greatly over the years. While the Holocaust is certainly the most heavily documented and studied genocide, other genocidal events suffer from a dearth of scholarly examination. This must be addressed.

There is also a great need to continue the scholarly work that has been undertaken of late to understand the processes that lead up to and eventuate in acts of genocide.

Certain scholars and activists seem to have come to the conclusion that if there is ever going to be any hope at all in regard to preventing genocide then they (and not governments) are going to have to be the catalyst behind such hope. Numerous times throughout this century no government (either individually or collectively) has taken it upon itself to address this issue or to be proactive in this regard. (In regard to the United States• actions and inaction, see Samantha Power•s •A Problem from Hell Ž: America and the Age of Genocide New York: Basic Books, 2002.)

Although Leo Kuper (1985), the late genocide scholar, made the following comments about the role of the United Nations some two decades ago, his assessment remains relevant today: • I assume that realistically, only a small contribution can be expected from the United Nations, at any rate in

the immediate future Ž (p. 21). Later in the book, he asserts: • The performance of the United Nations in response to genocide is as negative as its performance on charges of political mass murder. There are the same evasions of responsibility and protection of offending governments and the same overriding concern for state interests and preoccupation with ideological and regional alliances Ž (p. 160). Sadly, the genocides perpetrated in Iraq in 1988, Rwanda in 1994, and Yugoslavia in the 1990s bear out his comments.

We believe that a concerted effort needs to be made by as many scholars, activists, and nongovernmental bodies as possible to continue to study all aspects of genocide and human rights violations with an eye toward developing, as soon as possible, a highly effective genocide early warning system „ and then, finding a way to prod the United Nations and independent nations to summon the political will to act on such a system•s findings.

Individuals, NGOs, and the International Community: The Need for a Well-Organized, Collective, and Concerted Effort to Intervene or Prevent Genocide

Individually, a person can only do so much to protest genocidal actions or to work on behalf of oppressed individuals. Collectively, people have a much better chance of effecting positive change. Today there are literally thousands of nongovernmental organizations working on various issues vis-à-vis the protection of international human rights. A small number of these organizations are working, in one way or another, on the issue of genocide. Many of them face a constant struggle to continue to remain in existence; this is due, in large part, to the limited resources they have at their disposal. As a result of this situation, both the focus of their efforts as well as their influence is limited. Certainly a key way for these organizations to gain more clout is to band together in order to complement and supplement one another•s strengths as well as to act as a single body and to speak in one voice when addressing issues that they hold in common (Totten, 1994).

To be more effective, those working on the issue of genocide need to begin to initiate campaigns against genocide with an eye towards influencing international public opinion as well as the decisions and actions of governmental organizations. They also need to establish themselves as a main source of documentation for investigating the perpetration of genocide. As it now stands, most individuals and organizations dealing with the issue of genocide are putting more time into working on the scholarly examination of genocide (including issues of intervention and prevention) than the actual prevention of or intervention in genocide.

There are, though, several major exceptions to this rule, and among the most notable are the Germany-based Gesellschaft fur Bedrohte Volker (Society for Threatened Peoples); the London-based International Alert (IA) Standing International Forum on Ethnic Conflict, Genocide and Human Rights; and the Denmark-based International Work Group for Indigenous Affairs (IWGIA) (Totten, 1994).

Educating about Genocide

In his hard-hitting and perspicacious report, Revised and Updated Report on the Question of Prevention and Punishment of the Crime of Genocide, Ben Whitaker•s arguments still hold true today:

> The results of research [on the causes of genocide] could help form one part of a wide educational programme throughout the world against such aberrations (e.g., genocide), starting at an early age in schools. Without a strong basis of international public support, even the most perfectly redrafted [U.N.] Convention [on Genocide] will be of little value. Conventions and good governments can give a lead, but the mobilization of public awareness and vigilance is essential to guard against any recurrence of genocide and other crimes against humanity and human rights *ƒ* . As a further safeguard, public awareness should be developed internationally to reinforce the individual•s responsibility, based on the knowledge that it is illegal to obey a superior order or law that violates human rights. (1985 p. 42)

We agree with Whitaker that it is crucial for educational institutions across the globe to teach their students about the causes and ramifications of genocide as well as the fact that it is each person•s responsibility to act in a moral manner when human rights infractions (including genocide) rear their ugly face. As for the goal of Holocaust and genocide education, Israel Charny (1993) makes the perceptive point that the goal•must be to make awareness of Holocaust and genocide part of human culture, so that more and more people are helped to grow out of killing and from being accomplices to killers, or from being bystanders who allow the torture and killing of others Ž (p. 3).

The sort of study that we advocate is one that is immersed in both the cognitive and the affective domains (values and feelings). More specifically, it is one that (1) engages the students in a study of accurate and in-depth theories, research, and facts; (2) contextualizes the history; (3) avoids simple answers to complex history; (4) and addresses issues of personal and societal responsibility both from a historical as well as a contem-

porary perspective. (For a more in-depth discussion of such concerns, see Totten•sTeaching About Genocide:Issues, Approaches and Resources. Greenwich, CT: Information AgePublishing, 2004.)

Indeed, an all-out educational effort by scholars, activist organizations, and educators is needed. Working together, these three groups could produce accurate and engaging curricular materials on various facets of genocide and reach studentsin a way that has notbeen attempted thus far. While such organizations could approach educational endeavors in a host of ways,we think the following avenueswould prove tobe a good starting point: (1) develop engaging and highly readable resourcebooks on genocide; (2)develop accurate,informative, and engaging films and videos on various aspects of genocide; (3)develop state-of-the-art computer software on various aspects of genocide; (4)develop teacher manuals and curriculum guides that help integrate the study of genocide into existing courses such as social studies,history, geography, economics, anthropology, humanities, government studies, contemporary issues, English, and art; (5) establish international computer conferences on genocide specifically for secondary and university students (such conferences could lead to a global network of people engaged in thought-provoking discussions about genocide,its causes and ramifications, and the ways individuals and groups are working to intervenein current crises toprevent future genocides); (6) collect video testimonies of survivors and eyewitness accounts, and edit the collection for usein secondary, college, and university classrooms; and (7) conduct research into the efficacy of current efforts to teach about genocide.

Conclusion

The scholars who have contributed essays to this volume are doing vitally significant and, in many cases,groundbreaking work in regard to assisting humanity to gain a clearer understanding as tohow, why, and when genocide is perpetrated. They, and others like them, are to be commended. At the same time,what is still needed is the development of a critical mass of humanity across the globe towork for the intervention and prevention of genocide. Todevelop such a critical mass,individuals, communities, and states need to undertake an effort to educate themselves and their young about genocide; speak out against injustices anywhere against anybody; remain vigilant; and finally, encourage and prod one•sfamily, friends, community, and nation to be vigilant.

In that vein, we agreewith Charny (1988a)when he argues that:

> There needs to be a growing consensus onthe part of human beings and organized society that penetrates the very basis of human culture that mass killing is unacceptable to civilized

> peoples, otherwise the prevailing momentum of historical experience will continue to confirm for generation after generation that genocide is a phenomenon of nature, like other disasters, and this view of the inevitability of genocide as an almost natural event will continue to justify it in the sense of convincing people that nothing can be done (p. 23).

Finally,

> ƒ it is easy to call for the prevention of genocide. In fact, far too often in [books] of this sort, as well as at commemorative ceremonies for the victims and survivors, well-intentioned people almost perfunctorily recall Santayana•s admonition, •Those who do not remember the past are condemned to repeat it.Ž Through its repeated use, this finely wrought and powerful notion has become not much more than a cliché. The past must be remembered, yes; but humanity must go beyond merely remembering a particular genocidal act. Inherent in authentic remembrance is vigilance and action. More often than not, remembrance has been bereft of such crucial components. As Elie Wiesel has eloquently and powerfully stated: •Memory can be a graveyard, but it also can be the true kingdom of manŽ The choice is before humanity (Totten, 1991a, pp. 334-335).

Notes

1. What has been delineated here in regard to the definition of genocide is, quite obviously, a synopsis of a complex issue. For more detailed discussions, see the following: Chalk and Jonassohn, 1990, pp. 8…27; Charny, 1988a, pp. 20…38; Charny, 1988b, pp. 1…19; Dadrian, 1975; Drost, 1975; Fein, 1990; Kuper, 1981, pp. 19…39; Kuper, 1985, pp. 8…22; Legters, 1984; and Whitaker, 1985.
2. We, of course, commend the efforts of many of the contributors to this volume in regard to their Herculean efforts to collect eyewitness accounts under extremely difficult conditions.

References

Chalk, Frank, and Jonassohn, Kurt (1990). The History and Sociology of Genocide: Analyses and Case Studies. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Charny, Israel W. (1988a). •Intervention and Prevention of GenocideŽ pp. 20…38 in Israel W. Charny (Ed.), Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review. New York: Facts on File.

Charny, Israel W. (1988b). •The Study of GenocideŽ pp. 1…19. In Israel W. Charny (Ed.) Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review. New York: Facts on File.

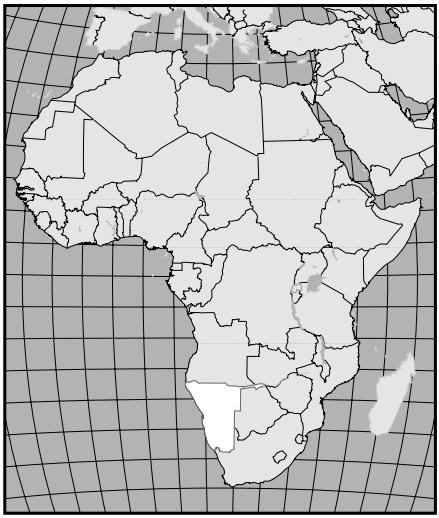
Charny, Israel W. (1993). •Editorial CommentŽ Internet on the Holocaust and Genocide, April, 43, p. 3.

Dadrian, Vahakn (Fall 1975). •A Typology of GenocideŽ International Review of Modern Sociology 5, 201…212.

Drost, Pieter (1975). The Crime of State (Vol. 2). Leyden: A.W. Sythoff.

Fein, Helen (1990). •Genocide: A Sociological PerspectiveŽ Current Sociology 38(1):1…126.

Hawk, David (1988).• The Cambodian Genocide,Ž pp. 137…54. In Israel W. Charny (Ed.) Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review. New York: Facts on iFe.
Horowitz, Irving Louis (1980). Taking Lives: Genocide and State Power. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers.
Hovannisian, Richard (1973).• Introduction,Ž pp. xix…xxv. In Stanley E. Kerr•s The Lions of Marash: Personal Experiences With Near East Relief, 1919…1922. Albany: State University of New York Press.
Kuper, Leo (1981). Genocide: Its Political Use in the Twentieth Century. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
Kuper, Leo (1985). The Prevention of Genocide. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
Lemkin, Raphael (1944). Axis Rule in Occupied Europe: Laws of Occupation, Analysis of Government, and Proposals for Redress. Washington: Carnegie Foundation for International Peace. [Reprint, New York: Howard Fertig, 1973.]
Legters, Lyman H. (1984).• The Soviet Gulag: Is It Genocidal?Ž pp. 60…66. In Israel W. Charny (Ed.) Toward the Understanding and Prevention of Genocide: Proceedings of the International Conference on the Holocaust and Genocide. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.
Totten, Samuel (1991a).• First-Person Accounts of Genocidal Acts,Ž pp. 321…62. In Israel W. Charny (Ed.) Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review. Volume 2. London and New York: Mansell Publishers and Facts on iFe, respectively.
Totten, Samuel (1991b). First-Person Accounts of Genocidal Acts Committed in the Twentieth Century: An Annotated Bibliography. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press.
Totten, Samuel (1994).• Non-Governmental Organizations' Works on the Issue of Genocide,Ž pp. 325…57. In Israel W. Charny (Ed.) The Widening Circle of Genocide,„ Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review, Volume 3. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers.
Totten, Samuel (2002).• A Matter of Conscience,Ž pp. 545…80. In Samuel Totten and Steven Jacobs (Eds.) Pioneers of Genocide Studies. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers.
Whitaker, Ben (1985). Revised and Updated Report on the Question of the Prevention and Punishment of the Crime of Genocide. pp. 62 (E/CN.4/Sub.2/1985/6, 2 July 1985).



South West Africa

CHAPTER 1
Genocide of the Hereros

JON BRIDGMAN AND LESLIE J. WORLEY

In January 1904, a revolt broke out in German South West Africa. The Hereros, who inhabited most of the best grazing land in the colony, rose against the Germans. Two years later, when the German army finally succeeded in stamping out the last embers of the revolt, the Hereros all but ceased to exist as a cultural entity. Of the original 80,000 Hereros, only 20,000 remained alive and the survivors were so shaken by the catastrophe that they lapsed into a terrible lethargy that lasted for decades.[1]

On the face of it, the destruction of the Hereros might appear a paradigm of genocide, but there are some complications. By definition, genocide usually refers to the deliberate policy of a government as opposed to a random massacre by a local commander. To a large extent, the destruction of the Hereros was not the deliberate policy of the German government in Berlin, but rather the decision of the local commander.

This is not to say that the German actions during the revolt were not morally repulsive, but whether they should be subsumed under the rubric of "genocide" is another matter. When the Nazi regime and its collaborators set out to annihilate the Jews of Europe, the whole administrative structure of the government was pressed into service to carry out this diabolical policy, and the few voices of protest that were heard were in vain. When the Germans began the annihilation of the Hereros, loud and insistent protests were raised in Germany, and many agencies of the German government refused to be involved in what they considered an immoral act.

These protests were not totally in vain. Eventually, the German forces in South West Africa were forced to halt the overt slaughter of the Hereros

before the entire tribe had perished. And yet, this was genocide because it was an attempt by representatives of the German government to destroy a whole people with the knowledge and the tacit approval of the Kaiser and the General Staff, the two most important elements of the government.

The Victims

The Hereros were part of the Bantu tribal peoples, and related to the Ovambo, a tribe so fierce and warlike that the Germans for the most part left it alone. Early European travellers among the Hereros were impressed by their physical, handsome appearance. Charles Andersson (1856), a Swedish explorer, wrote, "The Damara [the Hottentot name for the Hereros], speaking generally, are an exceeding fine race of men *f* . Indeed, it is by no means unusual to meet individuals six feet and some inches in height, and symmetrically proportioned withal. Their features are, besides, good and regular; and many might serve as models of the human figure" (p. 49). Andersson was less impressed with the personal hygiene of the Hereros. "Both sexes are exceedingly filthy in their habits. Dirt often accumulates to such a degree on their persons, as to make the colour of their skin totally indistinguishable; while to complete the disguise, they smear themselves with a profusion of red ochre and grease. Hence the exhalation hovering about them is disgusting" (Andersson, 1856, p. 50).

Traditionally, the social and political organization of the Hereros was fairly complex and centered around paternal and maternal groupings. The nation was divided into almost 20 different oruzo or paternal groups. Each had a chief (who generally acquired his position through inheritance), had a herd of sacred cattle (which was inalienable), and lived in a werft or village of mud and dung huts. If a werft became too large, the chief usually permitted the founding of a new and separate village, but this had to remain dependent on and subordinate to the oruzo chief. Parallel to the oruzo groups were the eanda groups, which were matrilineal. The cattle of these were used to pay debts and at times loaned to poor members of the group. Eanda members were generally not allowed to live in the same oruzo. Thus the eanda organization formed a network that bound the Herero people as a whole together. All land was held to be common property of the tribe and could not be alienated except for temporary purposes.

By 1903, this traditional organization had deteriorated and altered somewhat, in large part due to the increased presence and influence of the Germans and other Europeans. As the possibility of selling cattle for cash expanded, some Hereros became cattle ranchers. This caused social distinctions to appear between the poor "field Hereros," who owned few or no cattle and were obliged to work, and the richer Hereros, mainly chiefs, who had acquired large herds by means fair and foul. The Herero

nation was divided into nine tribes. The largest of these was centered on Okahandja and was estimated to have some 23,000 members living in about 150 villages. Other large tribes existed near Omaruru, Otjimbingwe, and Waterberg, while the five tribes of eastern Hereroland were all fairly small. The total Herero population was estimated to be roughly 80,000 men, women, and children.[2]

While each tribe had a chief who was its nominal leader, in fact even the richest chief was no more than a primus inter pares, since all the cattle owners in the tribe shared in the decision-making process. Samuel Maherero held the position of Paramount Chief, a fairly new office, because he was chief of the tribe located in the Okahandja area, the largest single grouping of Hereros, and was supported by the German colonial authorities and the Rhenish Missionaries, since he was a Christian. In actual practice, intertribal authority was almost nonexistent, as each chief ruled his own tribe, and the agreement of all the chiefs was needed for common action.

Even in 1903, the Hereros sought to preserve their traditional way of life. They were a pastoral people whose entire way of life centered on their cattle. The Herero language, while limited in its vocabulary for most areas, contained over a thousand words for the colors and markings of cattle. Herero myths extolled the fact that the creator gave them the cow and the bull, while the rest of mankind suffered with lesser gifts. So much did the Hereros love their animals that they rarely slaughtered them. The basis of their diet was sour milk mixed with blood drawn from the cattle and the wild fruits and berries that they found in the bush. The Hereros were content to live in peace as long as their cattle were safe and well-pastured; but when their cattle were threatened, the peaceful Hereros became formidable warriors.[3]

The Perpetrators

In the early 1880s, German influence in South West Africa was stronger than that of any other European power, but for all that it was still minuscule. Furthermore, the government in Berlin, under Chancellor Bismarck, had no interest in imperial expansion. Bismarck modified his position somewhat in 1882 when he gave Adolf Lüderitz, a German trader, a guarantee of imperial protection for such lands as he might acquire in Africa, providing Lüderitz acquired a harbor and "clear title." Subsequently, Lüderitz purchased several large parcels of land and the harbor of Angra Pequena in South West Africa from the Orlam tribe, and he asked the German government for official recognition and protection. After a two-year period of inquiries to Whitehall and the Cape government concerning the British position on South West Africa, which resulted in no clear statement of policy, Bismarck in April 1884 had all

parties notified that Lüderitz and his property were under the protection of the Reich.

In April 1885,Dr. Goering, the father of Hermann Goering, the future Reichsfeldmarschall of the Third Reich, arrived in South West Africa as Imperial Commissioner. Goering•s main task was to extend German control and influencebeyond Lüderitz•sholdings by persuading the various tribal chiefs to sign treaties of protection. Kamaherero, the Herero chief, signed such a treaty on October 21, 1885. Within four years, the Herero leader repudiated this treaty. Kamaherero felt the treaty was utterly useless since it provided him with neither men, money, nor arms and equipment to protect the Herero cattle and to fight the Orlam, a neighboring tribe with whom the Herero had cattle wars.

To add insult to injury, Kamaherero told Goering that he was giving Robert Lewis, an English adventurer, power of attorney to exercise control and authority over the territory. The threat of English intervention along with the collapse of the Deutsche Kolonialgesellschaft für Südwestafrika forced Bismarck to dispatch Captain Curt von François with a small detachment of soldiers to South West Africa. For better or worse,South West Africa now became a German colony and the direct responsibility of the German govenment. The people of this colony were to obey the Germans notbecausethey had agreed to, but becausethe Germanshad the force to coerce them.

Why the Genocide Was Committed

In the autumn of 1903, the German administrators and officials in South West Africa were quietly confident that the colony was advancing in an orderly way along the path that led to •civilization.Ž[4] Since the last native uprising in 1896,law and order had, for the mostpart, prevailed. Year after year the governor, Major Theodor Leutwein, had travelled throughout the colony visiting the chiefs and dispensing justice. In the summer of 1903he had demanded that the old Herero chief Tjetjo and his tribe turn in all their weapons. Backed by the support of the principal Herero chief, Maherero, who had been a longtime enemy of Tjetjo, Leutwein was able to enforce compliance without recourse to arms (Schwabe, 1904p. 67). The whole incident seemed to prove toLeutwein that the Hereros had lost the will to resist the white man. Therefore, in the autumn of 1903,he withdrew over half of the troops stationed in Hereroland for duty in the extreme south of the colony.

Yet beneath the tranquil surface there was growing bitterness among the Hereros, and indeed most of the other tribes aswell, at the treatment they received at the hands of the German settlers and traders. On the eve of the rebellion, a Herero told a German officer that •if the Herero is angry

and storms atyou there is nothing to fear, but when he laughs and is friendly be on your guard *f* . Sir, they are so crafty that [even]if you understand their speech and sit with them at the fire, they canbe deciding your death whilst you think they are talking about flowersŽ (Wellington, 1967,p. 67). And soit wasin the lastdays of 1903; the Germansdeluded themselvesinto thinking their subjectswere quiescentwhen in reality they were planning an uprising that would shake the German rule to its foundations.

By 1904, the Hereroshad so many reasonsfor rebelling that it might be more profitable to ask why they had not acted soonee, rather than why they revolted when they did. First, every Herero was alarmed at the progressive loss of land. Up to 1900, only a minor portion of the Herero hereditary lands had been alienated, but with the completion of the railroad from the coast tothe capital of the colony, Windhoek, the pace of alienation accelerated rapidly, so that by the end of 1903, 3.5 million hectares out of a total of 13 million had beenlost, and the day when the Hereroswould not have enough land to continue their traditional way of life wasfast approaching. The loss of land, frightening asit was to any Herero who looked only a few years into the future, did not yet in 1903 affect the daily life of the Hereros.

The problem of debt was another matter. For many years, Hereroshad fallen into the habit of borrowing money from the white traders at usuriousrates of interest.Leutwein had long been concerned about this practice, which he considered not only immoral, but also politically explosive; however, all his attempts to find a solution had beenfrustrated by the powerful colonial interests,which grew rich on the profits. Finally, on July 23, 1903,Leutwein grasped the nettle and issued an ordinance that provided that all outstanding debts not collected within a year would be null and void.[5] The ordinancewent into effect on November 1, 1903. This law, whose sole purposewas towipe the slate clean after a reasonable period of time and thendiscourage further abuse of the credit system,had „ in the short run „ t he opposite effect.

The German traders, knowing that if they did not collect all outstanding debts within a year they would lose them forever, not unnaturally began recalling their loans asquickly aspossible. Tofacilitate the collection process, government officials, and on some occasions even soldiers, were pressed into service to aid traders. In some cases,traders turned over lists of their debtors tolocal officials; in others, the traders themselves expropriated as many cattle as they thought necessary to cover claims „ an d, as onetrader remarked, a few extra to cover any future claims.[6]

Moderate German newspapers were almost unanimousin citing the credit ordinance asthe principal reasonfor the uprising. On January 25,

1904, the Kölnische Zeitung editorialized: • The credit ordinance *f* is one of the direct causes of dissatisfaction among the Hereros. The dubious past of the traders in Europe is quite often the reason for their being down there in the first placeŽ (Bridgman, 1981, p. 60).

The Outstanding Historical Forces and Trends at Work that Led to the Genocide

The naked economic exploitation of the natives was a major reason for the rebellion, but a purely economic explanation is too simple. Racial tension, also a major factor, was real and very intense by 1903. Every year saw more and more white settlers coming into the colony • as conquerors, in a land which had not been conquered,Ž as Leutwein put it.[7] Typically these new settlers were ne•e-do-wells, and not a few of them were criminally inclined younger sons of the aristocracy, packed off to •dark ŽAfrica to prevent them from disgracing the family name at home. The old colonial hands like Leutwein had a real respect for Africans as men, because they knew them as soldiers and because they had fought against them. The newer arrivals saw the black African as nothing but a potential source of cheap labor at best, and some even raised the question whether the colony would not be better off if the black population were completely eliminated.

Indeed, when the rebellion broke out, a number of settlers voiced the opinion that the uprising was a positive advantage because it gave the Germans a chance to annihilate the natives. This prompted one missionary to exclaim in horror: • The Germans are consumed with inexpiable hatred and a terrible thirst for revenge, one might even say they are thirsting for the blood of the Hereros. All you hear these days is words like •make a clean sweep, hang them, shoot them to the last man, give no quarter.• I shudder to think of what may happen in the months ahead. The Germans will doubtless exact a grim vengeanceŽ (Imperial Colonial Office, File No. 2114, pp. 80…82[8]).

The consciousness of being white, which had no doubt played a major role in German actions from the very beginning, became a dominate factor for many colonists. White settlers normally referred to black Africans as •baboonsŽ and treated them accordingly. As one missionary reported: • The real cause of the bitterness among the Hereros toward the Germans is without question the fact that the average German looks down upon the natives as being about on the same level as the higher primates (•baboon• being their favorite term for the natives) and treats them like animals. The settler holds that the native has a right to exist only in so far as he is useful to the white man. It follows that the whites value their horses and even their oxen more than they value the natives Ž

(Drechsler, 1980, p. 133, no. 6). Among other things, this attitude manifested itself in the mistreatment of native women. In 1903, there were about 4000 white males in South West Africa and only 700 white women. The inevitable result of this imbalance was what the Germans referred to as •Verkafferung Ž or •Schmutzwirtschaft.Ž From the perspective of the natives, •Verkafferung Ž meant that the German men took their woman, peacefully if possible, but otherwise by force.

This contempt for the black African was held to be the reason for many acts of violence that whites perpetrated on the Hereros. Indeed, settlers were wont to explain such behavior in quasi-medical terms, inventing a disease called •tropical frenzy,Ž which was said to overtake white men in the tropics. A German doctor writing in 1902, however, rejected such an explanation: •I have never found anywhere any evidence of the disease which in the accounts of murders in the daily newspapers from the colonies plays such a role, that is •tropical frenzy• *f* . There are a relatively large number of men of a passionate temperament among the Europeans in the colonies because the average man of mild temperament would rather remain in his homeland. For a man of weak character there are, out under the palms, opportunities greater than in Europe to avoid the moral imperatives Ž (Drechsler, 1980, p. 133, no. 8). This contemptuous attitude was not confined to settlers. The Kaiser and his Chief of Staff, Count von Schlieffen, displayed attitudes hardly different from those of the average settler in South West Africa; the Kaiser was known to have said that Christian precepts were not applicable to heathens and savages (von Bülow, 1930…1931, 2:4). And when Matthias Erzberger, speaking in the Reichstag, pointed out that the black men had immortal souls just as the Germans did, he was hooted down by the whole right side of the house (Epstein, 1959, p. 637).

Such, then, was the temper of the whites and blacks in Hereroland on the eve of the rebellion. The Hereros, or at least a large portion of them, had decided that German rule meant not only personal humiliation and economic ruin, but the end of their traditional way of life. Given this conviction, they saw little reason to wait and see if conditions would improve. By 1903, the tinder was ready and only a spark was needed to set Hereroland aflame. That spark was provided in an unexpected way and from an unexpected quarter. Almost 500 miles to the south of Windhoek lived a Hottentot tribe called the Bondelzwarts. (See Kriegsgeschichtliche Abteilung, Grosser Generalstab, 1906…1907 for a detailed account.) Their land, which lay between the Karras Hills and the Orange River, was bleak and arid. Just how many Bondelzwarts there were was not known; the Germans, however, estimated that the tribe could muster somewhere between 300 and 700 warriors. A total of 161 white men lived in the area; included in this number were the military force, which consisted of one

officer, three noncommissioned officers, twelve men, and two civilian policemen. Since 1890, the Bondelzwarts had lived in peace with the Germans.

Then, in 1903, the local German authorities ordered the Bondelzwarts to register their guns. This demand, which the Bondelzwarts correctly interpreted as a prelude to total disarmament, was rejected by their chief, Willem Christian. To enforce compliance, the district chief, accompanied by five men, rode into Christian•s encampment. A fire-fight ensued in which three Germans were killed and a fourth wounded. Four days later (October 29, 1903) Leutwein in Windhoek received news of the affair. He at once dispatched two companies of regulars to restore order in the south. After a month of desultory fighting, the situation had not improved, but had actually deteriorated. The Bondelzwarts were by then cooperating with small bands of robbers who infested the Karras Hills and Leutwein himself went to the south to take personal command, leaving almost no troops in the north.

The Hereros sensed at once that they had an opportunity that might not come again. However, the absence of the soldiers and Leutwein was also a danger to them. No sooner was the restraining hand of Leutwein removed than the settlers began pushing the natives, hoping to drive them to some desperate act that would permit a final solution of the •black problem.Ž The Hereros trusted Leutwein (whom they called •Majora,Ž with a mixture of deference and affection), but to the whites he was a traitor to his race. One German asserted, •Leniency toward blacks is cruelty toward whites.Ž[9] And the German Colonial League produced a pamphlet that demanded that •the policy pursued so far towards the natives be changed in favor of our race.Ž (Imperial Colonial Office, 1904, iFe No. 2111, p. 26). Shortly after his departure, rumors were abroad in the land that the Germans had suffered a major military defeat in the south. Some said that Leutwein and 75 men had been killed; according to another version, Leutwein had been driven across the frontier and interned by the British. In a letter to Leutwein, Maherero described the situation in Hereroland at the time:

> And now in those days the white people said to us that you [Leutwein] who were at peace with us and loved us, were gone, and they said to us The governor who loved you has gone to fight a difficult war; he is dead and because he is dead you [Hereros] must die also. They went so far as to kill two men of Chief Tjetjo•s tribe. Even Lieutenant N began to kill my people in jail. Ten died and it was said they died of sickness, but they died at the hands of the labor overseer and by the lash. Eventually Lieutenant N began to treat me so badly and to look for a reason for killing me, so he said:

> the people of Kambasembi and Uanja are making war. Then he called me to question me, I answered truthfully •No,Ž but he did not believe me. I did not go; I saw his intentions and so I fled *f* . Because of these things I became angry and said, •Now I must kill the white people even if I dieŽ (Leutwein, 1908, p. 512)

During the last days of 1903 and the first of 1904, the Hereros made their final plans for a concerted attack that, they hoped, would undermine the sources of German power in their land. Their greatest single advantage was the element of surprise, and they exploited it to the utmost. Leutwein knew Maherero very well and was absolutely convinced that the old chief was far too fond of the good life, particularly of alcohol and women, to take up arms against his friends and patrons the Germans who, after all, supplied him with the wherewithal to sustain his pleasures. Leutwein said of Maherero that he was •a large man, imposing and of proud mien, a man not without spirit and understandingŽ; but he added that Maherero was •lacking in characterŽ and sacrificed the duties of his office as Paramount Chief to pleasure. Leutwein was convinced that without Maherero•s name and authority, no common action on the part of the Hereros was possible.

The ultimate objective of the revolt was, of course, to drive the Germans out of Hereroland. This goal was to be achieved by undermining the German power structure from two different angles. First, an attack was to be made on German outposts and garrisons as well as on the transportation and communication system, with the objective of crippling German military power so that the German government would lose the ability to protect the colony. Second, an all-out attack was to be made on German farmers. They offered a tempting target, controlling as they did hundreds of thousands of acres of land and having 42,000 cattle, 3,000 horses, and 210,000 sheep and goats. The farms all tended to be very large and isolated, and were thus hardly defensible. In all, there were only 267 farms in the northern part of the colony. The Hereros reasoned that since the colonial government existed largely for the sake of those farms, if the settlers became discouraged and left the land, then the rest of the Germans would also pack up and leave.

While male Germans, both military personnel and farmers, were targets of the Hereros, Maherero feared that a general attack on defenseless civilians might easily lead to an orgy of wanton killing, and this he wanted to avoid at all costs. Therefore, on the eve of the revolt, he issued a strikingly unequivocal manifesto in which he declared: •I am the principal chief of the Hereros. I have proclaimed the law and the just word, and I mean for all my people. They should not lay hands on any of the following: Englishmen, Basters, Berg Damaras, Namas, and Boers. On none of these shall hands be laid. I have pledged my honor that this thing

shall not take place. No shall missionaries be harmed. Enough!Ž (Great Britain, 1918, p. 57).[10]

While the Germans found this unexpected streak of humanity hard to understand, from Maherero•s point of view there were several good reasons for this manifesto. Militarily, the Herero chief wanted to reduce the number of his enemies and obtain, if possible, allies in the struggle against the Germans. The Basters, the Berg Damaras, and the Namas were all traditional enemies of the Hereros. However, if the latter refrained from attacking these other tribes, they probably would not join the Germans and might be persuaded to cooperate with the Herero against the common oppressor.[11] This same logic held true for the British and the Boers; by not attacking them, Maherero held open the possibility of British assistance in the event the rebellion sparked a colonial war (Drechsler, 1980, p. 144).

Politically, Maherero also needed an ally or allies, someone to lead the Herero cause, particularly in Germany. The most obvious choice was the Rhenish Missionary Society. The missionaries in the past had supported Maherero, and he owed his position as Paramount Chief to their influence. There was no reason to believe that if the missionaries were left unhurt and unmolested in this rebellion that the Rhenish Missionary Society would not use its influence in Germany and argue for justice and the just cause of the Herero.[12] And finally, Maherero seems to have had a sense of destiny. From the missionaries and colonial officials, he had been taught that he was a•barbarianŽ and that they were •civilized.Ž One of the most commonly cited proofs of the barbarism of the natives was their manner of making war „ with indiscriminate slaughters of prisoners, massacres of women and children, torture, cruelty, and unrestrained sadism.[13] Maherero seemed to realize that he and his people at this moment in history had to surpass the standards of civilization as defined by their enemy.

On January 12, 1904, the Hereros launched their first attacks. During the next ten days almost every farm, village, and fort in Hereroland was attacked or, at least, threatened by marauding bands. The majority of the German farms were destroyed during those hectic days. By January 20, in the Windhoek area, alone, civilian casualties had reached thirteen: six farmers, one farm hand, two surveyors, two merchants, one policeman, and a 14-year-old boy. No women or children had been killed. Of those farmers who survived, all fled to Windhoek; in most cases, they had lost everything: Their livestock had been stolen, their possessions looted, and their buildings burned. In addition, all the major fortified places in Hereroland were loosely besieged, though no fortified place had fallen.

Leutwein called the first days of the uprising •nerve-shattering,Ž but despite the initial success of the Hereros, by late spring of 1904 German troops were pouring into the colony, and the defeat of the Hereros was

only a matter of time. In August, the day of reckoning arrived when the main Herero forces were surrounded and crushed at the Battle of Waterberg.

How the Genocide Was Committed and Those Who Were Involved

General Lothar von Trotha, the newly arrived commander of German forces in South West Africa, had one aim: to utterly destroy the Hereros. With this in mind, he deployed his strongest units on three sides of Waterberg, while placing a weak force on the southeast. Thus, the Hereros could either stay trapped in a killing zone or fight their way out to the southeast and into the vast wastes of the Omaheke Desert. In fact, von Trotha was following the results of a study prepared by the German General Staff: "If, however, the Hereros were to break through, such an outcome of the battle could only be even more desirable in the eyes of the German Command because the enemy would seal his own fate, being doomed to die of thirst in the arid sandveldŽ (Grosser Generalstab, 1906…1907;1:132). After two days of fierce fighting, Maherero and the other Herero chiefs were forced to recognize the uselessness of facing the superior firepower of the German forces, equipped with 30 pieces of artillery and 12 machine guns. The Herero broke through the German lines in the southeast and fled toward the desert.

Von Trotha pursued and kept constant pressure on the fleeing tribe, driving it southeast. When groups of Hereros broke off from the main body and tried to flee north or south, in either case away from the line-of-march and the desert, German units made sweeping, flanking movements to force the natives back into the main body and toward the sandveld. As this march continued, exhausted Hereros lagged behind and fell to the ground unable to move. The pursuing Germans, acting on orders, took no prisoners, but instead killed men, women, and children indiscriminately. Jan Coete from Omaruru, who acted as a guide/scout for the Germans, later testified: "I was present when the Hereros were defeated in the battle at Hamakiri in the vicinity of Waterberg. After the battle all men, women, and children who fell into German hands, wounded or otherwise, were mercilessly put to death. Then the Germans set off in pursuit of the rest, and all those found by the wayside and in the sandveld were shot down or bayoneted to death. The mass of the Herero men were unarmed and thus unable to offer resistance. They were just trying to get away with their cattleŽ (Great Britain, 1918, p. 64).

By the end of August, the Hereros had been forced into the Omaheke. Now the tactics changed from direct contact and conflict with the natives to the elimination of their water. Von Trotha had German units patrol the water holes and drive away or kill any natives attempting to obtain water.

The German commander defended his orders as necessary in the Berliner Neueste Nachrichten on February 3, 1909: "My force was on the verge of disaster. If I had made the small water holes accessible to the womenfolk, I would have run the risk of an African catastrophe comparable to the Battle of Beresonia" (Drechsler, 1980, p. 158). At some point, the Germans poisoned these water holes; now, the choice for the Hereros was to die from poison or to die from thirst.[14] German patrols subsequently found hand-dug holes 40 feet deep, grim evidence of the Hereros' futile attempts to find water in the Omaheke Desert.

To prevent the Hereros from returning to German South West Africa, von Trotha sealed off the western rim of the desert with a series of forts and fortified positions stretching for several hundred miles. On September 28, 1904, a small band of Hereros tried to break through the German lines; they were repulsed almost without a fight. "All contacts with the enemy since the Battle of Waterberg have demonstrated (that) strength of will, unity of command, and the last remnants of resistance have been lost," wrote von Trotha (Grosser Generalstab, 1906–1907, 2:106). The trails through the desert were littered with hundreds of carcasses. Prisoners reported that people were weary of the war and willing to surrender. They also stated that Maherero and several other leaders had crossed the desert and found refuge in British territory.

On October 2, 1904, von Trotha promulgated his infamous Schrecklichkeit (Atrocity or Extermination) order in an attempt to stamp out the last embers of the revolt before the end of the year. The order read as follows (Drechsler, 1980, p. 156):

Osombo-Windimbe October 2, 1904

> I, the great general of the German troops, send this letter to the Herero people. Hereros are no longer German subjects. They have murdered, stolen, they have cut off the noses, ears, and other bodily parts of wounded soldiers and now, because of cowardice, they will fight no more. I say to the people: anyone who delivers one of the Herero captains to my station as a prisoner will receive 1000 marks. He who brings in Samuel Maherero will receive 5000 marks. All the Hereros must leave the land. If the people do not do this, then I will force them to do it with the great guns. Any Herero found within the German borders with or without a gun, with or without cattle, will be shot. I shall no longer receive any women or children. I will drive them back to their people or I will shoot them. This is my decision for the Herero people.
>
> Signed: The Great General of the Mighty Kaiser,

von Trotha

> This order is to be read to the troops at quarters with the additional statement that even if a trooper captures a captain of the Hereros he will receive the reward, and the shooting of women and children is to be understood to mean that one can shoot over them to force them to run faster. I definitely mean that this order will be carried out and that no male prisoners will be taken, but it should not degenerate into killing women and children. This will be accomplished if one shoots over their heads a couple of times. The soldiers will remain conscious of the good reputation of German soldiers.
>
> The General Command
>
> Signed: Lieutenant-General von Trotha

Two days later von Trotha explained his order to General von Schlieffen, Chief of the General Staff:

> There is only one question to me how to end the war? The ideas of the governor and the other old African hands and my ideas are diametrically opposed. For a long time they have wanted to negotiate and have insisted that the Hereros are a necessary raw material for the future of the land. I totally oppose this view. I believe that the nation as such must be annihilated or if this is not possible from a military standpoint then they must be driven from the land. It is possible by occupying the water holes from Grootfontein to Gobabis and by vigorous patrol activity to stop those trying to move to the west and gradually wipe them out *f* . My knowledge of many central African peoples, Bantu and others, convinces me that the Negro will never submit to a treaty but only to naked force. Yesterday before my departure I ordered the execution of those prisoners captured and condemned in the last few days and I have also driven all the women and children back to the desert to carry the news of my proclamation *f* . The receiving of women and children is a definite danger for our troops, to take care of them is an impossibility *f* . This uprising is and remains the beginning of a racial war (Drechsler, 1980, p. 161).

The immediate impact of von Trotha•s decision to annihilate the Hereros was unfavorable. Leutwein cabled the Foreign Office: •According to reliable reports the Hereros have asked for terms. Up to now the

question of negotiation has been decided without consulting me. Therefore I ask for clarification: How far does my authority extend?Ž (Drechsler, 1980, pp. 161f). When the Foreign Office answered that von Trotha alone had authority to deal with the natives, Leutwein asked to be relieved of his duties (Drechsler, 1980, p. 162). Nor was Leutwein the only German disturbed by von Trotha•s modus operandi. The highest civilian in the colony after the dismissal of Leutwein, Regierungsrat Tecklenburg, said that, in his opinion, German prestige with the natives was •lost beyond recall.Ž by von Trotha•s actions (Bridgman, 1981, p. 129). Also from the colony, the self-interested voices of the Rhenish Missionary Society and some of the settlers complained; the former feared that if the slaughter continued, the discontinuation of all missionary work was only a matter of time, and the latter feared the complete loss of the native labor needed on the farms. In Berlin, dissent was heard in the Reichstag where liberal Social Democrats criticized the von Trotha policy (Drechsler, 1980, p. 151; Swan, 1991, p. 51). Even the government in Berlin was alarmed by the bad press that the military action in South West Africa was receiving. On November 23, 1904, von Schlieffen informed the Chancellor, Bernard von Bülow, of the Army•s position:

> According to all appearances our troops will be forced to stop the enemy from returning to the west by a system of extended posts and will have to carry on a war of attrition with all its horrors such as typhus, malaria, and heart attacks *f* . It is conceivable that in such circumstances the call for a quick peace will be raised. With rebels, however, a peace can only be concluded on the basis of unconditional surrender. Up to now neither the whole Herero nation nor even part of it is amenable to such conditions. Prisoners whom Major von Estorff had captured were released after good treatment in order to win their fellow countrymen over to the idea of accepting German protection, but they have not been seen since. If the Hereros will not come in freely then they must be forced and encouraged to give up. To enter into negotiations with the Herero captains for this purpose is out of the question. They have forfeited their lives and in order to create acceptable conditions in the protectorate, they must be removed from office. If General von Trotha has put a price on the heads of the captains, then he adopted the customary way of getting rid of them. The sums which he offered are, however, clearly too low and must be expressed not in terms of money but rather in terms of head of cattle. When the influence of the captains is broken, then one can hope for the surrender of Hereros in meaningful numbers.

> The measures which von Trotha has taken *f* are prejudicial to such an outcome. One can rage with his plan of annihilating the whole people or driving them from the land. The possibility of whites living peacefully together with blacks after what has happened is very slight unless at first the blacks are reduced to forced labor, that is, a sort of slavery. An enflamed racial war can be ended only through the annihilation or complete subjugation of one of the parties. The latter course is, however, not feasible considering the present estimate of the length of the struggle. The intention of General von Trotha can therefore be approved. The only problem is that he does not have the power to carry it out. He must remain on the western edge of the Omaheke and cannot force the Hereros to leave it. If they should voluntarily leave the land we would not have gained much. They would present a constant threat in Bechuanaland in the event that the Cape government would not or could not render them harmless.
>
> There is therefore scarcely any other alternative but to try to persuade the Hereros to give up. That is made more difficult by the proclamation of General von Trotha which states that any Herero who tries to give up will be shot. If a new proclamation is issued which states that any Herero who gives up will be spared, they will scarcely trust this statement. Yet it must be tried. I believe therefore that it must be proposed to General von Trotha that (1) a higher price be put on the heads of the captains and the leaders; (2) by means of a new proclamation or in some other suitable way we spare the lives of those Hereros who give themselves up (Drechsler, 1980, pp. 162).

Put another way, von Schlieffen did not suggest that he was offended by von Trotha's way of making war, but he was convinced that it would not be successful. On the strength of this letter, von Bülow asked the Kaiser to lift the Schrecklichkeit order. He gave four reasons for doing so (1) A policy of total annihilation was un-Christian; (2) it was not feasible; (3) it was economically senseless; and (4) such a way of making war would give the Germans a bad reputation among civilized people. The Kaiser, even when pressured by his Chancellor and Chief of the General Staff, was reluctant to command von Trotha to lift the order. For over three weeks he delayed, despite pressure from von Bülow, until finally in late December he gave in. Von Trotha was equally reluctant, and when he finally bowed to the inevitable, he did it with as bad grace as possible. Those Hereros who surrendered would not be shot, that much he conceded, but they were to

be chained, used for forced labor, and branded with the letters GH (gefangene Herero); any who refused to reveal the whereabouts of weapons caches were to be shot out of hand.

When the new policy went into effect in the beginning of 1905, the Herero revolt, or what was left of it, quickly flickered out. The surviving Hereros either voluntarily presented themselves at collecting stations or were driven there by German patrols. This once-proud tribe that had numbered about 80,000 people had apparently suffered 20,000 to 30,000 dead in the period from the start of the rebellion to the conclusion of the Battle of Waterberg, most of these no doubt the result of the one major confrontation. While there is no way of knowing how many Hereros were killed outright, since the Germans did not do a body count, in modern combat, combat employing the machine gun and artillery, there are usually three or four wounded for every individual killed in action. With this in mind, the Hereros had 5000 to 6000 killed in action, while the remainder of the casualties had initially been wounded and fell victim to von Trotha•s no-prisoner policy. These numbers included men, women, and children because the entire tribe, or most of it, was in a single locale at the time. Between 50,000 and 60,000 Hereros survived the Battle of Waterberg and went to the Omaheke. Of these, about 1000 reached British territory; rather less than 1000 found refuge in Ovamboland; and perhaps the same number escaped to Namaland. An undetermined number filtered back through the German lines to their old homeland, where they scratched out a living stealing cattle.

In September 1905, a sweep was made through Hereroland that netted 260 prisoners and 86 guns. During this operation, about 1000 Hereros were killed. After September, there could hardly have been more than a few dozen free Hereros in all of Hereroland. In the German prison-labor camps there were 10,632 women and children, and 4,137 men (Imperial Colonial Office, 1904, i-Fe No. 2119, p. 44; Drechsler, 1980, p. 208; and Bridgman, 1981, p. 131). Subsequently, in the next year, 7682 of the imprisoned natives died as a result of forced labor and harsh treatment (Imperial Colonial Office, 1904, i-Fe, No. 2140, p. 161; Drechsler, 1980, p. 213; and Swan, 1991 p. 53). It should be noted that this number includes some natives from other tribes, but the vast majority were Hereros. In 1911, the official census taken by colonial officials showed that there were a mere 15,130 Hereros in South West Africa. Thus, out of the original 80,000 people, the Herero population had been reduced by 81 percent (Great Britain, 1916, p. 35; and Drechsler, 1980, p. 214). Truly a genocide had taken place.

The Long-Range Impact of the Genocide on the Victim Group

• The death-rattle of the dying and the shrieks of the mad ƒ t hey echo in the sublime stillness of infinity!Ž (Grosser Generalstab, 1906…1907, 2:14)

So one German soldier described the end of the Hereros. The German official historians were blunter: •The Hereros ceased to exist as a tribeŽ (Grosser Generalstab, 1906…1907, 2:214). In fact, the German official historians recorded the truth. The Herero tribe ceased to exist as a functioning social, political, and cultural entity. Further, the German colonial authorities took definite steps to insure that the tribe would not be a phoenix and rise again from the ashes of war and genocide.

In August 1906, the labor camps were closed and the surviving Hereros were divided up into small groups and shipped off to work on the farms and ranches of the German settlers. This move, in part, was motivated out of fear that the concentration of large numbers of Hereros in camps might possibly lead to a reorganization of the tribe and another uprising (Drechsler, 1980, p. 208). With small groups of Herero dispersed on hundreds of ranches and farms spread over thousands of square miles, there was little chance of a tribal reorganization, let alone a renewed rebellion.

To insure that the traditional Herero lifestyle ceased, Hereroland was confiscated by the Germans. Hans Tecklenberg, deputy governor of South West Africa, outlined the Colonial Administration•s policy in a report: •The tribal property of the tribes fully or partly involved in the rebellion will be subject to confiscation. Whether they have carried out, or aided and abetted, warlike acts will make no difference. It would be a sign of weakness, for which we would have to pay dearly, if we allowed the present opportunity of declaring all native lands to be Crown territory to slip by *f* . With the confiscation of their land, the natives will be deprived of the possibility of raising cattle. All objections notwithstanding, they must not, as a matter of principle, be allowed to own cattle because they cannot be conceded the grazing land required for this purposeŽ (Imperial Colonial Office, 19XX, File No. 1220, pp. 28…35).

This policy was formalized on August 18, 1907, with the issuance of three orders. First, no native could own land or cattle. Second, all males over 17 had to carry passes. And third, any native unable to prove the source of his or her livelihood was subject to prosecution for •vagrancyŽ (Bridgman, 1981, p. 165; and Drechsler, 1980, p. 231).

Now the remnants of the Herero people were reduced to a permanent class of forced labor for German masters. Natives whose work was deemed unsatisfactory by their masters were turned over to the local authorities for punishment, which usually took the form of floggings. During 1911, 1655 cases of official floggings of natives were recorded. Yet, without a doubt, this number is nowhere near the actual number of floggings that occurred in South West Africa in that year since most white masters administered their own punishments. A farmer named Kramer, for instance, was charged with abusing seven women and one man. It was revealed that he flogged the man all afternoon, and one woman all evening. Two pregnant

women had been so brutally whipped on two successive days that they miscarried, and two others had died from their punishments. Virtually all of Kramer•s native laborers were found to have festered, whip-inflicted wounds. For his crimes, Kramer was sentenced to 21 months in prison, but on appeal his sentence was reduced to 3 months in prison and a fine of 2700 marks (Bridgman, 1981, p. 165ff; and Drechsler, 1980, p. 235).

Although the Germans lost South West Africa to a British invasion in 1915, the plight of the Hereros remained the same. They soon learned that while the colonial imperialists would wage war on one another, in the end the Europeans would come to terms in order to continue the oppression of the native labor force. Even the end of British colonial rule did not end the struggle for existence of the Herero. Only the administrative officials changed. Just as British officials had taken over from the Germans, South African officials replaced the British. But the Germans still ran the farms and the ranches, and life for the native laborer changed not at all. Now that South West Africa has become the independent nation of Namibia, only time will tell the fate of the descendants of the Herero.

The Response of Individuals, Groups, and Nations to this Particular Genocide

In fact, the decimation of the Hereros was largely ignored by most of Europe and the world. For some, particularly the imperialistic segments of German society and government, including the Colonial Office, complacency was a form of expediency. The colonial officials saw in the elimination of the natives the quickest and most efficient solution to the problem of ruling South West Africa. Without the natives the land could be settled by Germans and ruled as a German territory. It seemed to them a sensible solution for a knotty problem. When two minor officials in the Colonial Office brought forward to their superiors evidence of widespread misconduct by German officials in South West Africa, the reports were quickly filed and no action taken, except to force the retirement of the two officials on the grounds of •mental incapacity.Ž Ultimately this information was leaked to a member of the Reichstag, who presented it to Chancellor von Bülow. The Chancellor•s only concern was that confidentiality and secrecy had been violated (Epstein, 1959, p. 647ff).

For two years, from 1904 to 1906, the anti-colonial parties „ the Socialists, the Centre, and the Radicals „ in the Reichstag, time and again, protested the misconduct in South West Africa, among other things, by voting down budgetary requests. Then in December 1906 von Bülow dissolved the house and went to the German people asking for a mandate to carry on colonial affairs. In the only election in European history fought exclusively on imperial and colonial issues, the anti-colonial coalition

suffered a severe setback. The German voters gave those parties and politicians favoring colonial expansion a massive mandate. Von Bülow took a record of inhumane cruelty and military failure to the people, and the people chose imperialism by a great majority.[16]

For Europeans as a whole, the revolt of the Herero, and its subsequent consequences, was an all-too-familiar occurrence for all colonial powers, and thus easy to ignore or rationalize. While by European standards the behavior of the Germans in South West Africa could be described as at best harsh and at worst sadistic, the Germans were not the only Europeans, let alone the only colonial power, to use their subject peoples cruelly. The French „ in Madagascar, in Equatorial Africa, and in Indochina „ had suppressed uprisings with methods not much different than the Germans. The Belgians in the Congo, the Americans in the Philippines, the Dutch in the East Indies, and the Japanese in Korea had all used the machine gun, the whip, and forced labor to bring their subjects to heel. Even the British could be ruthless when they thought it served their interests.

The general European attitude can find no more eloquent expression than in • The Report of the Commissioners into the Administration of the Congo State Ž King Leopold appointed this commission in 1904, after intense international pressure, to investigate the allegations that Belgians had employed means repugnant to civilized men in order to control the Congo Free State. After cataloguing repeated instances of shocking treatment of the native population, the commissioners concluded that although such behavior was not exemplary, it was absolutely necessary to rule inferior races and bring them along the road to civilization. • In a word, it is by this basis alone that the Congo can enter into the pathway of modern civilization and the population be reclaimed from its natural state of barbarism Ž (Bridgman, 1981, p. 167).

After South West Africa was occupied by British forces in 1915, an attempt was made to document the German atrocities against the natives. Two officers were assigned the task of investigating and drawing up a report detailing the treatment of the South West Africans by German colonial authorities. This report was submitted in 1918 and provided an explicit, unbiased account of the German domination of the region and its consequences. While this could have brought the Herero genocide out of the shadows and into the light for all to see, the apparent purpose of the report was not humanitarian but political, namely to document the incompetence of the Germans as colonial administrators and thus rule out a possible return of South West Africa to Germany after World War I. In fact, the League of Nations mandated South West Africa to the Union of South Africa. This move placed British..South African officials and German farmers on the same side, one desiring a peaceful and prosperous

region. At a session of the South West African Legislative Assembly on July 19, 1926, a resolution was adopted that (1) labeled the report an "instrument of war" and said it was time for all such instruments to be set aside; (2) asked for the removal of the report from the official files of the Government of the Union and the British government; and (3) requested the removal and destruction of all copies of the report found in public libraries and official bookstores (Drechsler, 1980, p. 10). This relegated the most damning record of the German genocide of the Hereros to virtual oblivion, instead of placing it before the world as a possible warning of things to come.

Scholars' Interpretations of this Particular Genocide

It is possible that the general public and the world might become more conscious of and knowledgeable about the genocide of the Hereros if scholars were more united in their evaluations and interpretations of German conduct in South West Africa. This is unlikely to occur, and thus for the present, at least, two distinct schools of thought exist and oppose one another.

The first, or what can be called the "genocide school," believes that the German authorities committed genocide in South West Africa. Obviously, this chapter supports this belief. Two of the leading scholars of this school are Horst Drechsler and Jon Bridgman. Drechsler's Südwestafrika unter deutschen Kolonialherrschaft, which appeared in 1966, is the most complete and carefully documented work to date dealing with the German colonial activity and the natives of South West Africa. Bridgman's The Revolt of the Hereros, published in 1981, is the first work in English to detail the struggle of the Hereros and their destruction. Jon Swan (1991) added his voice and pen to the "genocide school" with an article entitled "The Final Solution in South West Africa."

On the other side, the "non-genocide school," the opposing view is set forth mostly by West German ethnologists. Kate sa Schlosser (1955) recounts her visit to a Herero settlement in Bechuanaland and plays down the consequences of the Herero Revolt.[17] The logic of her argument is that since 5000 Hereros were in Bechuanaland in 1936, the number of Hereros who escaped the Germans and successfully crossed the desert must have been greater than previously thought. Thus, the number of dead was less than 60,000, and genocide did not occur.

In 1985, Karla Poewe took up the non-genocide cause. In "The Namibian Herero„ A History of their Psychosocial Disintegration and Survival, Poewe (1985), who also questions the accuracy of the numbers regarding the Herero dead, explains von Trotha's "extermination order" as attempted psychological warfare. "The intent was to keep small guerilla bands away from the German troops. The former shot upon the latter unexpectedly

and cruelly mutilated dead German soldiersŽ (Poewe, 1985p. 65). She also denies that von Trotha•s order really called for extermination. • The use of the word •vernichten• which unknowledgeable people translate as •extermination,• in fact, meant,in the usage ofthe time, breaking the military, national, or economic resistanceŽ (Poewe, 1985p. 60). Thus, according to Poewe, no genocide wasintended.

With two such schools of thought in existence,the stageis setfor the debate to continue for some time to come.

What this Genocide can Teach Us With Regard to Our Effort to Protect Others from Such a Tragedy

Yet, the study of and discussion about the genocide of the Hereros must continue for the valuable lesson, orlessons,it offers concerning genocide in general. Genocide is not a random, unconscious, or unplanned act. Genocide is always initiated and committed by deliberate, calculating, and thinking men. While a few of these may be irrational or insane, the majority are not. The majority are generally followers who see nothing wrong in their actions. The rational participants in genocide have, unfortunately, developed an irrational attitude or mindset that allows them to kill thousands, or even millions,without remorse. Often these attitudes are culturally or nationally inspired and concern the superiority of one group and the inferiority of the other. Such attitudes and their development can be identified by the study of the Herero genocide, and in fact all genocides, and serve as a lesson orwarning for future generations. With such lessonsfrom the past,hopefully future generationswill be able to identify possible targeted groups and prevent new genocides.

The overriding lessonfrom the genocide of the Hereros is that dehumanization or degradation of a people or peoples canlead to atrocities and genocide. It is easy to kill •subhumansŽ or •nonhumansŽ Too many German settlers and officials of South West Africa thought of the natives as •baboonsŽ Baboonswere nothuman and therefore did not have the same feelings and emotions,let alonerights, ashumans.Baboonswere wild animals. This labeling not only dehumanized the labelled but desensitized the labelers. There was no moral or ethical penalty to be considered in the treatment of baboons or wild animals, particularly when thosewild animals bared their fangs and demonstated their basic bestial nature. In fact, it was only prudent todestroy all such animals in the vicinity in order to protectpeaceful, civilized white people from future attacks. Thus, the Herero were exterminated.

Eyewitness Accounts: Genocide of the Hereros

First-hand accounts of the events in South West Africa during the native uprisings are fairly numerous but vary dramatically in style, factuality, and perspective. Generally, these fall into three categories.

The first of these are the memoirs and journals of a popular nature. As one would expect, these were almost exclusively written by German soldiers and officials who served in the colony. Obviously, these were written from the perspective of the victors and treat favorably the Imperial colonial policy and the conduct of the war.

The second source, also German, is the files of the Imperial Colonial Office. Until 1955 these records were unavailable to scholars and other interested parties. In the Kaiser•s day, these documents were held in strict confidentiality. During the Weimar Republic and the Third Reich, the Imperial Colonial Office files were suppressed for fear they might damage Germany•s image and interests. And after World War II, all German government records were seized by the Allies, with those of the Imperial Colonial Office falling into Soviet hands.

These files were returned in 1955 and placed in the Deutschen Zentralarchiv Potsdam. While East Germany gradually allowed more and more access to these files, restrictions continued to apply until the fall of East Germany. Thus even today only a very small portion of the Imperial Colonial Office files have been published, and a trip to the archives is often necessary. Interestingly, such a trip usually reveals that the German colonists and authorities, knowing that their reports were not intended for publication, submitted fairly accurate and straightforward accounts of the conditions in the colony.

The only account from the native viewpoint and in English, and the one used in this Eyewitness Accounts section, is The Report on the Natives of South West Africa and their Treatment by Germany, which can be found in The Sessional Papers of the House of Lords (Vol. 13, 1918). Although the report in its narrative is anti-German, and at times quite dramatic and defamatory „ von Trotha is called •no more worthy son of Attila,Ž which of course is a reference to the great leader of the Huns, their barbaric warfare, and the derogatory name applied to the Germans during World War I „ it does contain an extensive body of testimony from survivors of and witnesses to the Herero Revolt and the genocidal nature of the warfare.

What follows are a number of excerpts from the Report (using the headings found in it):

The Outbreak of the Herero Rising and the Humanity of the Herero

Under-Chief Daniel Kariko, who is noted as a bitter life-long enemy of the Germans, stated:

> We decided that we should wage war in a humane manner and would kill only the German men who were soldiers, or who would become soldiers. We met at secret councils and there our chiefs decided that we should spare the lives of all German women and children. The missionaries, too, were to be spared, and they, their wives and families and possessions were to be protected by our people from all harm. We also decided to protect all British and Dutch farmers and settlers and their wives and children and property as they had always been good to us. Only German males were regarded as our enemies, and then not young boys who could not fight „ t hese also we spared: We gave the Germans and all others notice that we had declared war (p. 57).

An unidentified Dutch housewife, who was alone at the time the rebellion started, reported on a visit by Michael Tyseista in which he said:

> I have come to assure you that you and your children will be quite safe in your own home. You are under my protection. Do not go into the German fort. The Germans are foolish to take their women and children there, as they may be killed by our bullets, and we are not making war on women and children. Keep calm and stay indoors when there is fighting, I assure you my people will do you no harm. [In reply to a question about her husband, Tyseista responded:] We are not barbarians. Your husband is our friend; he is not a German. I have already sent a special messenger to him, to tell him he is under my protection as long as he remains quietly on his farm. His cattle and sheep are safe also. In order not to inconvenience your husband, I have specially ordered my people who are working for him to remain there and do their work loyally until I send further instructions (p. 57).

Barmenias Zeua, son of Chief Zacharias Zeus of Otjimbingwe, testified on the conditions of armament

> He [our chief] knew that if we rose we would be crushed in battle, as our people were nearly all unarmed and without ammunition. We were driven to desperation by the cruelty and injustice of the

> Germans, and our chiefs and people felt that death would be less terrible than the conditions under which we lived (p. 58).

Preliminary Steps and Treachery of the Germans

Gottlob Kamatoto, a servant to one of the German officers, stated:

> I accompanied the troops to Ombakaha above Gobabis and near Epikiro in the Sandveld. At a farm called Otjihaenena the Germans sent out messages that the Hereros that the war was now over and they were to come in and make peace. As a result of this message seven Herero leaders came into the German camp to discuss peace terms. As soon as they came in they were asked where Samuel Maherero the chief was. They said he had gone towards the desert on his way to British Bechuanaland. That evening at sunset the seven peace envoys were caught and tied with ropes. They were led aside and shot. Before being shot they protested bitterly; but seeing that they were doomed they accepted their fate (p. 59).

Gerard Kamaheke, a former leader of the Hereros in the uprising and at the time he testified a Headman at Windhoek, recalled:

> The Chiefs Saul, Joel, and I with a number of our followers were camped in the veld at Ombuyonungondo, about 30 km. from Ombakaha. This was in September. A messenger, a German soldier, came to our camp on horseback. He said he had come from the German commander at Ombakaha, who had sent him to tell us to come to Ombakaha and make peace. Joel then sent the schoolmaster Traugott Tjongaero personally to Ombakaha to confirm the truth of the soldier's message and to inquire if peace were intended, whether the Herero leaders would be given safe conduct and protection if they went to Ombakaha. Traugott came back a few days later and said he had seen the German commander, who confirmed the message brought by the soldier. Traugott said that the German commander had invited us all to come in and make peace; that our lives would all be spared; that we would be allowed to retain our cattle and other possessions; and that we would be allowed to go to Okahandja to live. I fell in with the wishes of the majority and we left for Ombakaha in the evening, and arrived at the German camp at noon the next day. With me were the Chiefs Saul and Joel, and the Under-Chiefs Traugott, Elephas, Albanus, Johannes Murunda, Elephas Murpurua, and two others whose

> names I now forget. We had with us 70 Herero soldiers. The wives and children we had left at our camp. On arrival at Ombakaha the 70 men who were under my command were halted near the German camp under some trees, as the sun was hot and we were very tired. Joel and the other leaders went on to the German commander•s quarters about 100 yards away; they left their arms with us. The Germans then came to me and said we were to hand over our arms. I said, •I cannot do so until I know that Joel and the other leaders who are now in the camp have made peace.Ž I sat there waiting, when suddenly the Germans opened fire on us. We were nearly surrounded, and my people tried to make their escape. I tried to fight my way through, but was shot in the right shoulder and fell to the ground [I show the wound], and I lay quite still and pretended to be dead. I was covered with blood. The German soldiers came along bayoneting the wounded; and as I did not move they thought I was dead already and left me. The Chiefs Saul and Joel and all other Headmen were killed. I got up in the night and fled back to our camp, where I found our women and children still safe and also some survivors of my 70 men. We then fled further towards the Sandveld and scattered in all directions (pp. 59f).

How the Hereros Were Exterminated

Daniel Kariko, Under-Chief of Omaruru, recalled:

> The result of the war is known to everyone. Our people, men, women, and children were shot like dogs and wild animals. Our people have disappeared now. I see only a few left; their cattle and sheep are gone too, and all our land is owned by the Germans *f*. After the fight at Waterberg we asked for peace, but von Trotha said there would only be peace when we were all dead, as he intended to exterminate us. I fled to the desert with a few remnants of my stock and managed more dead than alive to get away far north. I turned to the west and placed myself under the protection of the Ovambo Chief Uejulu, who knew that I was a big man among the Hereros *f*. In 1915 they told me that the British were in Hereroland, and I hurried down to meet them *f*. I was allowed to return to Hereroland after 10 years of exile (p. 63).

Hosea Mungunda, Headman of the Hereros at Windhoek, stated:

> We were crushed and well-nigh exterminated by the Germans in the rising. With the exception of Samuel Maherero, Mutati, Traugott, Tjetjoo, Hosea, and Kaijata [who fled to British territory] all our big chiefs and leaders died or were killed in the rising, and also the great majority of our people. All our cattle were lost and all other possessions such as wagons and sheep. At first the Germans took prisoners, but when General von Trotha took command no prisoners were taken. General von Trotha said, •No one is to live; men, women, and children must all die.Ž We can•t say how many were killed (p. 63).

Samuel Kariko, son of Daniel Kariko and former secretary to the Omaruru Chief, testified:

> A new general named von Trotha came, and he ordered that all Hereros were to be exterminated, regardless of age or sex. It was then that the wholesale slaughter of our people began. That was towards the end of 1904. Our people had already been defeated in battle, and we had no more ammunition *f* . We saw we were beaten and asked for peace but the German General refused peace and said all should die. We then fled towards the Sandveld of the Kalahari Desert. Those of our people who escaped the bullets and bayonets died miserably of hunger and thirst in the desert. A few thousand managed to turn back and sneak through the German lines to where there were water and roots and berries to live on (p. 63).

Manuel Timbu, a Cape Bastard and Court Interpreter in native languages at Omaruru, described his experiences with the Germans

> I was sent to Okahandja and appointed groom to the German commander, General von Trotha. I had to look after his horses and to do odd jobs at his headquarters. We followed the retreating Hereros from Okahandja to Waterberg, and from there to the borders of the Kalahari Desert. When leaving Okahandja, General von Trotha issued orders to his troops that no quarter was to be given to the enemy. No prisoners were to be taken, but all, regardless of age or sex, were to be killed. General von Trotha said, •We must exterminate them, so that we won•t be bothered with rebellions in the future.Ž As a result of this order the soldiers shot all natives we came across. It did not matter who they were. Some were peaceful people who had not gone into rebellion; others, such as old men and old women, had never left their homes; yet they

were all shot. I often saw this done. Once while on the march near Hamakari beyond Waterberg, we came to some water holes. It was winter time and very cold. We came on two very old Herero women. They had made a small fire and were warming themselves. They had dropped back from the main body of Hereros owing to exhaustion. Von Trotha and his staff were present. A German soldier dismounted, walked up to the old women, and shot them both as they lay there. Riding along we got to a vlei, where we camped. While we were there a Herero woman came walking up to us from the bush. I was the Herero interpreter. I was told to take the woman to the General to see if she could give information as to the whereabouts of the enemy. I took her to General von Trotha; she was quite a young woman and looked tired and hungry. Von Trotha asked her several questions, but she did not seem inclined to give information. She said her people had all gone toward the east, but as she was a weak woman she could not keep up with them. Von Trotha then ordered that she should be taken aside and bayoneted. I took the woman away and a soldier came up with his bayonet in his hand. He offered it to me and said I had better stab the woman. I said I would never dream of doing such a thing and asked why the poor woman could not be allowed to live. The soldier laughed, and said, •If you won•t do it, I will show you what a German soldier can do.Ž He took the woman aside a few paces and drove the bayonet through her body. He then withdrew the bayonet and brought it all dripping with blood and poked it under my nose in a jeering way, saying, •You see, I have done it.Ž Officers and soldiers were standing around looking on, but no one interfered to save the woman. Her body was not buried, but, like all others they killed, simply allowed to lie and rot and be eaten by wild animals.

A little further ahead we came to a place where the Hereros had abandoned some goats which were too weak to go further. There was no water to be had for miles around. There we found a young Herero, a boy of about 10 years of age. He apparently lost his people. As we passed he called out to us that he was hungry and thirsty. I would have given him something, but was forbidden to do so. The Germans discussed the advisability of killing him, and someone said that he would die of thirst in a day or so and it was not worth while bothering, so they passed on and left him there. On our return journey we again halted at Hamakari. There, near a hut, we saw an old Herero woman of about 50 or 60 years digging in the ground for wild onions. Von Trotha and

his staff were present. A soldier named Konig jumped off his horse and shot the woman through the forehead at point-blank range.Before he shot her, he said, •I am going to kill you.Ž She simply looked up and said, •I thank you.Ž That night we slept at Hamakari. The nextday we moved off again and came across another woman of about 30. She was also busy digging wild onions and took no notice of us. A soldier named Schilling walked up behind her and shot her through the back. I was an eyewitness to everything I related. In addition I saw the bleeding bodies of hundreds of men, women, and children, old and young, lying along the road aswe passed. They had all beenkilled by our advanced guards. Iwasfor nearly two years with the German troops and always with General von Trotha. I know of no instance in which prisoners were spared (pp. 63f).

Jan Coete, aBastard, of Omaruru, stated:

I wasin Omaruru in 1904. Iwas commandeered by the Germans to act as a guide for them to the Waterberg district, as Iknew the country well. I waswith the 4th Field Company under Hauptmann Richardt. The commander of the troops was General von Trotha. I waspresent at Hamkarari, near Waterberg, when the Hereros were defeated in battle. After the battle, all men, women, and children, wounded and unwounded, who fell into the hands of the Germans were killed without mercy. The Germans then pursued the others, and all stragglers on the roadside and in the veld were shot down and bayoneted. The great majority of the Herero men were unarmed and could make nofight. They were merely trying to get away with their cattle. Some distancebeyond Hamakari we camped at awater hole. While there, a German soldier found a little Herero baby boy about nine months old lying in the bush. The child was crying. Hebrought it into the camp where Iwas. The soldiers formed a ring and started throwing the child to one another and catching it asif it were aball. The child was terified and hurt and was crying very much. After a time they got tired of this and one of the soldiers fixed his bayonet onhis rifle and said he would catch the boy. The child was tossedinto the air towards him and as it fell he caught it and transfixed the body with the bayonet. The child died in a few minutes and the incident was greeted with roars of laughter by the Germans, who seemed to think it was a great joke. Ifelt quite ill and turned away in disgustbecause, although I knew they had orders to kill all, I thought they would havepity on

> the child. I decided to go no further, as the horrible things I saw upset me, so I pretended that I was ill, and as the Captain got ill too and had to return, I was ordered to go back with him as guide. After I got home I flatly refused to go out with the soldiers again (pp. 64f).

Johannes Kruger, appointed by Leutwein as "Chief" of the Bushmen and Berg Damaras of the Goofontein area, and a Bastard of Ghaub, testified:

> I went with the German troops right through the Herero rebellion. The Afrikaner Hottentots of my werft were with me. We refused to kill Herero women and children, but the Germans spared none. They killed thousands and thousands. I saw this bloody work for days and days and every day. Often, and especially at Waterberg, the young Herero women and girls were violated by the German soldiers before being killed. Two of my Hottentots, Jan Witt and David Swartbooi (who is now dead), were invited by the German soldiers to join them in violating Herero girls. The two Hottentots refused to do so (p. 65).

Jan Kubas, a Griqua living at Goofontein, stated:

> I went with the German troops to Hamakari and beyond *[...]*. The Germans took no prisoners. They killed thousands and thousands of women and children along the roadsides. They bayoneted them and hit them to death with the butt ends of their guns. Words cannot be found to relate what happened; it was too terrible. They were lying exhausted and harmless along the roads, and as the soldiers passed they simply slaughtered them in cold blood. Mothers holding babies at their breasts, little boys and little girls; old people too old to fight and old grandmothers, none received mercy; they were killed, all of them, and left to lie and rot on the veld for the vultures and wild animals to eat. They slaughtered until there were no more Hereros left to kill. I saw this every day; I was with them. A few Hereros managed to escape in the bush and wandered about, living on roots and wild fruits. Von Trotha was the German General in charge (p. 65).

Hendrik Campbell, War Commandant of the Bastard tribe of Rehoboth and Commander of the Bastard Contingent called out by the Germans to help them, testified:

> At Katjura we had a fight with the Hereros, and drove them from their position. After the fight was over, we discovered eight or nine sick Herero women who had been left behind. Some of them were blind. Water and food had been left with them. The German soldiers burnt them alive in the hut in which the were living. The Bastard soldiers intervened and tried to prevent this, but when they failed, Hendrik van Wyk reported the matter to me. Iimmediately went to the German commander and complained. He said to me •that does not matter, they might have infected us with some disease.Ž *f* Afterward at Otjimbende we [the Bastards] captured 70 Hereros. Ihanded them over to Ober-Leutenants Volkmann and Zelow. I then went on patrol, and returned two days later, to find the Hereros lying dead in a kraal. My men reported to me that they had all been shot and bayoneted by German soldiers. Shortly afterwards, General von Trotha and his staff, accompanied by two missionaries, visited the camp. He said to me,•You look dissatisfied. Do you already wish to gohomeŽ
>
> •No,Ž I replied, •the German government has an agreementwith us and I want to have no misunderstandings on the part of the Bastard government, otherwise the same mayhappen to usweak people ashashappened to thoselying in the kraal yonderŽ
>
> Lieut. Zelow gave answer: •The Hereros alsodo soŽ I said, •But, Lieutenant, as acivilized people you should give us abetter exampleŽ To this von Trotha remarked, •The entire Herero people must be exterminatedŽ (p. 65)

Daniel Esma, a European who lived at Omaruru and drove transport wagons for the Germans, stated:

> I waspresent at the fight at GrossBarmen, near Okahandja, in 1904. After the fight the soldiers (marines from the warship Habicht) were searching the bush. I went with them out of curiosity. We came across awounded Herero lying in the shade of a tree. Hewas a very tall, powerful man and looked like one of their headmen. Hehad his Bible next tohis head and his hat over his face. Iwalked up to him and saw that he waswounded high up in the left hip. I took the hat off his face and asked him if he felt bad. He replied to me in Herero, •Yes, Ifeel I am going to dieŽ The German marines,whosebayonetswere fixed, were looking on. One of them said to me,•What doeshe reply?Ž I told him. •Well,Ž remarked the soldier, •if he is keen ondying he had better have this

alsoŽ With that he stooped down and drove his bayonet into the body of the prostrate Herero, ripping up his stomach and chest and exposing the intestines. I was so horrified that I returned to my wagons at once.

In August 1904, I was taking a convoy of provisions to the troops at the front line. At a place called Ouparakane, in the Waterberg district, we were outspanned for breakfast when two Hereros, a man and his wife, came walking up to us out of the bush. Under-Officer Wolff and a few German soldiers were escort to the wagons and were with me. The Herero man was a cripple, and walked with difficulty, leaning on a stick and on his wife•s arm. He had a bullet wound through the leg. They came to my wagon, and I spoke to them in Herero. The man said he had decided to return to Omaruru and surrender to the authorities, as he could not possibly keep up with his people who were retreating to the desert, and that his wife had decided to accompany him. He was quite unarmed and famished. I gave them some food and coffee and they sat there for over an hour telling me of their hardships and privations. The German soldiers looked on, but did not interfere. I then gave the two natives a little food for their journey. They thanked me and then started to walk along the road slowly to Omaruru. When they had gone about 60 yards away from us I saw Wolff, the Under-Officer, and a soldier taking aim at them. I called out, but it was too late. They shot both of them. I said to Wolff, •How on earth did you have the heart to do such a thing? It is nothing but cruel murderŽ He merely laughed, and said, •Oh! These swine must all be killed; we are not going to spare a single oneŽ

I spent a great part of my time during the rebellion at Okahandja, loading stores at the depot. There the hanging of natives was a common occurrence. A German officer had the right to order a native to be hanged. No trial or court was necessary. Many were hanged merely on suspicion. One day alone I saw seven Hereros hanged in a row, and on other days twos and threes. The Germans did not worry about rope. They used ordinary fencing wire, and the unfortunate native was hoisted up by the neck and allowed to die of slow strangulation. This was all done in public, and the bodies were allowed to hang a day or so as an example to the other natives. Natives who were placed in gaol at the time never came out alive. Many died of sheer starvation and brutal treatment *f* . The Hereros were far more humane in the field than the Germans. They

were once a fine race. Now we have only a miserable remnant left (p. 66).

Johann Noothout, a Hollander and naturalized British subject, testified:

I left Cape Town during the year 1906, and signed on with the Protectorate troops in South West Africa. I arrived at Luderitzbucht, and after staying there a few minutes I perceived nearly 500 native women lying on the beach, all bearing indications of being slowly starved to death. Every morning and towards evening four women carried a stretcher containing about four or five corpses, and they had also to dig the graves and bury them. I then started to trek to Kubub and Aus, and on the road I discovered bodies of native women lying between stones and devoured by birds of prey. Some bore signs of having been beaten to death *[…]*. If a prisoner were found outside the Herero prisoners' camp, he would be brought before the Lieutenant and flogged with a sjambok. Fifty lashes were generally imposed. The manner in which the flogging was carried out was the most cruel imaginable *[…]* pieces of flesh would fly from the victim's body into the air *[…]*.

My observations during my stay in the county [in the German time] gave me the opinion that the Germans are absolutely unfit to colonise, as their atrocious crimes and cold-blooded murders were committed with one object „ to extinguish the native race (p. 100).

Hendrick Fraser swore under oath:

When I got to Swakopmund I saw very many Herero prisoners of war who had been captured in the rebellion which was still going on in the county. [Note „ t hese were prisoners captured before von Trotha's arrival.] There must have been about 600 men, women, and children prisoners. They were in an enclosure on the beach, fenced in with barbed wire. The women were made to do hard labor just like the men. The sand is very deep and heavy there. The women had to load carts and trolleys, and also to draw Scotch-cart loads of goods to Nonidas (9…10 m. away) where there was a depot. The women were put in spans of eight to each Scotch-cart and were made to pull like draught animals. Many were half-starved and weak, and died of sheer exhaustion. Those who did not work well were brutally flogged with sjamboks. I even saw women knocked down with pick handles. The German soldiers did this. I

> personally saw six women [Herero girls] murdered by German soldiers. They were ripped open with bayonets. I saw the bodies. I was there six months, and the Hereros died daily in large numbers as a result of exhaustion, ill-treatment and exposure. They were poorly fed, and often begged me and other Cape boys for a little food *f* . The soldiers used the young Herero girls to satisfy their passions. Prisoners continued to come in while I was there; but I don•t think half of them survived the treatment they received.
>
> After six months at Swakopmund I was sent to Karibib towards the end of September 1904. [Note „ Von Trotha•s extermination order was issued about August 1904.] There I also saw an enclosure with Hereros waiting for transport to Swakopmund. Many were dying of starvation and exhaustion. They were all thin and worn out. They were not made to work so hard at Karibib, and appeared to be less harshly treated (p. 100).

Samuel Kariko, Herero schoolmaster and son of Under-Chief Daniel Kariko, stated:

> When von Trotha left, we were advised of a circular which the new Governor, von Lindequist, had issued in which he promised to spare the lives of our people if we came in from the bush and mountains where we lived like hunted game. We then began to come in. I went to Okambahe, near my old home, and surrendered. We then had no cattle left, and more than three-quarters of our people had perished, far more. There were only a few thousands of us left, and we were walking skeletons, with no flesh, only skin and bones. They collected us in groups and made us work for the little food we got. I was sent down with others to an island far in the south, at Luderitzbucht. There on that island were thousands of Herero and Hottentot prisoners. We had to live there. Men, women and children were all huddled together. We had no proper clothing, no blankets, and the night air on the sea was bitterly cold. The wet sea fogs drenched us and made our teeth chatter. The people died there like flies that had been poisoned. The great majority died there. The little children and the old people died first, and then the women and the weaker men. No day passed without many deaths. We begged and prayed and appealed for leave to go back to our country, which is warmer, but the Germans refused. Those men who were fit had to work during the day in the harbour and railway depots. The younger women were selected by the soldiers and taken to their camps as concubines.

> Soon the great majority of the prisoners had died and then the Germans began to treat us better. A Captain von Zulow took charge, and he was more humane than the others. After being there over a year, those of us who had survived were allowed to return home.
>
> After all was over, the survivors of our race were merely slaves (p. 101).

Hosea Munguda, Herero-Headman at Windhoek, stated:

> Those who were left after the rebellion were put into compounds and made to work for their food only. They were sent to farms, and also to the railways and elsewhere. Many were sent to Luderitzbucht and Swakopmund. Many died in captivity; and many were hanged and flogged nearly to death and died as the result of ill-treatment. Many were mere skeletons when they came in and surrendered, and they could not stand bad food and ill-treatment.
>
> The young girls were selected and taken as concubines for the soldiers; but even the married women were assaulted and interfered with *f* it was one continuous ill-treatment *f* when the railways were completed and the harbour works, we were sent out to towns and to farms to work. We were distributed and allocated to farmers, whether we liked them or not (p. 101).

Traugott Tjienda, Headman of the Hereros of Tsumeb, who also surrendered under von Lindequist•s amnesty order, testified:

> I was made to work on the Otavi line which was being built. We were not paid for our work, we were regarded as prisoners. I worked for two years without pay *f* . As our people came in from the bush they were made to work at once, they were merely skin and bones, they were so thin that one could see through their bones „t hey looked like broomsticks. Bad as they were, they were made to work; and whether they worked or were lazy they were repeatedly sjambokked by the German overseers. The soldiers guarded us at night in a big compound made of thorn bushes. I was a kind of foreman over the labourers. I had 528 people, all Hereros, in my work party. Of these 148 died while working on the line. The Herero women were compounded with the men. They were made to do manual labour as well. They did not carry the heavy rails, but

> they had to load and unload wagons and trucks and to work with picks and shovels. The totals above given include women and children *f* . When our women were prisoners on the railway work they were compelled to cohabit with soldiers and white railway labourers. The fact that a woman was married was no protection. Young girls were raped and very badly used. They were taken out of the compounds into the bush and there assaulted. I don•t think any of them escaped this, except the older ones (pp. 101f).

Edward Lionel Pinches, an English resident of Keetmanshoop, confirmed the native reports:

> At the time I entered the county then known as German South West Africa in the year 1896 the Hottentots and Damaras were divided into tribes and were living under the jurisdiction of their Chiefs. The natives were prosperous and the county was fairly well populated. Any estimation of the actual native population would be extremely difficult to give. At this time I was continuously travelling about the county, and I got a fairly accurate idea of the number of natives of the different tribes I came in contact with. On the outbreak of the Hottentot war the natives were about the same in number as when I entered the county, but on the conclusion of that war in my estimation the total native population was not more than one fifth of its former number. The war was to all intents and purposes a war of extinction of the native races, and has been admitted to be so by Germans of high standing. This tremendous reduction of population was by no means owing to actual losses through the war, but is directly due to the treatment received by the natives during captivity. I have myself been several times in Luderitzbucht, where large numbers of Damaras were kept in confinement, and have seen them being buried by their fellows, who were little better than dead themselves, at the rate of 12 to 15 per diem. Judging by the appearance of these natives, they were dying from sheer starvation (p. 102).

Leslie Cruikshank Bartlet, an Englishman residing in South West Africa, reported:

> I came to German South West Africa with the first transport during the Hottentot war in 1905. The prisoners, Hereros and Hottentots, mostly women, and all in a terribly emaciated condition, were imprisoned on an island adjoining Luderitzbucht. The mortality

> amongst the prisoners was excessive, funerals taking place at the rate of 10 to 15 daily. Many are said to have attempted escape by swimming, and I have seen corpses of women prisoners washed up on the beach between Luderitzbucht and the cemetery. One corpse, I remember, was that of a young woman with practically flesh less limbs whose breasts had been eaten by jackals. This I reported at the German Police Station, but on passing the same way three or four days later the body was still where I saw it first. The German soldiery spoke freely of atrocities committed by Hereros and Hottentots during the war, and seemed to take a pride in wreaking vengeance on those unfortunate women. When the railway from Luderitzbucht to Keetmanshoop was started, gangs of prisoners, mostly women scarcely able to walk from weakness and starvation, were employed as labourers. They were brutally treated. I personally saw a gang of these prisoners, all women, carrying a heavy double line of rails with iron sleepers attached on their shoulders, and unable to bear the weight they fell. One woman fell under the rails which broke her leg and held it fast. The Schachtmeister [ganger], without causing the rail to be lifted, dragged the woman from under and threw her on one side, where she died untended. The general treatment was cruel, and many instances were told to me, but that which I have stated, I personally saw (p. 102).

Notes

1. For a more detailed consideration of the Hereros' genocide see Jon Bridgman's Revolt of the Hereros (1981) or Horst Drechsler's "Let Us Die Fighting" (1980); Drechsler's work was originally published as Südwestafrika unter deutschen Kolonialherrschaft (Berlin: Academie-Verlag, 1966).
2. See Drechsler (1980, p. 55, no. 8) for a discussion of the various population estimates, which in fact went as high as more than 100,000.
3. See Bridgman (1981, Chapter 1) for a fuller discussion of the tribal peoples of South West Africa at this time.
4. See Helmut Bley's Kolonialherrschaft und Sozialstruktur in Deutsche-Südwestafrika (1968, pp. 160ff) for a more detailed analysis.
5. Theodor Leutwein (1908, p. 559) said that the government had not issued the ordinance out of any love of the natives, but rather to preserve the life and possessions of those whites who were living among the natives.
6. See Wellington (1967, pp. 198) and Drechsler (1980, pp. 118); the Hereros named each year according to the most significant event that occurred during its course, and the year 1903 was named "ojovurondejuviuego" which meant the year of traders and fraud.
7. For the most perceptive analysis of Leutwein's attitude, see Bley, 1968.
8. This passage was contained in a message from Missionary Elger to the Rhenish Missionary Society; see also Drechsler (1980, p. 145) and Jon Swan's "The Final Solution in South West Africa" (1991).
9. Bridgman (1981 p. 65) notes that Paul Rohrbach, the colonial propagandist, is generally credited with this expression.
10. Sub-Chief Daniel Kariko testified later that the war was aimed exclusively at German men.

11. Maherero actually sent messages to several tribes seeking alliances against the Germans; cf. Imperial Colonial Office Files (1904, pp. 21f, 23), Leutwein (1908, p. 468), and Drechsler (1980, p. 143).
12. Maherero's judgment there was correct, the Rhenish Missionary Society or at least some of its members did plead the native cause in the German press; cf. Drechsler (1980, p. 140).
13. Wellington (1967, p. 148) reports on the Herero treatment of a Hottentot prisoner that apparently was typical: First the Hereros cut off his ears, then his nose and lips, and finally they slit his throat.
14. Swan (1991, p. 51); Great Britain (1916, pp. 74…80) shows the German army poisoned wells in South West Africa to hinder the British invasion in 1915, and implies that this had been done in earlier wars.
15. Also see Drechsler (1980, pp. 214ff).
16. See George Crothers (1941) for a detailed account of this unusual election.
17. This article can be found in Schlosser (1955).

References

Andersson, Charles (1856). Lake Ngami or Exploration and Discovery During Four Years Wanderings in the Wilds of South-Western Africa. New York: Harper & Brothers.

Bley, Helmut (1968). Kolonialherrschaft und Sozialstruktur in Deutsch Südwestafrika 1894…1914. Hamburg: Leibniz-Verlag.

Bridgman, Jon (1981). The Revolt of the Hereros. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Bülow, Bernhard von (1930…1931). Denkwürdigkeiten. Four volumes. Berlin: Ullstein.

Crothers, George (1941). The German Elections of 1907. P. S. King & Son, Ltd.

Drechsler, Horst (1980). "Let Us Die Fighting." London: Zed Press. Translated by Bernd Zöllner. Originally published (1966) under the title Südwestafrika unter deutsche Kolonialherrschaft. Berlin: Akademie-Verlag.

Epstein, Klaus (1959). "Erzberger and the German Colonial Scandals, 1905…1910." English Historical Review, 74(293):637…663.

Great Britain (1916). "German Atrocities, and Breaches of the Rules of War, in Africa." In The Sessional Papers of the House of Lords. Vols. 5 and 6. London: H.M. Stationery Office.

Great Britain (1918). "Report on the Natives of South West Africa and their Treatment by Germany." In The Sessional Papers of the House of Lords. Vol. 13. London: H.M. Stationery Office.

Imperial Colonial Office Files (1904). Nos. 2111, 2114, 2119, 2140. Archival records.

Kriegsgeschichtliche Abteilung, Grosser Generalstab, Armée Prussia (1906…1907). Die Kampfe der deutschen Truppen in Südwestafrika. Two volumes. Berlin: E.S. Mittler.

Leutwein, Theodor (1908). Elf Jahre Gouvernuer in Deutsch-Südwestafrika. Berlin: E.S. Mittler.

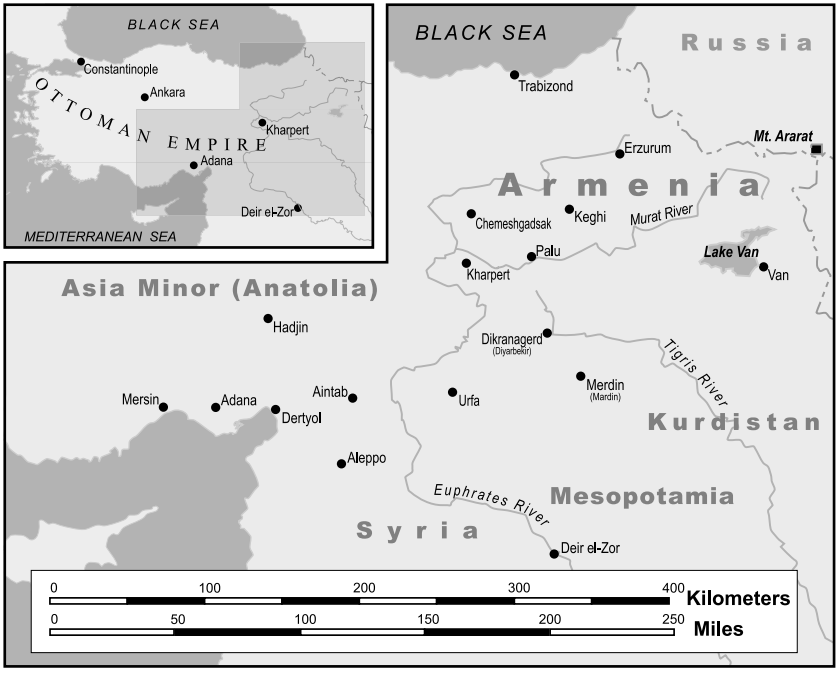
Poewe, Karla (1985). The Namibian Herero„ A History of their Psychosocial Disintegration and Survival. Lewiston, New York: The Edwin Mellen Press.

Schlosser, Katesa (1955). "Der Herero im Britisch-Betschuana-Protektorat und ein Besuch in einer ihrer Siedlunger: Newe-le-tau." Zeitschrift für Ethnologie, 80(2):200…218.

Schwabe, Kurd (1904). Mit Schwert und Pflug in Deutsch-Südwestafrika. Berlin: E.S. Mittler.

Swan, Jon (1991). "The Final Solution in South West Africa." MHQ: The Quarterly Journal of Military History, 3(3):36…55.

Wellington, John H (1967). South West Africa and Its Human Issues. Oxford: Oxford University Press.


BLACK SEA
Constantinople
Ankara
OTTOMAN EMPIRE
Kharpert
Adana
Deir el-Zor
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
BLACK SEA
Russia
Trabizond
Erzurum
Mt. Ararat
Armenia
Chemeshgadsak
Keghi
Murat River
Palu
Lake Van
Kharpert
Van
Asia Minor (Anatolia)
Hadjin
Dikranagerd
(Diyarbekir)
Tigris River
Merdin
(Mardin)
Mersin
Adana
Aintab
Dertyol
Urfa
Kurdistan
Aleppo
Euphrates River
Mesopotamia
Syria
Deir el-Zor
0
100
200
300
400
Kilometers
0
50
100
150
200
250
Miles

Armenia

CHAPTER 2
The Armenian Genocide

ROUBEN PAUL ADALIAN

Between the years 1915 and 1923 the Armenian population of Anatolia and historic West Armenia was eliminated. The Armenians had lived in the area for some 3000 years. Since the 11th century, when Turkish tribal armies prevailed over the Christian forces that were resisting their incursions, the Armenians had lived as subjects of various Turkish dynasties. The last and longest-lived of these dynasties were the Ottomans, who created a vast empire stretching from Eastern Europe to Western Asia and North Africa. To govern this immense country, the Ottomans imposed a strictly hierarchical social system that subordinated non-Muslims as second-class subjects deprived of basic rights. In its waning days, with the empire in decline and territorially confined to the Middle East, the Ottoman leaders decided that the only way to save the Turkish state was to reduce the Christian populations. Beginning in April 1915, the Armenians of Anatolia were deported to Syria and the Armenian population of West Armenia was driven to Mesopotamia. Described euphemistically as a resettlement policy by the perpetrators, the deportations, in fact, constituted and resulted in genocide. In the end, after eight years of warfare and turmoil in the region, the Armenians had disappeared from their homeland.

Who Committed the Genocide?

In 1915 the Ottoman Empire was governed by a dictatorial triumvirate. Enver was Minister of War. Talaat was Minister of the Interior. Jemal was Minister of the Navy and military governor of Syria. All were members of

the Committee of Union and Progress (CUP), called Unionists for short. They were known in the West as the Young Turks. They had started out as members of a clandestine political organization that staged a revolution in 1908, replaced the ruler of the country in 1909, and finally seized power by a coup in 1913 (Ramsaur, 1957; Zürcher, 1998; Charny, 1999).

When World War I started, the CUP exercised near total control in the government. Party functionaries had been appointed to posts all across the empire. Unionist cells had been organized in every major town and city. Unionist officers commanded virtually all of the Ottoman army. The cabinet was entirely beholden to the CUP. Key decisions were made by the triumvirs in consultation with their party ideologues and in conformity with overt and covert party objectives. As heads of government and leaders of the CUP, Enver, Talaat, and Jemal had at their disposal immense resources of power and an arsenal of formal and informal instruments of coercion (Libaridian, 1985, pp. 37…49).

Organized in reaction to the autocratic regime of the sultan Abdul-Hamid II (1876…1909), the Young Turks originally advocated a platform of constitutionalism, egalitarianism, and liberalism. They attributed the weakness of the Ottoman Empire to its retrograde system of government. They hoped to reform the state along the progressive and modernizing course of the Western European countries. However, after the revolution, they were surprised by the strength of conservative and reactionary forces in Ottoman society and were just as quickly disillusioned by the aggressive posture of the European powers, which vied with one another for influence in the Ottoman Empire. Their realization that the problems of the Ottoman Empire were systemic and endemic became the source of their own retrenchment and growing intransigence. Also, suspicious of British, French, and Russian colonialist designs, defeated in war by the Italians, and challenged militarily by neighboring Greece, Serbia, and Bulgaria (countries that were formerly subject states of the empire), the Young Turks increasingly looked toward Germany as an ally and as the model nation-state to emulate. By 1913, the advocates of liberalism had lost out to radicals in the party who promoted a program of forcible Turkification.

By the time the first shots of the war were fired in August 1914, the CUP had become a dictatorial, xenophobic, intolerant clique intent on pursuing a policy of racial exclusivity. Emboldened by their alliance with Imperial Germany, the CUP also prepared to embark on a parallel course of militarism. German war materiel poured into the country, and Turkish officers trained at military schools in Germany. German army and navy officers drilled the Ottoman forces, drew their battle plans, built fortifications, and, when war erupted, stayed on as advisors whose influence

often exceeded that of the local commanders (Sachar, 1969, pp. 5…31; Trumpener, 1968, pp. 62…107; Zinkel, 1991, pp. 77…133).

Because of the preponderance of the Germans in Ottoman military affairs, the lurking question of the degree of their involvement in either advising or permitting the deportation of the Armenians has been asked many times (Dadrian, 1996). Ultimate responsibility for the Armenian genocide, however, rests with those who considered and took the decision to deport and massacre the Armenian population of the Ottoman Empire. It also rests with those who implemented the policy of the central government and, finally, with those who personally carried out the acts that extinguished Armenian society in its birthplace. In this equation, the largest share of responsibility falls on the members of the Committee of Union and Progress. At every level of the operation against the Armenians, party functionaries relayed, received, and enforced the orders of the government. The state•s responsibility to protect its citizens was disregarded by the CUP. The Ministries of the Interior and of War were charged with the task of expelling the Armenians from their homes and driving them into the Syrian desert (Dadrian, 1986). The army detailed soldiers and officers to oversee the deportation process (Great Britain, 1916, pp. 637…53; Ternon, 1981, pp. 22…39). Killing units were organized to slaughter the Armenians (Dadrian, 1989, pp. 274…77). By withholding from them the protection of the state and by exposing them to all the vagaries of nature, the Young Turk government also disposed of large numbers of Armenians through starvation (Ternon, 1981, pp. 249…60). In the absence of even minimal sanitation, let alone health care, epidemics broke out in the concentration camps and contributed to the death toll.

How Was the Genocide Committed?

The genocide of the Armenians involved a three-part plan conceived with secrecy and deliberation and implemented with organization and efficiency. The plan consisted of deportation, execution, and starvation. Each part of the plan had its specific purpose.

The most thoroughly implemented part of the plan was the deportation of the Armenian population. The Armenians in historic Armenia in the east, in Anatolia to the west, and even in European Turkey were all driven from their homes. Beginning in April 1915 and continuing through the summer and fall, the vast majority of the Armenians in the Ottoman Empire were deported. Upon the orders of the Ottoman government, often with only three days• notice, village after village and town after town was emptied of its Armenian inhabitants.

Many were moved by train (Bryce, 1916, pp. 407…63). Some relied on horse-drawn wagons. A few farmers took their mules and were able to carry some belongings part of the way. Most Armenians walked. As more

and more people were displaced, long convoys of deportees, comprised mostly of women and children, formed along the roads of Anatolia and Armenia, all headed in one direction, south to the Syrian desert. Many never made it that far. Only a quarter of all deportees survived the hundreds of miles and weeks of walking. Exhaustion, exposure, and fright took a heavy toll especially on the old and the young (Hairapetian, 1984, pp. 41…145).

The Ottoman government had made no provisions for the feeding and the housing of the hundreds of thousands of Armenian deportees on the road (Bryce, 1916, pp. 545…69). Indeed, local authorities went to great length to make travel an ordeal from which there was little chance of survival (Davis, 1989, pp. 69…70). At every turn, Armenians were robbed of their possessions, had their loved ones held at ransom, and even had their clothing taken off their backs. In some areas, Kurdish horsemen given to marauding and kidnapping were let loose upon the helpless caravans of deportees (Hairapetian, 1984, p. 96; Kloian, 1985, p. 8). Apart from the sheer bedlam of their raids and the killing that accompanied it, they carried away the goods they snatched and frequently seized Armenian children and women.

The deportations were not intended to be an orderly relocation process (Walker, 1980, pp. 227…30). They were meant to drive the Armenians into the open and expose them to every conceivable abuse (Hovannisian, 1967, pp. 50…51). At remote sites along the routes traversed by the convoys of deportees, the killing units slaughtered the Armenians with sword and bayonet (Dadrian, 1989, p. 272; Walker, 1980, p. 213). In a random frenzy of butchering, they cut down persons of all ages and of both genders. These periodic attacks upon the unarmed and starving Armenians continued until they reached the Syrian desert.

To minimize resistance to the deportations, the Ottoman government had taken precautionary measures. The most lethal of these measures consisted of the execution of the able-bodied men in the Armenian population. The first group in Armenian society targeted for collective execution were the men conscripted into the Turkish armies. Upon the instruction of the War Ministry, these men were disarmed, forced into labor battalions, and either worked to death or outright murdered (Morgenthau, 1918, p. 302; Kuper, 1986, pp. 46…7; Sachar, 1969, p. 98).

Subsequently, the older males who had stayed behind to till the fields and run the stores were summoned by the government and ordered to prepare themselves for removal from their places of habitation. Virtually all the men turned themselves over without an inkling that their government contemplated their murder. They were immediately imprisoned, many were tortured, and all of them were taken away, sometimes in chains, and felled in mass executions (Bryce, 1916, pp. 640…41).

To assure the complete subservience of the Armenian people to the government•s deportation edicts and to eliminate the possibility of protestation, prominent leaders were specially selected for swift excision from their communities (Davis, 1989 p. 51). Although the wholesale measures against the Armenians were already in the process of implementation by late April, the symbolic beginning of the Armenian genocide is dated the evening of April 24, 1915. That night, the most gifted men of letters, the most notable jurists, the most respected educators, and many others, including high-ranking clergy, were summarily arrested in Constantinople, the capital of the Ottoman Empire, sent to the interior, and many were never heard from again (Ternon, 1981 pp. 216…19).

The Armenians were brought to the Syrian desert for their final expiration (Walker, 1980, pp. 227…30). Tens of thousands died from exposure to the scorching heat of the summer days and the cold of the night in the open. Men and women dying of thirst were shot for approaching the Euphrates River. Women were stripped naked, abused, and murdered. Others despairing of their fate threw themselves into the river and drowned. Mothers gave their children away to Arab Bedouins to spare them from certain death. The killing units completed their task at a place called Deir el-Zor. In this final carnage, children were smashed against rocks, women were torn apart with swords, men were mutilated, others were thrown into flames alive. Every cruelty was inflicted on the remnants of the Armenian people.

Why Was the Genocide Committed?

The Armenian genocide was committed to solve the •Armenian QuestionŽ in the Ottoman Empire. There were, at the very least, five basic reasons for the emergence of this so-called question. The first had to do with the decline of the Ottoman Empire and the internal demographic and economic pressures created upon the non-Muslim minority communities that began to experience ever increasing and violent competition for the land and resources they historically controlled. The government•s failure to guarantee security of life and property led the Armenians to seek internal reforms that would improve their living conditions. These demands only invited resistance and intransigence from the government, which convinced many Armenians that the Ottoman regime was not interested in providing them the protection they needed and the civil rights they desired (Nalbandian, 1963 pp. 67…89).

Second, Great Power diplomacy that offered the hope of redressing the injustices and inequities of the Ottoman system proved inadequate to the task. The greater interest in maintaining the balance of power in Europe only resulted in half-hearted measures at humanitarian intervention in response to crises and atrocities. As the Armenians turned to the European

powers in order to invite attention to their plight, the Ottomans only grew more suspicious of the intentions of the Armenians. Thus, the appeal of the Armenians to the Christian countries of Europe was viewed as seditious by the Ottomans. On earlier occasions European powers had exploited the tensions in Ottoman society to intervene on behalf of Christian populations. With the passage of time, the Ottomans became more resolved to prevent the recurrence of such intervention by quickly and violently suppressing expressions of social and political discontent (Dadrian, 1989 pp. 242…55; Dadrian, 1995, 61…97).

Third, the military weakness of the Ottoman Empire left it exposed to external threats and therefore made it prone to resorting to brutality as a method of containing domestic dissent, especially with disaffected non-Muslim minorities. In fact, a cycle of escalating violence against the Armenians had set in by the late 1800s (Dadrian, 1989 pp. 232…42).

Fourth, the reform measures introduced in the 19th century to modernize the Turkish state had initially encouraged increased expectations among Armenians that better government and even representation were imminent possibilities. The periodic massacre of large numbers of Armenians, however, undermined the confidence of the community in its government and in the prevailing international order. This disaffection became the source of a growing Armenian national consciousness and resulted in the formation of political organizations seeking emancipation from lawlessness and discrimination.

Last, the rapid modernization experienced by the Armenians, who were more open to European concepts of progress through education than the rest of the population, only registered resentment among the Muslims of the Ottoman Empire who saw the interests of Armenians more in alignment with countries they regarded as infidel than with the state ruling over them.

By the early 20th century, the Ottomans had been forced out of southeastern Europe. Having relinquished the mostly Christian and Slavic regions of the Balkans whence the early Ottomans had created their empire, the Young Turks sought to restore the empire on new foundations. They found their justification in the concepts of Turkism and Pan-Turanism. Turkism altered Ottoman self-perceptions from a religious to a national identity by emphasizing the ethnicity of the Turks of Anatolia to the exclusion of other populations and promoted the idea that the region should be the exclusive domain of the Turkish nation. Pan-Turanism advanced the idea of conquering lands stretching into Central Asia inhabited by other Turkic-speaking peoples. Many of these Turkic peoples were living under Russian rule, and the Young Turks believed that the advancing Ottoman armies would be received as liberators (Walker, 1980,

pp. 189…91). The Pan-Turanian goal was to unify all the Turkic peoples into a single empire led by the Ottoman Turks (Parla, 1985).

In this formulation, the Armenians presented an ethno-religious anomaly. They were an indigenous Christian people of the Middle East who, despite more than 14 centuries of Muslim domination, had avoided Islamification. When the CUP began to implement its policy of Turkification, the Armenians resisted the CUP plans. For example, the Armenians had worked hard to build up the infrastructure of their communities, including an extensive network of elementary and secondary schools. Through education, they hoped to preserve their culture and identity and to obtain participation in the government. The new emphasis on Turkism and the heightened suspicion of the subject nationalities was warning enough for the Armenians to redouble their effort to gain a say in at least the governance of regions with a heavy Armenian concentration (Libaridian, 1987, pp. 219…23).

In the increasing tension between the assimilationist policies of the Young Turk government and Armenian hopes for administrative reforms and aspirations for a measure of local self-government, the coincidence of resistance to Unionist policies and the beginning of World War I proved fatal for the Armenians. As the German forces were prevailing against Russia in Europe, a second front in Asia seemed to guarantee success for the Ottomans. Confident of their strength and witness to the early military victories of the German army, the Young Turks chose to enter the war. They believed that the great conflict among the imperial powers of Europe offered the Ottoman Empire an opportunity to regain a position of dominance in the region.

The war placed the Armenians in an extremely precarious situation. Tragically for them, their difficulties with the Young Turk regime were compounded by the fact that this second front against Russia would be fought in the very lands of historic Armenia where the bulk of the Armenian population lived. Straddled on both sides of the Russian…Turkish border, their homeland was turned into a battlefield. Long chafing from the exploitation of Muslim overlords, the Armenians had welcomed the Russians into Transcaucasia. After nearly a century of relative peace and prosperous existence under Russian administration, the prospect of falling under the rule of the Ottomans was unthinkable for the Armenians living in Russia. While thousands of Armenian conscripts were serving on the Russian front in the war against Germany, many others volunteered to fight the Ottomans.

The fate of the Armenians was sealed in early 1915 with the defeat of the Ottoman offensive into Russian territory. The Russians not only stopped the Ottoman advance but slowly moved into Ottoman territory. The failure of the campaign was principally the fault of Enver, the Minister

of War, who had taken personal command of the eastern front and chosen to fight a major battle in the dead of winter in rugged and snowbound terrain. With his ambitions dashed, this would-be conqueror and self-styled liberator exacted vengeance from the Armenian population.

Instead of accepting responsibility for their ill-conceived invasion plans and the consequential defeat of their armies, the Young Turks placed the blame on the Armenians by accusing them of collaboration with the enemy (Morgenthau, 1918 pp. 293…300). Charging the entire Armenian population with treason and sedition, they decided to kill the innocent for the actions of those who had chosen to put a stop to their planned conquests. That was the reason, at least, given by the Minister of the Interior when asked about the CUP policy of deporting the Armenians (Morgenthau, 1918 p. 327; Trumpener, 1968 pp. 207…10).

The war, in effect, provided the opportunity to implement the Turkification of the Ottoman Empire by methods that exceeded legislation, intimidation, and expropriation. Under the cover of war, with no obligation to uphold international agreements, and in an atmosphere of heightened tensions, the Unionists found their justification and opportunity to resort to extreme measures. The Turkish state now could be created internally. With the Armenians eradicated, one less racial grouping would be living on Ottoman territory. One less disenchanted group would have to be tolerated. The problems with the Armenians would be automatically resolved by eliminating the Armenians. In a country of 20 million people, the Armenians constituted only about 10 percent of the population. It was easily within the reach of the Ottoman government to displace and kill that many people.

For all the historical, political, and military reasons that may be cited to explain the Young Turk policy of destroying the Armenians, it must be understood that ultimately the decision to commit genocide was taken consciously. Genocide is not explained by circumstance. Mass murder is an act deliberately conceived. Decision-makers can always exercise other options in dealing with serious conflicts. The real cause for genocide lies in the self-licensing of those in charge of government with irresponsibility toward human life and amorality in the conception of their social policies. Genocide is the fulfillment of absolute tyranny. In the new social order conceived by the Young Turks, there was no room for the Armenians. They had become that excess population of which tyrants are prone to dispose.

Who Were the Victims?

The Armenians were an ancient people who from the first millennium B.C. lived in a mountainous plateau in Asia Minor, a country to which they gave their name. This was their homeland. The area was absorbed as the eastern provinces of the Ottoman Empire in the 16th century. Two thousand years

earlier the Armenians had formed one of the more durable states in the region. A series of monarchical dynasties and princely families had been at the head of the Armenian nation. Early in the fourth century, the kingdom of Armenia accepted Christianity, making this country the first to formally recognize the new faith. Armenians developed their own culture and spoke a unique language. A distinct alphabet, a native poetry, original folk music, an authentic architectural style, and centuries-old traditions characterized their separate civilization (Lang, 1970; Lang, 1981; Bournoutian, 2002; Adalian, 2002).

The remoteness of Armenia from the centers of urban life in the ancient world kept the Armenians on the periphery of the empires of antiquity. Their distinctiveness was reinforced by the mountainous country and the harsh and long winters, which discouraged new settlers. Their own armies fought off many invaders; but through the course of the centuries, Armenia proved too small a country to withstand the continued menace of outside aggression. The strength of its armies was sapped. Its leaders were defeated in battle, and its kings were exiled and never returned. Increasingly exposed to invasions, the Armenians finally succumbed to the occupying forces of a new people that emerged from the east.

Persians, Greeks, Romans, Arabs, Byzantines, and Mongols each in turn lorded over the Armenians; however, only the Turks made permanent settlements in Armenia. The seeds of a mortal conflict were planted as the Turks grew in number and periodically displaced the Armenians. Beginning from the 11th century, towns, cities, and sometimes entire districts of Armenia were abandoned by the Armenians as they fled from the exactions of their new rulers. Unlike all the other conquerors of Armenia, the Turks never left. In time, Armenia became Turkey. The genocide of 1915 brought to a brutal culmination a thousand-year struggle of the Armenian people to hold on to their homeland and of the Turks to take it away from them.

The Ottoman Turks, who built an empire around the city of Constantinople after conquering it in 1453, and who eventually seized the areas of historic Armenia, developed a hierarchically organized society. Non-Muslims were relegated to second-class status and were subjected to discriminatory laws. The constant pressure on the Armenian population resulted in the further dispersion of the Armenians. Yet, despite the difficulties they endured and the disadvantages they faced, Armenian communities throughout the cities of the Ottoman Empire attained a tolerable living standard. By the 19th century a prosperous middle class emerged that became the envy of the Turkish population and a source of distrust for the Ottoman government (Barsoumian, 1982 pp. 171…84).

As the Armenians recovered their national confidence, they increased their demands for reforms in Armenia, where conditions continued to deteriorate. The government, however, was opposed to the idea of introducing measures and policies that would have enhanced the progress of an industrious minority that already managed a sizable portion of Ottoman commerce and industry. This reluctance only contributed to the alienation of the Armenians from the Ottoman regime. The more the Armenians complained, objected, and dissented, the more the Ottoman government grew annoyed, resistant, and impatient. By refusing to introduce significant reform in its autocratic form of government and to restrain the arbitrariness of local administration, the Ottoman rulers placed the Armenian and the Turkish peoples on a collision course (Astourian, 1992, 1998).

Who Was Involved in the Genocide?

The Armenian genocide was organized in secret but carried out in the open (Dadrian, 1989 p. 299; 1991 p. 558). The public proclamations ordering the removal and departure of the Armenians from their homes alerted all of Ottoman society that its government had chosen a course of action specifically targeting this one minority for unusual treatment. At no time throughout its existence had the Ottoman state taken such a step against an entire population. The manner in which the deportations were carried out notified the rest of society that the measures were intended to yield a permanent outcome.

A policy directed against a select population requires the agencies of government to organize, command, implement, and complete the separation and isolation of the group from the rest of society. When the measures affect a population spread across a vast stretch of territory, it cannot be a matter of accident, or coincidence, that persons of the same ethnic background become the object of mistreatment.

Although the decision to proceed with genocide was taken by the CUP, the entire Ottoman state became implicated in its implementation. First, cabinet decisions were taken to deport and massacre the Armenians (Dadrian, 1989 pp. 265…67). Disguised as a relocation policy, their purpose was understood by all concerned. Second, the Ottoman parliament avowedly enacted legislation legalizing the decisions of the cabinet (Dadrian, 1989 pp. 267…74). Third, the Ministry of the Interior was delegated the responsibility of overseeing the displacement, deportation, and relocation process. This Ministry, in turn, instructed local authorities on procedure, the timing of deportation, and the routing of the convoys of exiles (Dadrian, 1986 pp. 326…28). The Ministry of War was charged with the disarming of the Armenian population, the posting of officers and soldiers to herd the deportees into the desert, and the

execution of the Armenian conscripts. The agencies in charge of transport also were inducted into service. To expedite the transfer of the Armenians of western Anatolia, the deportees were loaded on cattle cars and shipped en masse to points east by train. The telegraph service encoded and decoded the orders of the ministers and governors. The governors of the provinces relayed the orders to the district governors, who in turn entrusted the local authorities, courts, and constabularies to proceed with instructions. The chain of command that put the Armenian genocide into motion joined every link in the administration of the Ottoman state.

Orders, however, were not obeyed uniformly. A few governors downright refused to deport the Armenians in their districts (Dadrian, 1986, pp. 326…27). Aware that some government personnel might be reluctant to sign the death warrant of the Armenian people, the CUP had made provisions to enforce its will on the entire corps of Ottoman officials. Young Turk Party members were entrusted by the central leaders with extraordinary power in situations requiring the disciplining of local authority. Disobedient governors were removed from their posts, and CUP partisans with a more reliable record were assigned to carry out the state•s policies in these districts. Frequently, the most notorious among the latter happened to be army officers who were also ideological adherents of the CUP, a combination that gave them complete license to satisfy „ at the expense of the Armenians „ t heir every whim and that of the men under their command (Dadrian, 1986, pp. 311…59).

To implement the various aspects of its policy, the CUP cabinet had to go so far as to establish new agencies. One of these was a secret extra-legal body called the Special Organization. Its mission was organized mass murder (Dadrian, 1989, pp. 274…77). It was mainly composed of convicted criminals released from prisons, who were divided into units stationed at critical sites along the deportation routes and near the concentration camps in Syria. Their assignment consisted solely of reducing the number of the Armenians by carrying out massacres. Sparing bullets, which were needed for the war effort, the slaughter of the Armenians frequently was carried out with medieval weaponry: scimitars and daggers. The physical proximity with which the butchering went on left a terrifying image of the Turk among those who happened to survive an attack by squads of the Special Organization.

Additionally, the government set up a Commission on Immigrants, whose stated purpose was to facilitate •the resettlement Ž process. In fact, the commission served as an on-site committee to report on the progress of the destruction of the Armenians as they were further and further removed from the inhabitable regions of Anatolia and Syria. As for the Commission on Abandoned Goods, which impounded, logged, and auctioned off Armenian possessions, this was the government•s method of

disposing the immovable property of the Armenians by means that rewarded its supporters. Generally, the local CUP officials pocketed the profit. It is not known what sums might have been transferred to party coffers (Baghdjian, 1987, pp. 64…87).

The CUP orchestrated a much wider system of rewards in order to obtain the consent of the Turkish population (Baghdjian, 1987, pp. 121…71). By implicating large numbers of people in the illegal methods of acquisition, the Young Turk government purchased the silence and cooperation of the populace. Many enriched themselves by misappropriating the forcibly abandoned properties of the Armenians. There was easy gain in plunder.

The same impulse motivated the Special Organization and the Kurdish tribesmen, who were given license to raid the convoys of deportees. In their case, the booty included human beings as well. It was a form of enslavement limited to younger boys and girls, who, separated from their kinsmen, would be converted to Islam and either Kurdified or Turkified in language and custom. Lastly, the public auction of Armenian girls revived a form of human bondage that was, for the most part, erased elsewhere in the world. The auctioneer made money. The purchaser had a slave servant and a harem woman added to his household. This kind of brutalization scarred countless Armenian women. Many, incapable of bearing the shame of giving birth out of wedlock to children conceived from rape and abuse by their Kurdish and Turkish owners, chose to forgo Armenian society after the war and remained with their Muslim families. Some were rescued and a few escaped, some taking their children with them, while others, fearing reprisal, abandoned them. Some Armenian women taken into harems against their will were often tattooed on their arms, chest, or face, as signs of their being owned and as a way to discourage escape (Sanasarian, 1989, pp. 449…61).

The gender, age, occupational, and regional differences in the treatment of the Armenians reflected the varying operative value systems prevailing in Ottoman society. The Young Turk ideologues in Constantinople conceived and implemented genocide, a total destruction of Armenian society. Military officers and soldiers regarded the policy as a security measure. Others in Ottoman society saw it a convenient way of ridding themselves of effective economic competitors, not to mention creditors. Others justified the slaughter of the Armenians as a religious duty called upon by the concept of jihad, or warfare against infidels or nonbelievers in Islam. All essentially aimed at eliminating the Armenian male population. Traditional society in the Middle East still looked upon women and children as chattel, persons lacking political personality and of transmutable ethnic identity. The cultural values of children and of females could be erased or reprogrammed. Genetic continuity was a make proposition. For many, but not the CUP, the annihilation of Armenian

males would have been sufficient to block or impede the perpetuation of the Armenian people (Davis, 1989 pp. 54…63).

What Were the Outstanding Historical Forces and Trends at Work that Led to the Genocide?

The Armenian genocide was the result of the intensifying differences between two societies inhabiting the territories of a single state. One society was dominant, the other subordinate; one Muslim, the other Christian; one in the majority, the other in the minority. At its source, the conflict stemmed from two divergent views of the world. The Turks had established their state as a world empire. They had always ruled over lands and peoples they conquered. The receding of their empire from its far-flung provinces challenged their image of themselves. Virtually undefeated in war before 1700, in the 18th and 19th centuries the Ottomans lost battle after battle as their once-mighty armies were no longer a match for the modern tactics and weaponry of the armies of the European states. New empires taking form on the European continent began to carve away Ottoman territory. France, England, Austria, and Russia, each in turn, imposed its demands on the weakening Turkish state. By the second half of the 19th century, however, these European powers, soon joined by a Germany unified by Prussian arms, balanced out each other in their competition for global influence.

A new type of challenge arose to force the Ottomans into retreating further. Whereas the Ottomans were in part successful in checking the territorial aggrandizement of their neighbors by relying on the balance-of-power system, the rise of nationalist movements among the subject peoples of the empire posed a different predicament. As imperial states are wont to do, the Ottomans resorted to brutal methods of suppressing national liberation and other separatist movements. The response of the Ottomans to the uprisings in Greece, Serbia, Bulgaria, and elsewhere was mass action against the affected population. These tactics only invited European intervention, and the settlement often resulted in the formation of a small autonomous state from a former Ottoman province as a way of providing a national territory to the subject people.

Unlike the Greeks, Serbians, or Bulgarians, the case for the Armenians was more complicated. They had long been ruled by the Turks, and by the early 20th century they were widely dispersed. In historic Armenia, the Armenians formed a majority of the population only in certain districts. This was due to the fact that a substantial Kurdish and Turkish population lived in these lands. When the Armenians also began to aspire for a national home, the Ottomans regarded it a far more serious threat than earlier and similar nationalist movements, for they had come to regard historic Armenia as part of their permanent patrimony.

The fracturing of the status of the Armenians in the Ottoman Empire has a complicated diplomatic history to it. The Russo…Turkish War of 1877…1878 was concluded with the signing of the Treaty of San Stefano, which ceded the Russians considerable Ottoman territory. The European powers vehemently opposed the sudden expansion of Russian influence in the Balkans and the Middle East, and compelled the Russian monarch to agree to terms more favorable to the Ottomans in the Treaty of Berlin. All the European powers became signatories to this treaty. One of the terms in the Treaty of Berlin promised reforms in the so-called Armenian provinces of the Ottoman Empire. Armenians saw hope in this treaty. They thought an international covenant would have greater force in compelling the Ottomans to consider reorganizing the ramshackle administration of their remote provinces. When the European powers failed to persist in requiring the Ottoman sultan to abide by the terms of the treaty, the Armenians faced a rude awakening. Not only were they disappointed with a government that did not keep its promises, but they also realized that the powers had little interest in devoting time to the problems of the Armenians (Hovanissian, 1986c, pp. 19…41).

The fundamental issue separating Armenians and Ottomans was their diametrically opposed definitions of equality. Empires are inherently unequal systems. They divide the people into the rulers and the ruled. The Islamic empires, including the Ottoman state, compounded this system of inequality because the legal and judicial precepts of Islam also subordinated non-Muslim subjects to second-class status. Not only was the Ottoman system unequal, Ottoman society was unaccustomed to a concept of equality among men irrespective of their racial or religious background.

Although laws were issued accepting the principle of equality among the various confessional groups in the Ottoman Empire, the Muslim populace remained unconvinced that they should accept these secular ideas. Instead of leading to a new adjustment in Ottoman society, these laws became the source of consternation among Muslims, who believed these notions upset the established social order. The hierarchy of faiths had never been reconsidered in an Islamic society since the religion was founded in the seventh century. On the contrary, to the Muslims, the combination of European states sponsoring reforms on behalf of Christian minorities and these peoples, in turn, aspiring for equal treatment under the law appeared to be abid by the subject Christians for power over the Muslims (Dadrian, 1999, pp. 5…26).

Islamic law disenfranchised Christians and Jews. Their testimony was inadmissible in court, thus frequently denying them fair treatment by the justice system. Christians and Jews were also required to pay additional levies, such as a poll tax. For a peasant barely eking out a living on the farm, the

extra taxes often became an obligation that could not be met in a difficult year. The end result was commonly foreclosure and eviction. Disallowed from bearing arms, non-Muslims had no means for self-defense. They could protect neither their persons and families nor their properties. In certain places, dress codes restricting types of fabric used by the Christians helped differentiate them from the population at large, exposing them to further intimidation. At times a language restriction meant speaking a language other than Turkish at the risk of having one's tongue cut out. As a result, in many areas of the Ottoman Empire Armenians had lost the use of their native language (Yerp, 1985, pp. 51–77).

These disabilities would have been impairing under normal circumstances. In areas closer to the capital, competent governors oversaw the administration of the provinces, and Armenians flocked to these safer parts of the empire. In the remoter provinces, such as the areas of historic Armenia, the hardships faced by the ordinary people were insurmountable. Avaricious officials exacted legal and illegal taxes. The justice system was hopelessly rigged. The maintenance of law and order was entrusted to men who only saw in their positions the opportunity for reckless exploitation. Extortion and bribery were the custom. In the countryside, the army demanded quartering in the houses of the Armenian peasants, which made their families hostages in their own homes. Unable to defend themselves, these people were also at the mercy of tribesmen, who descended upon their villages and carried off goods, flocks, and women. With no recourse left, Armenians were being driven to desperation.

The disappointment over the failure of the European powers to intervene effectively, combined with the dismay over the delays of the Ottoman government, continued to fuel the crisis in the Armenian provinces. Some Armenians decided to take matters into their own hands. In certain parts of Armenia, during the 1880s and 1890s, individuals began arming themselves and forming bands that, for instance, resisted Kurdish incursions on Armenian villages. Others joined political organizations advocating revolutionary changes at all levels of society. They demanded equal treatment, an adequate justice system, fair taxation, and the appointment of officials prepared to act responsibly (Nalbandian, 1963, pp. 167–68).

The Ottoman authorities refused to consider the demands. In response to the rise of nationalist sentiment among the subject peoples, and other internal and external security concerns, the Ottoman sultans had been striving to centralize power in their hands and had been creating a modernized bureaucracy that would help expand the authority of the government in all areas of Ottoman society. Among the measures introduced by the sultan Abdul-Hamid was a secret police and irregular cavalry regiments, called in his honor the Hamidiye corps, to act both as

border guards and local gendarmerie. They became his instrument for suppression. In 1894, at a time of increasing tension between the Armenian population and the Ottoman government, which also coincided with increased political activism by Armenians and inadequate efforts at intervention by some of the European powers, the sultan unleashed his forces. Over the next three years, a series of massacres were staged throughout Armenia. Anywhere between 100,000 and 300,000 persons were killed, others were wounded, robbed, thrown out of their homes, or kidnapped. Many also fled the country (Bliss, 1982, pp. 368…501; Greene, 1896, pp. 185…242; Walker, 1980, pp. 156…73).

The Armenian massacres of 1894…1896 made headline news around the world. They engendered international awareness of the plight of the Armenians, and their horrendous treatment by the sultan's regiments resulted in condemnation of the Ottoman system (Nassibian, 1984, pp. 33…57). The European powers were compelled by public clamor in their own countries to urge the sultan to show restraint. The massacres were halted, but nothing was done to punish the perpetrators or to remedy the damage.

This cycle of violence against the Armenian population repeated itself in 1909 in the province of Adana, a region along the Mediterranean coast densely settled by Armenians, where again the Armenian neighborhoods were raided and burned. The estimate on the number of victims runs between 10,000 and 30,000 (Walker, 1980, pp. 182…88). The Adana massacre coincided with an event known as the Hamidian counter-revolution. The Young Turks had achieved political prominence by staging a military revolution in 1908. They had compelled the sultan, Abdul-Hamid, to restore the Ottoman Constitution, which he himself had issued in 1876 and soon after suspended. The sultan was suspected of having plotted to recover his autocratic powers by dislodging the Young Turks from Constantinople. In the ensuing climate of tension and suspicion the Adana massacre erupted.

The Young Turks blamed the Hamidian supporters of igniting strife in order to embarrass the progressive forces in Ottoman society, but the Young Turks themselves were also implicated in the atrocities. It augured badly for the Armenians. The Adana massacre demonstrated that even in a power struggle within Turkish society, the Armenians could be scapegoated by the disaffected and made the object of violence. In this context, Enver's embarrassment at his defeat in early 1915 and the government's casting of blame on the Armenians had a precedent. In this chain of events, the genocide of 1915 was the final, and mortal, blow dealt the Armenians by their Ottoman masters (Libaridian, 1987, pp. 203…35).

What Was the Long-Range Impact of the Genocide on the Victim Group?

The Armenians in the Ottoman Empire never achieved equality and were never guaranteed security of life and property. They entered the Ottoman Empire as a subject people and left it as a murdered or exiled population. It is estimated that the Armenian genocide resulted in the death of over one and a half million people. Beyond the demographic demise of the Armenians in the larger part of historic Armenia, the Armenian genocide brought to a conclusion the transfer of the Armenian homeland to the Turkish people. The Young Turks had planned not only to deprive the Armenians of life and property, but also conspired to deny to the Armenians the possibility of ever recovering their dignity and liberty in their own country.

Whole communities and towns were wiped off the map. The massive loss in population threatened the very existence of the Armenian people. Hardly a family was left intact. The survivors consisted mostly of orphans, widows, and widowers. The Armenian nation was saved only through the direct delivery of American relief aid to the "starving Armenians." Millions of dollars were collected in the United States to feed and house the destitute Armenians, both in the Middle East and in Russia, where tens of thousands took refuge. Hundreds of thousands eventually received some sort of aid, be it food, clothing, shelter, employment, resettlement, or emigration to the United States and elsewhere.

The tremendous difficulty faced by the Armenians in recovering from the devastating impact of the genocide had much to do with the fact that they, as a collectivity, had been robbed of all their wealth. They were forced to abandon their fixed assets. They received neither compensation nor reparations. As deportees, Armenians were unable to carry with them anything beside some clothing or bedding. All their businesses were lost. All their farms were left untended. Schools, churches, hospitals, orphanages, monasteries, graveyards, and other communal holdings became Turkish state property. The genocide left the Armenians penniless.

Those who survived and returned to reclaim their homes and properties after the end of World War I were driven out again by the Nationalist Turks who had risen to power in Turkey (Kerr, 1973, pp. 214–54). For the Armenians, the only choice was reconciliation with their status as exiles and resettlement wherever they could find a means of earning a living. With the inability to congregate as a people in their homeland, the Armenians dispersed to the four corners of the world (Adalian, 1989, pp. 81–114; Adalian, 2002).

Lastly, the genocide shattered the historic bond of the Armenian people with their homeland. The record of their millennial existence in that country turned to dust. Libraries, archives, registries, the entire recorded

memory of the Armenians as accumulated in their country was lost for all time (Adalian, 1999a).

What Were the Responses to this Particular Genocide?

At the time, the horror story of the Armenian genocide shocked the world. The Allies threatened to hold the Young Turks responsible for the massacres (Dadrian, 1989p. 262),but the warning had no effect. The Allies were preoccupied with the war in Europe and did not commit resources to deliver the Armenians from their fate. Locally, however, humanitarian intervention by individual Turks, Kurds, and Arabs saved many lives (Hovannisian, 1992,pp. 173…207). While some Turks robbed their Armenian neighbors, others helped by hiding them in safe dwellings. While some Kurds willingly participated in the massacres, others guided groups of Armenians through the mountain passes to refuge in Russian territory. And while some Arabs only saw the Armenians as hopeless victims, others shared their food.

Among the first people to see the deplorable condition of the masses of the Armenians were the American missionaries and diplomats stationed in Turkey. Their appeals to their government, the religious institutions in the United States, and the general public were the earliest of the active responses to the predicament of genocide. They strove to deliver aid even during the war (Sachar, 1969,p. 343; Winter, 2003).

After the war, the European nations were little disposed to help the Armenians, as they themselves were trying to recover from their losses. Nevertheless, Britain and France, which had occupied Ottoman territory in the Middle East, were strongly positioned to influence the political outcome in the region, but neither chose to do so on behalf of the Armenians. Their interest in retaining control of these lands also conflicted with the wider goals of Woodrow Wilson in establishing a stable world order. The American president's laudable policies were welcomed by the peoples of Europe and Asia, such as the Poles, Czechs, Arabs, and Indians, who saw in his principles for international reconciliation the possibility of attaining their national independence. He too, however, was unable to deliver more than words. The United States Congress was disinclined to involve America in foreign lands. Consequently, many territorial issues were solved through the pure exercise of might. Diplomacy had little chance of extending help to the Armenian refugees.

For the Turks, the failure of diplomacy provided an opportunity to regroup under new leadership and to begin their own national effort at building a new state upon the ruins of the Ottoman Empire. With Mustafa Kemal at their head, the Nationalist Turks forged a new government and secured the boundaries of modern-day Turkey. Their policy of national consolidation excluded despised minorities (Dadrian, 1989pp. 327…33). The Armenians, the weakest element, headed the list. By 1923, when the

Republic of Turkey was formally recognized as a sovereign state, the Armenians remaining in the territories of that state with the exception of those in Constantinople, had been driven out. For many survivors of the deportations who had returned to their former homes, this was their second expulsion (Kinross, 1964, p. 235).

Before the Turkish borders were finally sealed and the Armenians conclusively denied the right to their former homes, the absence of moral resolve in Turkish governmental circles to confront the consequences of the Armenian genocide was made abundantly clear. The postwar government proved reluctant to put on trial the Young Turk officials suspected of organizing the massacres. Only upon the insistence of the Allies were a series of trials initiated. Some dramatic evidence was given in testimony, and verdicts were handed down explicitly charging those found guilty of pursuing a course of action resulting in the destruction of the Armenian population. Even so, popular sentiment in Turkish society did not support the punishment of the guilty, and the government chose to forgo the sentences of the court. The triumvirs „Enver, Talaat, and Jemal„ were condemned to death, but their trials were held in absentia since they had fled the county and their extradition was not a matter of priority (Dadrian, 1989, pp. 221…334).

Under these circumstances, no legal recourse to justice remained open. A clandestine Armenian group called Nemesis decided to mete out punishment to the accused individuals. The principal figures in the Young Turk Party, such as Talaat and Jemal, who conceived and implemented the genocide, were assassinated. All of them had fled Turkey, since their enemies included more than just Armenians. They also had much to account to the Turkish people for having taken them into a war which they lost so disastrously. Although the acts of retribution against Talaat and some of the others had a profound emotional effect on the Armenians, politically they were insignificant. The Armenians were never compensated for their losses (Derogy, 1990; Power, 2002, pp. 1…16).

Is There Agreement or Disagreement Among Legitimate Scholars as to the Interpretation of this Particular Genocide (e.g., Preconditions, Implementation, and Ramifications)?

Two schools of thought have emerged over the years. Scholars who study the Armenian genocide look at the phenomenon as either an exceptionally catastrophic occurrence coincident to a global conflict such as World War I (Fein, 1979, pp. 10…18; Horowitz, 1982, pp. 46…51), or the final chapter in the peculiar fate of the Armenians as a people who lost their independence many centuries earlier (Kuper, 1981, pp. 101…19; Walker, 1980, pp. 169, 236…37).

All agree that the preconditions to the genocide were highly consistent with other examples where a dominant group targets a minority. They also agree on the structural inequalities of Ottoman society and how it disadvantaged the Armenians. They differ on their interpretation of the causes and consequences for Armenian nationalism. Some think that the appearance of political organization among the Armenians can be regarded as the critical breaking point. Others see these developments as inevitable and entirely consistent with global trends and not particular to the Armenians. Two questions are often debated: whether the massacres during the reign of Abdul-Hamid were sufficiently precedental to be regarded as the beginning of the Armenian catastrophe, or whether the Young Turks aggravated conditions in ways that exceeded the designs of Abdul-Hamid (Kuper, 1981, pp. 101–19; Horowitz, 1982, pp. 46–51).

In the implementation of the genocide, one thing is clear. The earlier massacres were episodic and affected select communities. The genocide was systematic, comprehensive, and directed practically against everyone. The sultan's policy did not aim for the extermination of the Armenians; rather, it was brutal punishment for aspiring to gain charge of their political destiny. As many scholars have pointed out, at one time the Ottoman system extended a considerable measure of security to its minorities. Although for the most part they were excluded from government and at a disadvantage in holding large-scale property, Christians and Jews were allowed to practice their faiths and distinguish themselves in commerce and finance. Therefore, it was not in the interest of the sultan to dismantle his imperial inheritance. His objective remained the continuance of his autocratic power and his rule over the lands bequeathed him by his conquering forebears.

Those studying the Young Turks have pointed out that the CUP organized its committees and conducted its activities outside this system. They were opponents of imperial autocracy. Their own political radicalism also meant that they were predisposed to think in exclusionary terms. Some of these scholars contend that the Young Turk period can be seen as a transitional phase in Turkish society where the pluralistic construct of the multiethnic and multiconfessional Ottoman system was violently smashed and the ground was prepared for the emergence of a state based on ethnic singularism (Ahmad, 1982, pp. 418–25; Staub, 1989, pp. 173–87; Nelson, 1986, pp. 61–84).

Perhaps the issue debated most frequently revolves around the matter of post-genocide responsibility. There is a wide divergence of opinion on the question whether modern Turkey is liable to the Armenians for their losses, or whether it is absolved of such liability because the crime was committed under the jurisdiction of prior state authorities (Libaridian, 1985, pp. 211–27). The Turkish government dismisses all such claims since

it denies that the policies implemented in 1915 constitute genocide. Some in the academic and legal community are supportive of the Turkish position (Gürün, 1985). On the other hand, that stance raises a more complex problem. Who exactly should be held responsible for genocide: the government, the state, society? If governments put the blame on prior regimes, all they have done is merely certify the former policy by disregarding the consequences of genocide. The reluctance by a successor state to shoulder responsibility is only another form of reaping the benefits of mass murder.

Do People Care about this Genocide Today? If So, How Is that Concern Manifested? If Not, Why Not?

For a period of about 50 years, the world fell into an apathetic silence over the Armenian genocide. Its results had been so grievous for the Armenians and the failure of the international community to redress the consequent problems was so thoroughgoing that the world chose to ignore the legacy of the Armenian genocide. With the consolidation of Communist rule in Russia and of Nationalist rule in Turkey, the chapter on the Armenians was considered closed. People wanted to forget about the Great War and its misery. As for the Armenians, they were too few, too widely dispersed, and too preoccupied with their own survival to know how to respond.

The concern over the fate of the Armenians manifested mostly in literature, as various authors wrote about the massacres and memorialized the rare instances of resistance (Lepsius, 1987; Gibbons, 1916; Wheeler, 1934). After a life of struggle, upon reaching retirement age, Armenians also began to write down their memoirs. Slowly a small corpus of literature emerged, documenting in personal accounts the genocide and its consequences for individuals, their families, and communities (Hovannisian, 1987; Totten, 1991). This body of work began to serve as evidence for the study of the Armenian genocide. In the 1960s, as government archives holding vast collections of diplomatic correspondence on the deportations and massacres were opened, a significant amount of contemporaneous documentation also became available (Hovannisian, 1987; Peterian, 1983; Ohandjanian, 1988; Akalian, 1991…1993; Adrian, 1994). This further encouraged research in the subject. Interest in the Armenian genocide has since been growing as more researchers, writers, and educators examine the evidence and attempt to understand what happened in 1915 (Akalian, 1999b).

Commensurate to this interest, however, has been a phenomenon growing at an even faster pace. This is the denial of the Armenian genocide. For many Turks the reminder of the Ottoman past is offensive. The Turkish government's state policy has been a complete denial

(Foreign Policy Institute, 1982). The denial ranges beyond the question of political responsibility. This type of denial questions the very historical fact of the occurrence of genocide, and even of atrocities. A whole body of revisionist historiography has been generated to explain, to excuse, or to dismiss the Armenian genocide (Hovannisian, 1986a, pp. 111…38; Jobkin, 1986, pp. 97…109; Adalian, 1992, pp. 85…105).

Some authors have gone so far as to place the blame for the genocide on the Armenians themselves, describing the deportations and massacres as self-inflicted, since, they say, the deportations were only counter-measures taken by the Ottoman government against a disobedient and disloyal population (Uras, 1988, pp. 855…86; Gürün, 1985). Such arguments do not convince serious scholars (Guroian, 1986, pp. 135…52; Smith, 1989, pp. 1…38). Others, regrettably, are more prone to listening to revisionist argumentation (Shaw and Shaw, 1977, pp. 314…17; McCarthy, 1983, pp. 47…81, 117…30). These kinds of debates fail to address, however, the central questions about the Young Turk policy toward the Armenian population. Was every Armenian, young and old, man and woman, disloyal? How does one explain the deportation of Armenians from places that were nowhere near the war zones, if removing them from high-risk areas was the purpose of the policy? And always, one must ask about the treatment of children. What chance did they stand of surviving deportation, starvation, and dehydration in the desert?

What Does this Genocide Teach Us if We Wish to Protect Others from Such Horrors?

Although, ultimately, it is the exercise of political power in the absence of moral restraint that explains the occurrence of genocide, the demographic status of a people is demonstrated by the Armenian genocide to be a significant factor in the perpetration of genocide. A dispersed people juridically designated by a state as a minority, both in the numerical and political sense of the word, is extremely vulnerable to abusive policy. It lacks the capacity for any coordinated action to respond to, or resist, genocidal measures. It is evident that a government inclined to engage in the extermination of a minority can only be restrained by pressures and sanctions imposed by greater powers.

Geography was no less a contributing factor in exposing the Armenians to genocide. A people inhabiting a remote part of the world is all the more at the mercy of a brutal government, especially if it is questioning the policies of the state. Since exposure is the principal foil of crime, the more hidden from view a people lives, the more likely it is to be repressed. Of all the places where the Armenians in the Ottoman Empire might have hampered the war effort, if indeed they were a seditious population, the

most likely spot would have been the capital city. Yet the government spared most of the Armenians in Constantinople because many foreigners lived there, and they would have been alarmed to witness mass deportations. That signal exception underscores the importance and the high likelihood of successfully monitoring the living conditions of an endangered population.

That exception also points to another lesson, which is specially pronounced in the Armenian case. Since many foreign communities had a presence in Constantinople, getting the word out to the rest of the world would not have been difficult with such corroboration. Thereby the Armenians in this one city remained in a protected enclave. This principle applies no less to the international status extended an entire people, as the European powers once did for the Armenians. Their interest in the Armenians acted as a partial restraint on the Ottoman government. The sudden alteration of the international order as a result of global conflict left the Armenians wholly exposed. Whatever the level of international protection extended to an endangered minority, the withdrawal of those guarantees, tenuous as they might be, only acts as an inducement for genocide. Denying opportunity to a criminal regime is critical for the prevention of genocide.

The experience of the Armenian people in the period after the genocide teaches another important lesson. Unless the consequences of genocide are addressed in the immediate aftermath of the event, the element of time very soon puts survivors at a serious disadvantage. Without the attention of the international community, without the intervention of major states seeking to stabilize the affected region, without the swift apprehension of the guilty, and without the full exposure of the evidence, the victims stand no chance of recovering from their losses. In the absence of a response and of universal condemnation, a genocide becomes "legitimized." Following the war, the Ottoman government never gave a full accounting of what happened to the Armenians, and the successor state of Turkey chose to bury the matter entirely (Adalian, 1991, pp. 99–104).

Though all too frequently unwilling to take concerted action to save populations clearly in danger of annihilation, whether through monitoring and reporting systems, the activation of legal and economic sanctions, or political or military intervention, the international community is far better equipped to respond to genocidal crises than ever before. When the Armenian genocide occurred there was no alarm and there was no rescue. Without alarm there can be no rescue, and that is the least that the Armenian experience teaches.

Eyewitness Accounts: The Armenian Genocide

Eyewitness and survivor accounts of the Armenian genocide were audiotaped and videotaped more than a half century after the events. That means the recorded testimony was provided by persons in their 70s and 80s who were reflecting upon a life that took a sudden turn when they were still children or very young adults. Hence, the problem of the great length of time that passed since the events of 1915 and the fact that those events were seen through the eyes of children who were looking at the world from their very narrow frames of reference needs to be kept in mind when dealing with testimony of this type. Certainly children have the greatest difficulty gauging an accurate measure of time. Therefore, the episodes from their personal narratives occur at approximated intervals. Their memory, for instance, preserves the first names of numerous acquaintances, but last names are less frequently known.

A contrast to these limitations is the accuracy, with virtually all survivors, in their depiction of the geography and the topography that was the setting of their life•s most tragic period. Because they were deported, knowledge of where they originated and the places they saw and stopped along the way and the spots they reached at the end of their journeys became vital information not only for their physical and emotional survival, but also for their ability to reconnect with other survivors of the communities from which they were separated. Most interesting, however, and useful for the documentary record it turns out, was their very limited sense of the world around them. Whereas adults would have attempted to understand the events they witnessed in terms of their community and society, children describe their experiences strictly from within the confines of their immediate family and circle of friends. As such, therefore, they preserve a sense of greater pathos undiluted by either fatalism or drama. Most seem to have retained their horror of genocide through their inability to offer any larger suggestion than their very incomprehension at what happened and why.

Helen Tatarian•s account is an exceptionally rare one because it describes a massacre of Armenians that happened in 1909. When these records were created, very few survivors were old enough to have lived through occurrences of massacres earlier than 1915. The details of her account are also a valuable contrast to the pattern of the 1915 genocide. The Adana massacre is characterized by random mob action occurring within the perimeter of the city. Government forces are described as a party that simply stayed out of the way and, in this case, provided safe conduct where foreigners, specifically Americans, were concerned. More importantly, she verifies the significance of the protection provided by the missionary, and other third-party, presence. During the genocide none of these factors came into play. The missionaries were unable to protect their

parishioners. The government was an active participant in the dislocation and the execution of the Armenian population. Lastly, with the exception of some towns in the farthest eastern reaches of Anatolia, little killing occurred within the towns. The other survivors all testify to a consistent pattern of separation, deportation, and subsequent mass executions in places away from urban centers during the period of the genocide.

Sarkis Agopian records the treatment of the adult male population that was never deported. He testifies that they were arrested, tortured, and murdered very early in the process. The deportations, as he recalls, occurred after the segment of the Armenian population capable of resistance was eliminated. Lastly, his memory preserves, with a powerful poignancy, the trauma of Armenian children who were spared deportation and starvation by adoption into Turkish families. The deafening silence at his last glimpse of his mother and the shattering news of her death capture the maddening grief that seized their young lives, and which marked them for all their years.

Takouhi Levorian gives an eyewitness account of an actual episode of wholesale slaughter. Her description of the physical cruelties inflicted upon the Armenian population is especially riveting. Her description of the kinds of privations endured is no less powerful. Her testimony incontrovertibly underscores the extreme vulnerability of the Armenian young female population. It would appear that the treatment they received was most abusive. The horrific sadism practiced by the perpetrators of the Armenian genocide is here to testified in this single account.

Yevnig Adrouni•s story redeems humanity through a personal narrative of survival and rescue. Too young to be mistreated sexually, her exploits are testament to the spirit of an alert child who would not submit to degradation. Spared physical torment, she committed herself to escaping her fate. Clutching onto the last shreds of her Armenian identity, she proves to herself and her rescuers that determination and defiance can, sometimes, defeat evil. As she so vividly recounts, from the survival of a single human being springs forth the new hope of larger victories.

Helen Tatarian, native of Dertyol, born c. 1893. Audiotaped on April 17, 1977, Los Angeles, California by Rouben Adalian. (Dertyol was a town inhabited mostly by Armenians. It is located on the Mediterranean coast in the region of Adana. Adana is also the name of the largest town in the area.)

There was a massacre in 1909. I was in school at Adana. Miss Webb and Miss May, two American sisters, ran the school. Miss Webb was the older, Miss May the younger.

In 1909, right in the month of April, we suddenly heard guns being fired and saw flames rising. The houses of the Armenians were set on fire.

There was a French school right next to ours. They burned it down completely.

At first the Turks killed quite a lot of people, then they stopped for a while. Eight days later they started firing their guns again. Reverend Sisak Manoogian came running. •Do not be afraid children, a hog had gone wild,Ž he said, •and they are shooting it.Ž But it was a lie, nor had a hog gone wild. The Turks had gone wild. They were about to start again.

The son-in-law of our American missionary, Mr. Chambers, had climbed on the roof. He had climbed on the roof of our laundry room to look at what was going on in the city. They shot the man.

There was a window, a small window up high. We used to look from there to see that behind the school building there were people lying dead. The Turks were shooting the Armenians. This was a massacre specifically aimed at the Armenians.

During the fire those who managed to hide remained in hiding, those who did not hide were cut down. Just like Surpik grandmother, the poor woman who was going to her brother-in-law•s house. Surpik grandmother was shot in the arm, great grandmother Surpik. Later they had shot dead her husband and son. This woman owned fields. She was a rich woman. She used to travel on horseback. But it so happened that she was going in the direction of her relatives, her brother-in-law•s house. Fortunately she was not killed.

We could not go out and we remained in hiding in the school building. We heard the sounds of guns, and from the sounds alone we were afraid. We were children. We cried, but we had no communication with anyone outside. Across from our building there lived an American, Miss Farris. The Turks burned her building so that our school would catch on fire and the children would have to run outside and thus they could kidnap the girls. The American missionary immediately notified the government. Soldiers came from the government and while putting out the fire a soldier fell and was burned inside.

Later we opened a hole in the wall. The missionaries did this. They opened a hole big enough to go through it in order to cross from our end of the block to the other end, to Mr. Chambers• house, the missionary•s house. All the girls were there, 250, 300 in all. We piled up in the man•s house. The Turks were going to burn this house also. The man held out a surrender flag. They had poured gas and threatened to burn us in that house. We asked him: •Reverend, if the Turks forced you, would you hand us over to them?Ž •If they press me hard. If they insist,Ž said the man. What could he do? Or else they would kill him too. Later we remained there for a night. There, we cried. The girls began such a weeping. The following morning, the government soldiers took us to the train station. By train we went to Mersin.

There was no fighting [in Adana between Armenians and Turks]. The Turks knew anyway which was the house of an Armenian. They went in and cut him down and shot the people inside and they took whatever was in the house. They robbed the houses and set them on fire. They entered them since it was the property of the Armenians. They also burned the churches, but I believe a considerable crowd had gathered in a French church. They did nothing there at that time. There were those who took refuge with our American missionaries also, but it was a little difficult to cross the street. If the Turks saw you, they were ready to shoot.

Sarkis Agojian, native of Chemeshgadsak, born 1906. Audiotaped on May 25, 1983, in Pasadena, California, by Donald and Lorna Miller (Chemeshgadsak was a town inhabited by Armenians in the region of Kharpert in the western portion of historic Armenia.)

We were in school having physical education. We had lined up when the wife of our coach, Mr. Boghos, came and told her husband that the Turks had just arrested the principal, Pastor Arshag. You see, they first took the educated, the intellectuals. They took these people to a home which they had converted into a prison and tortured them in order to get them to talk. The mailman, who was Armenian, was also arrested and tortured. They pulled out his fingernails saying that while he was carrying mail he also was transporting secret letters; mail was carried in those days on horseback in large leather bags fastened to either side of the horse. He was Sarkis Mendishian. So upon the news that Pastor Arshag was arrested, they dismissed us from school and asked all of us to go home.

We went home. My father was not there. My uncle had run away. They had put a dress on my uncle•s son, even though he was not young, to disguise him. My father•s uncle was also in prison, for, after taking the younger educated men, they also took the elderly. I was young so they used to send me to take food to him. I did this a few times. I would go in and sit with him. One day when I was taking his food, I met a lot of police who were saying that on that day we could not deliver food „ t hat all the prisoners were going to leave. I saw them in twos, all chained together. I could not take the food, so I returned and gave the news. I told them that they were chained and they were coming this way and would pass by our house, there being no other way to leave town toward Kharpert.

By now, all the families had heard, so they were all in the streets to see their loved ones. I got on top of the roof and was yelling •uncle.Ž There was a doctor in this procession, and when his wife saw him, she ran out to greet him, but with the butt of the rifle the police pushed her away „ even though he was an elderly man. So the men marched on, leaving all the women and families crying and grieving. There was a place outside of town about 20 minutes with trees and water. There they took their names

to see if anyone was missing. Then they marched them to the edge of the Euphrates and killed them. Apparently my great uncle had some red gold with him; he gave it to the police who took it and then killed him.

Now that all the men were gone, deportation orders were issued for women and children. Our town was deported in two different groups, 15 days apart. I wish we were in the first group because they made it all the way to Aleppo. When we were to leave our home, we left our bedding and other things with the landlord so that if we returned we would get it back. Also, we threw our rugs to the people at the public bath next door so that they would keep them for us. We said that we would get them when we returned. We are still to return!

Because we could afford it, we had rented a cart to carry some of our things. It was five hours from our town to the Euphrates River. On the way we had to pass on a bridge. We were told that one of our neighbor•s boys had been killed and thrown over there. In fact, I heard some Turk boys saying to each other that there was a gold piece in the pocket of our neighbor•s son. We could see the injured who had been shot but were not yet dead.

The first village that we reached was one in which our landlord lived. We saw that the fruit was getting ripe. My brother, sister, uncle•s son and daughter took some money to our landlord to see if he would save their lives, and they remained with him. I stayed with my mother, my uncle•s wife, and her five-year-old grandchild. We left the village of Bederatil and went to the next town, Leloushaghen, which took us a day to reach. There was a Turk man who was taking Armenian boys away, and I said that I would go with him.

That night, I and two other boys slept at this Turkish agha•s house. In the morning my mother brought a bundle of clothes for me and left it with a Turkish woman whose husband had worked in my father•s bakery and who had lived with this agha for years. I was there when she came to the house to leave my clothes. I was sitting there and I saw her, but it was as though I was in a trance; we never talked and she never kissed me. I don•t know if it was because she could not bear it from sadness. I never saw again any of those clothes or anything that my mother might have left in them for me.

The deportation caravan now went on without me; they still had two hours to make it to the Euphrates River. When they got there, they were all killed. The way we heard this was that some of the police brought to the agha a pretty young girl and her brother that this Turk wanted. These police told the agha that in a matter of a few minutes they wiped them all out. But this young Armenian girl told us that she saw the gendarmes force the deportees to take off their clothes and then shove them off a cliff into the Euphrates River far below. According to this girl, when it came time for

my mother, she took gold from her bundle, threw it in the river, grabbed my four-year-old brother, and jumped down with the child in her arms. When I heard this, all of a sudden I began to weep. It•s the feelings you know. I was about nine years old. As soon as his girl finished telling her story, the agha•s son started to distract me and those listening by calling me a gavour [infidel], making fun of the cross. I covered my head with the blanket and cried and cried.

Takouhi Levonian, native of Keghi, born 1900. Audiotaped on April 8, 1981, in Los Angeles, California (Keghi was another Armenian town in the region of Kharpert.)

When the war began, I could see and sense the men of our town gathering in groups. They were talking and looking very sad. The women used to sigh. The schools shut down and their grounds, as well as the churches, became filled with soldiers. That•s how winter passed. In April, there was talk that they were going to move us out. I was 15 years old then *f* .

Between April 29 and 30 [of 1915], word came that they were going to transfer us to Kharpert. On May first, that news was confirmed and until the fourth [of May] every household began preparations by making kete [Armenian bread], preparing chickens, other meats, and so on. My father told my mother not to bother with any of these preparations. He said to just take our bedding on the mules and not to bother burying anything, like so many others had done who thought that they would return to them. He said that if we ever returned, he would be glad to come back to four walls. He was far sighted.

At the onset of the war he imported large amounts of oil, sugar, matches, and all the things that had to be imported. When we left [on the deportation], we distributed all this to our neighbors. They arrested only a few people from our town. The rest they left unharmed. They did not do anything to my father because he was respected by all, since he was so fair with every one „ regardless of nationality. He did good equally to all.

We were the first caravan to leave with much tears and anguish since it meant separation for so many. They assigned a few soldiers to us and thus we began. We used to travel by day, and in the evenings we stopped to eat and rest. In five to six days we reached Palu. There, while we were washing up, I will never, never forget, they took my father away, along with all the men down to 12 years of age. The next day our camp was filled with the Turks and Kurds of Palu, looting, dragging away whatever they could, both possessions and young women. They knocked the mules down to kill them. I was grabbing onto my six-year-old brother; my sister was holding her baby, and my two young sisters were grabbing her skirt; my mother was holding the basket of bread. There was so much confusion, and the

noise of bullets shooting by us. Some people were getting shot, and the rest of us were running in the field, not knowing where to go ƒ .

Then I saw with my own eyes the Turks beating a fellow name Sahag, who had hid under his wife•s dress. They were beating him with hammers, axes right in front of me and his wife. He yelled to her to run away, that we are all going to die a•donkey death.Ž And then I saw the husband of my aunt, who was too old to have been taken previously, and he was being beaten in the head with an ax. They then threw him in the river. It finally calmed down. The Turks left some dead, took some with them, and the rest of us found each other.

At this time it was announced that anyone who would become a Turk could remain here. Otherwise, we must continue on. Many stayed. So we took off again. [We felt] much loss, that was not material loss only, but human loss. We were in tears and anguish as we left.

From Palu to Dikranaged they tormented us a great deal. We suffered a lot. There was no water or food. Whatever my mom had in her bag, she gave us a little at a time. We walked the whole day, 10 to 15 days. No shoes remained on our feet. We finally reached Dikranaged. There, by the water, we washed, and whatever little dry bread we had we wetted it and ate it.

Word came that the vali [governor] wanted from the Armenians a very pretty 12-year-old girl ƒ . So by night, they came with their lamps looking for such a girl. They found one, dragged her from the mother, saying to the weeping mother that they will return her. Later, they returned the child, in horrible condition, almost dead, and left her at her mother•s knees.

The mother was weeping so badly, and, of course, the child could not make it and died. The women could not comfort her. Finally, several of the women tried to dig a hole, and with the help of one of the gendarme•s guns, they buried the girl and covered her. Dikranaged had a large wall around it, so my mother and a few other women wrote on it, •Shushan buried here.Ž

We remained under the walls [where Shushan was buried] for two to three days. Then they made us leave again. This time they assigned to us an elderly gendarme. He had tied to his horse a large container of water and the whole way he kept giving it to children and never himself rode the horse, but allowed old women to take turns on it. We went to Mardin. He also always took us near the villages so we could buy some food, and he would not allow the villagers to sell food at expensive prices. A lot of people either died on the way or stayed behind, because they could not keep up. So by the time we reached Mardin we were a lot less in number, although still a lot. They deposited us in a large field. There they gave us food ƒ . At t his point my mother was not with us.

A Kurd woman came and told my sister that two horsemen were going to kidnap me. She panicked and started looking for my mom, but she was not around. So she thought of giving the baby, who was in her arms, to the Kurd woman, so that she would help me. So she disguised me, but when we turned around, the woman was gone with the baby.

Turks used to pay high prices for babies, probably the woman sold him. My poor sister, Zarouhi, went crazy. I, too, was going crazy, feeling that I was the cause. I cried and cried. We remained in Mardin for five days and never found the baby. My poor sister was lactating, and her milk was full but there was no baby to nurse ƒ.

It came time to leave, and we had to leave the baby behind with uncontrollable tears. The journey was dreadful. With no shoes on our feet, it was so painful to walk on the paths they took us on. We used to wrap cloth on them to ease the pain, but it didn•t really help much. There was no water. In fact, at one stretch, for three full days, we had no water at all. The children would cry: •Water, water, water.Ž One of the children died.

Then toward morning one day, my sister and another woman crawled out of camp to a far place and brought some water in a tin can. Finally, they dumped us next to a small river. There my mother took me to the river to wash my face which was always covered up, except for my eyes. But one of the gendarmes, having spotted my eyes, showed up and grabbed me. My mother fainted, and, acting bravely, I shook his hand loose and ran, mingling among the people. I could hear the women yelling to my mother to wake up, that I got away. As the caravan moved again, I kept watching that man, always trying to stay behind him ƒ.

Yevnig Adrouni, native of Hoghe, born c. 1905. Audiotaped on August 13, 1978, by Rouben Adalian. (Hoghe was an Armenian village in the Kharpert region.)

My uncle, my cousin, the government took them away. Later they gathered the noteworthy people, including my father. They took him to prison, to Kharpert. After this they began to gather the men and to take them to the place called Keghvank. That place was a slaughterhouse. I remember my uncle•s wife and others used to go there. My father was still in prison at this time. They used to go there and find that their men were missing. They [the Turks] had taken them and killed them with axes even then.

During the time when my father was in prison, there occurred the thing called Emeliet Tabure. They recalled all the Armenian soldiers. They set them to work at road construction. In this way they gathered all of them, including the Armenian soldiers, and filled them in the prisons. Later, when my father was still in prison, they set fire to the prison so that the Armenians would be killed. Already they were torturing them every day.

When he escaped from prison, a Kurd saw my father. He was an acquaintance. My father fled with the Kurd to our village. But his nails were pulled out and his body was black and blue. They had tortured my father continuously. He lived but a few days. He died.

This is in 1915. My mother was deported first. A Turk was going to keep us, but he proposed that we Turkify. My mother did not accept. Therefore, since I was young, they thought that if my mother was not with me, they might be able to convince me to Turkify. My mother was deported three months before the rest of us. This happened in spring. As for me, they would say: "Would the daughter of a tough infidel become a Muslim?"

They deported me also, thirsty and hungry, all the way to Deir el Zor. They did not even allow us to drink water. Along the way they took us by very narrow roads. Many of the old people who were hungry and thirsty could not walk. They used to strike them with stones and roll them down the slope. Pregnant women, I have seen with my own eyes — I cried a lot. Whenever I go to church, the whole thing is in front of my eyes, the scene, the deportation. They tore open the bellies of pregnant women so that the child was born. It fell free. They used to do that. I have seen such things.

There were some men. They killed them at that time. All of us, hungry, thirsty, we walked all the way to Deir el Zor. They came, Kurds, Arabs, and carried us away from the caravan. When a piece of bread fell in my hands for the first time, I chewed it but could not swallow it because I was starved.

Along the way they did not allow us to drink water. The river was there. It flowed. They did not let us go and drink. A girl, she was 13, 14 perhaps — we suddenly saw that the caravan was stopped there in the field. That girl came, her face scratched, bloodied, all her clothes torn. Her mother had sent her secretly in order to fetch water. There were Kurdish boys — all the things they have done to the poor girl. The Turkish guards caught her mother. They asked: "Who is her mother? Let her come forward." The caravan was seated. A woman moved her lips. The guards said: "This is her mother." The child was in her lap. They seized the woman and in front of our eyes, they shot her [daughter] dead, saying: "Because you did not have the right. We had forbidden you to send anyone to the river."

They used to take the little ones and carry them away. The Kurds carried me away as well. For eight years I remained lost among the Kurds, the Turks, and the Arabs. I was among the Kurds. I forgot much of the Armenian language, but I did not forget the Lord's Prayer. Later they used to have me tend sheep. They gave me a dog with the name of Khutto. I used to write in the dirt with my finger my name, my last name, and the name of my birthplace. I used to write the alphabet in the dirt and in this

way I did not forget the Armenian letters. I did not forget the Lord•s Prayer and I did not forget where I was from.

First I was with an Assyrian. They took me to Mardin. Later I was placed with Muslims to be brought up as their child, but I became ill. They returned me to the Assyrians. The Assyrians helped us a great deal. From the church, the sister of the patriarch of the Assyrians took me to her house. They were poor as well. The Assyrians used to go to the road in order to break stones and make a living, and I went along with them. We used to go there to break stones. When that finished, it seems the war was ended, I said I am going to Aleppo. Instead of going to Aleppo, Kurdish tribesmen carried me away. They took me to their villages as a servant. I knew that I had relatives in Aleppo but how would I find them, how would I get there? I was among Kurds.

They took me to the place called Tersellor. Tersellor was a village of Kurds in the environs of Aleppo at the place called Musulme. I remained there tending sheep, but I had made up my mind that I would go to Aleppo. I did not know any other Armenians. There were no Armenians. There was nobody, but I thought to myself that my cousin might be there. By night I escaped. I went down the road. I hid from the Kurds. I saw a traveler on horseback with young ones around him. They saw me.

Now the languages, Arabic, Kurdish, I spoke fluently already. They asked me: •Where are you going?Ž I said: •I am going to Aleppo.Ž They looked at each other•s faces. They said: •We are going to Aleppo. We will take you along.Ž They took me with them. They were from Aleppo, but Muslims. They have villages. In the summer they go to their villages. In the winter they return to Aleppo. They took me with them, but they did not let me out of their house in Aleppo. Next door to the house I was staying in there was an Armenian girl. She was younger than I. She remembered only her name, Mary. She brought news from the outside. She is also Armenian and I am Armenian, but I acted as if I was a Kurd since I had presented myself as a Kurd to the others. I was afraid to tell the truth to that Armenian girl. She was younger than I.

One day she had fallen down the stairs and broken her foot. They took her to the hospital. At the hospital they told her: •You are Armenian.Ž •No, my name is Fatma,Ž she had said.

I saw that she had come back. When we were taking out the garbage, I asked her: •Where were you?Ž She related what had taken place.•I was at the hospital.Ž She said that they told her: •You are Armenian.Ž She said: •At first I denied it.Ž After talking for a while she conceded. •Yes, I only remember that we were under a tent. My father, my mother, all, they killed and they took me. Only that much I remember.Ž They [the hospital personnel] said: •Do not go [back to the house]. Now there are Armenians. We have an Armenia.Ž This is at the end of 1922. After I was

freed I discovered what the date was. She said [to the hospital personnel]: "No. I go back because they spent ten red gold pieces for my foot."

Look, God sent her for me. I believe that God sent her for me." But I will escape," she said. "I will escape." I said: "Alright, we will escape together." We had a shoemaker who was Armenian. We did not know that he was Armenian. He was from Aintab. Now I regret very much that I did not take down his name. Eventually, through his assistance, we managed to escape.

I told the girl: "Tell that boy from Aintab that there is another Armenian girl." He asked her: "Does she use a veil?" At that time I had been given a small veil since I was with a Muslim. He made me work as a servant. She said: "Yes." "Do not believe that she is Armenian," he said. The girl came and told me this. I said: "Tell him I know the Lord's Prayer." She went and told him. He said: "Anyone from another race can learn that by heart just as they learn languages." It so happened that Armenian men had attempted to rescue girls from the houses of other Arabs only to discover that they were not Armenians. I said: "Tell him that I know how to read Armenian." He said: "If she knows how to read Armenian, let her write." I wrote my name, my last name, where I was from, but I wrote in Turkish with Armenian letters. When she gave him the letter, he told her: "We will not rescue you until she is ready too. Now we believe that this girl is Armenian." If I had not known how to read and write Armenian I would not be here today. The Armenian letters saved me. This letter was handed to Nishan Der-Bedrosian, a man from Kharpert. It came into his hands and he wrote me a letter which reached me through that girl. "Try in every way to escape *f* ."

The shop of the shoemaker was close to where we lived. The first day I found that he had locked the door to the shop and left. I went the following day. He said: "You know I cannot keep the store open after a certain hour. It is against the law." Then I found the means to escape. When I was escaping, they realized that I was escaping so they locked the door with two keys. But finally I found the way. I escaped by night. A man was standing in the dark and the shoemaker had not closed his shop. They took me and we left. It was a feast day. It was Christmas day. Apparently it was December or January, perhaps the beginning of 1923. I was free.

So this is my story. But the things which the Turks did, the massacres, I never forget. In front of our eyes *f* Haygaz *f* on his mother's knees, they butchered him. These sort of things I have seen. Ah! I always cry. I cannot forget.

References

Adalian, Rouben P. (1989). "The Historical Evolution of the Armenian Diaspora." Journal of Modern Hellenism, 6:81…114.

Adalian, Rouben P. (1991).• The Armenian Genocide: Context and Legacy.Ž Special Issue on Teaching about Genocide edited by William S. Parsons and Samuel Totten of Social Education, 55(2)99…104.

Adalian, Rouben P. (Ed.) (1991…1993).The Armenian Genocidein the U.S. Archives 1915-1918 Alexandria, VA, and Cambridge, UK: Chadwyck-Healey, Inc.

Adalian, Rouben P. (1992).• The Armenian Genocide: Revisionism and Denial,Ž pp. 85…105. In Michael N. Dobkowski and Isidor Wallimann (Eds.) Genocidein Our Time: An Annotated Bibliography with Analytical Introductions. Ann Arbor, MI: The Pierian Press.

Adalian, Rouben P. (1999a).•A Conceptual Method for Examining the Consequences of the Armenian Genocide,Ž pp. 47…59. In Levon Chorbajian and George Shirinian (Eds.) Studies in Comparative Genocide. New York: St. Martin•s Press, Inc.

Adalian, Rouben P. (1999b) • Evidence, Source, and Authority: Documenting the Armenian Genocide Against the Background of Denial,Ž pp. 67…77. In Roger W. Smith (Ed.) Genocide: Essays Toward Understanding, Early-Warning, and Prevention. Williamsburg, VA: Association of Genocide Scholars.

Adalian, Rouben P. (2002).Historical Dictionary of Armenia. Lanham, MD: Scarecrow Press, Inc.

Adalian, Rouben P. (2003).•American Diplomatic Correspondence in the Age of Mass Murder: Documents of the Armenian Genocide in the U.S. Archives,Ž pp. 146…184. In Jay Winter (Ed.) America and the Armenian Genocide of 1915. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Ahmed, Feroz (1982).• Unionist Relations with the Greek, Armenian, and Jewish Communities of the Ottoman Empire, 1908…1914,Ž pp. 387…434. In Benjamin Braude and Bernard Lewis (Eds.) Christians and Jews in the Ottoman Empire, Volume I, The Central Lands. New York: Holmes & Meier Publishers Inc.

Astourian, Stephan H. (1992).• Genocidal Process: Reflections on the Armeno-Turkish Polarization,Ž pp. 53…79. In Richard G. Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocide: History, Politics, Ethics. New York: St. Martin•s Press.

Astourian, Stephan H. (1998).• Modern Turkish Identity and the Armenian Genocide,Ž pp. 23…49. In Richard G. Hovannisian (Ed.) Remembrance and Denial: The Case of the Armenian Genocide. Detroit, MI: Wayne State University Press.

Baghdjian, Kevork K. (1987).La Confiscation, par le Gouvernement Turc, des Biens Arméniens *f* Dits •Abandonnés.Ž Montreal: Payette & Simms Inc.

Barsoumian, Hagop (1982).• The Dual Role of the Amira Class within the Ottoman Government and the Armenian Millet (1750…1850).Ž pp. 171…184. In Benjamin Braude and Bernard Lewis (Eds.) Christians and Jews in the Ottoman Empire, Volume I, The Central Lands. New York: Holmes & Meier Publishers Inc.

Beylerian, Arthur (1983). Les Grande Puissances l•Empire Ottoman et les Arméniens dans les Archives Francaises (1914-1918) Recueil de documents. Paris: Publications de la Sorbonne.

Bliss, Edwin M. (1982).Turkey and the Armenian Atrocities. Fresno, CA: Meshag Publishers. [Originally published in 1896.]

Bournoutian, George A. (2002).A Concise History of the Armenian People. Costa Mesa, CA: Mazda Publishers.

Braude, Benjamin, and Lewis, Bernard (Eds.) (1982).Christians and Jews in the Ottoman Empire, Volume 1, The Central Lands. New York: Holmes & Meier Publishers Inc.

Charny, Israel W. (1999).Encyclopedia of Genocide. Santa Barbara: ABC CLIO. (See multiple entries on the Armenian genocide.)

Dadrian, Vahakn N. (1986).• The Naim-Andonian Documents on the World War I Destruction of Ottoman Armenians: The Anatomy of a Genocide.Ž International Journal of Middle East Studies, 18(3):311…360.

Dadrian, Vahakn N. (1989).• Genocide as a Problem of National and International Law: The World War I Armenian Case and its Contemporary Legal Ramifications.Ž Yale Journal of International Law, 14(2):221…334.

Dadrian, Vahakn N. (1991).• The Documentation of the World War I Armenian Massacres in the Proceedings of the Turkish Military Tribunal.Ž International Journal of Middle East Studies, 23(4): 549…576.

Dadrian, Vahakn N. (1994).•Documentation of the Armenian Genocide in German and Austrian Sources,Ž pp. 77…125. In Israel W. Charny (Ed.), The Widening Circle of Genocide: A Critical Bibliographic Review. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers.

Dadrian, Vahakn N. (1995).The History of the Armenian Genocide:Ethnic Conflict from the Balkansto Anatolia to the Caucasus. Providence,RI: Berghahn Books.
Dadrian, Vahakn N. (1996).German Responsibility in the Armenian Genocide:A Review of the Historical Evidenceof German Complicity. Cambridge, MA: Blue CraneBooks.
Dadrian, Vahakn N. (1999).Warrant for Genocide:Key Elements of Turko-Armenian Conflict. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers.
Davis, Leslie A. (1989).The Slaughterhouse Province:An American Diplomat•s Report on the Armenian Genocide,1915…1917. New Rochelle, NY: Aristide D. Caratzas,Publisher.
Derogy, Jacques (1990).Resistanceand Revenge:The Armenian Assassination of the Turkish Leaders Responsible for the 1915 Massacres and Deportations. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers.
Dinkel, Christoph (1991).•German Officers and the Armenian Genocide,Ž Armenian Review, 44(1):77…133.
Dobkin, Marjorie Housepian (1986).•What Genocide? What Holocaust? News from Turkey, 1915…1923: A CaseStudy,Ž pp. 97…109. In Richard Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocidein Perspective. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Fein, Helen (1979).Accounting for Genocide:National Responses and Jewish Victimization during the Holocaust. New York: The FreePress.
Foreign Policy Institute (1982).The Armenian Issue in Nine Questions and Answers. Ankara: FPI.
Gibbons, Herbert Adams (1916).The Blackest Pageof Modern History. Events in Armenia in 1915. The Facts and the Responsibilities. New York and London: G.P. Putnam•sSons.
Great Britain, Parliament (1916).The Treatment of the Armenians in the Ottoman Empire: Documents Presented to Viscount Greyof Falbodon, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. Prefaceby ViscountBryce. London: Sir Joseph Causton &Sons.
Greene, Frederick Davis (1896).Armenian Massacres and Turkish Tyranny. Philadelphia and Chicago: International Publishing Co.
Guroian, Vigen (1986).•Collective Responsibility and Official Excuse Making: The Case forthe Turkish Genocide of the Armenians,Ž pp. 135…52. In Richard Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocidein Perspective. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Gürün, Kâmuran (1985).The Armenian File: The Myth of InnocenceExposed. London and Nicosia, Istanbul: K. Rustem &Bros. and Weidenfeld and Nicolson Ltd.
Hairapetian, Armen (1984).••Race Problems• and the Armenian Genocide: The State Department File,Ž and •Documents: The State Department File,Ž Armenian Review, 37(1):41…145.
Horowitz, Irving Louis (1982).Taking Lives: Genocideand State Power. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Hovannisian, Richard G. (1967).Armenia on the Road to Independence:1918. Berkeley: University of California Press.
Hovannisian, Richard G. (1986a).•The Armenian Genocide and Patterns of Denial,Ž pp. 111…33. In Richard G. Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocidein Perspective. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Hovannisian, Richard G. (Ed.) (1986b). The Armenian Genocidein Perspective. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Hovannisian, Richard G. (1986c).•The Historical Dimensions of the Armenian Question, 1878…1923,Ž pp. 19…41. In Richard G. Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocidein Perspective. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Hovannisian, Richard G. (1987).The Armenian Holocaust: A Bibliography Relating to the Deportations, Massacres, and Dispersion of the Armenian People, 1915-1923. Cambridge, MA: National Association for Armenian Studies and Research.
Hovannisian, Richard G. (1992).•Intervention and Shades of Altruism During the Armenian Genocide,Ž pp. 173…207. In Richard G. Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocide:History, Politics,Ethics. New York: St. Martin•sPress.
Kerr, Stanley E. (1973).The Lions of Marash: Personal Experiences with American Near East Relief, 1919-1922. Albany: State University of New York Press.
Kinross,Lord (1964).Ataturk: The Birth of a Nation. London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson.
Kloian, Richard D. (1985).The Armenian Genocide:News Accounts from the American Press 1915-1922. Berkeley, CA: Anto Printing.
Kuper, Leo (1981).Genocide:Its Political Use in the Twentieth Century. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Kuper, Leo (1986)• The Turkish Genocide of Armenians, 1915…1917Ž pp. 43…59. In Richard G. Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocide in Perspective. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Lang, David Marshall (1970). Armenia: Cradle of Civilization. London: George Allen & Unwin.
Lang, David Marshal (1981). The Armenians: A People in Exile. London: George Allen & Unwin.
Lepsius, Johannes (1987). Rapport Secret sur les Massacres d•Arménie (1915-1916). Paris: Edition Payot.
Libaridian, Gerard (1985)• The Ideology of the Young Turk MovementŽ pp. 37…49. In Gerard Libaridian (Ed.) A Crime of Silence, The Armenian Genocide: Permanent Peoples• Tribunal. London: Zed Books.
Libaridian, Gerard (1987)• The Ultimate Repression: The Genocide of the Armenians, 1915…1917, pp. 203…35. In idsor Wallimann and Michael N. Dobkowski (Eds.) Genocide and the Modern Age: Etiology and Case Studies of Mass Death. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press.
McCarthy, Justin (1983). Muslims and Minorities: The Population of Ottoman Anatolia and the End of the Empire. New York: New York University Press.
Melson, Robert (1986)• Provocation or Nationalism: A Critical Inquiry into the Armenian Genocide of 1915Ž pp. 61…84. In Richard G. Hovannisian (Ed.) The Armenian Genocide in Perspective. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books.
Miller, Donald E., and Miller, Lorna Touryan (1993). Survivors: An Oral History of the Armenian Genocide. Berkeley: University of California Press.
Morgenthau, Henry (1918). Ambassador Morgenthau•s Story. Garden City, New York: Doubleday, Page and Co. [Reprinted in 2003 by Wayne State University Press, Detroit, MI.]
Nalbandian, Louise (1963). The Armenian Revolutionary Movement. Berkeley: University of California Press.
Nassibian, Akaby (1984). Britain and the Armenian Question 1915-1923. New York: St. Martin•s Press.
Ohandjanian, Artem (Ed.) (1988). The Armenian Genocide, Volume 2: Documentation. Munich: Institute fur Armenische Fragen.
Parla, Taha (1985). The Social and Political Thought of Ziya Gökalp 1876-1924. Leiden: E.J. Brill.
Power, Samantha (2002)• A Problem From Hell: America and the Age of Genocide. New York: Basic Books.
Ramsaur, J., Ernest Edmondson (1957). The Young Turks: Prelude to the Revolution of 1908. New York: Russell & Russell.
Sachar, Howard M. (1969). The Emergence of the Middle East: 1914-1924. New York: Alfred A. Knopf.
Sanasarian, Eliz (1989)• Gender Distinction in the Genocide Process: A Preliminary Study of the Armenian CaseŽ Holocaust and Genocide Studies, 4(4):449…61.
Shaw, Stanford J., and Shaw, Ezel Kural (1977). History of the Ottoman Empire and Modern Turkey. Volume 2. New York: Cambridge University Press.
Smith, Roger (1989)• Genocide and Denial: The Armenian Case and Its ImplicationsŽ Armenian Review, 42(1):1…38.
Staub, Ervin (1989). The Roots of Evil: The Origins of Genocide and Other Group Violence. New York: Cambridge University Press.
Ternon, Yves (1981). The Armenians: History of a Genocide. Delmar, NY: Caravan Books.
Totten, Samuel (1991)• The Ottoman Genocide of the ArmeniansŽ pp. 7…43. In Samuel Totten (Ed.) First-Person Accounts of Genocidal Acts Committed in the Twentieth Century: An Annotated Bibliography. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press.
Toynbee, Arnold J. (Ed.) (1916). The Treatment of Armenians in the Ottoman Empire, 1915-1916. London: Sir Joseph Causton and Sons, Limited. [Preface by Viscount Bryce.] [Reprinted in Beirut, Lebanon, by G. Doniguian & Sons, 1979.]
Trumpener, Ulrich (1968). Germany and the Ottoman Empire 1914-1918. New Jersey: Princeton University Press. [Reprinted in 1989 by Caravan Books in Delmar, NY.]
Uras, Esat (1988). The Armenians in History and the Armenian Question. Istanbul: Foundation for the Establishment and Promotion of Centers for Historical Research and Documentation, and Istanbul Research Center.
Walker, Christopher J. (1980). Armenia: The Survival of a Nation. New York: St. Martin•s Press.
Werfel, Franz. (1934). The Forty Days of Musa Dagh. New York: The Modern Library.

Winter, Jay (2003). America and the Armenian Genocide of 1915. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
Ye•or, Bat (Y. Masiya) (1985). The Dhimmi: Jews and Christians Under Islam. Teaneck, NJ: Fairleigh Dickenson University Press.
Zürcher, Erik J. (1998) Turkey: A Modern History. London and New York: I.B. Tauris & Co. Ltd.

Belarus
Warsaw
Poland
Russia
Ukrainian SSR, 1932-33
Political Boundaries, 2004
Kiev
Kharkov
Dnipropetrovs'k
Donets'k
Rostov
Kishinev
Moldova
Odessa
Romania
Sea of Azov
Stavropol
Krasnodar
Bucharest
Black Sea
0 200 400 600 800 1000 1200 Kilometer
0 200 400 600 800 Miles

Ukraine

CHAPTER 3
Soviet Man-Made Famine in Ukraine

JAMES E. MACE

It is now generally accepted that in 1932–1933 several million peasants — most of them Ukrainians living in Ukraine and the traditionally Cossack territories of the North Caucasus (now the Krasnodar, Stavropol, and Rostov on the Don regions of the Russian Federation) — starved to death because the government of the Soviet Union seized with unprecedented force and thoroughness the 1932 crop and foodstuffs from the agricultural population (Mace, 1984; Conquest, 1986). After over half a century of denial, in January 1990 the Communist Party of Ukraine adopted a special resolution admitting that the Ukrainian Famine had indeed occurred, cost millions of lives, had been artificially brought about by official actions, and that Stalin and his associates bore criminal responsibility for those actions (Holod, 1990, pp. 3–4).

The Ukrainian Famine corresponded in time with a reversal of official policies that had hitherto permitted significant self-expression of the USSR's non-Russian nations. During and after the Famine, non-Russian national self-assertion was labeled bourgeois nationalism and suppressed. The elites who had been associated with these policies were eliminated (Mace, 1983, pp. 264–301). The authorities of the period denied that a famine was taking place at the time, sought to discredit reports on the factual situation, insofar as possible prevented the starving from traveling to areas where food was available, and refused all offers of aid to the starving (Conquest, 1986; U.S. Commission on the Ukraine Famine, 1988 vi–xvv). They were assisted in this policy of denial by certain Western

journalists, most notably Walter Duranty of The New York Times (Taylor, 1990, pp. 210…23).

In order to understand the Ukrainian Famine, a brief excursion into the period that preceded it is necessary. Despite their numerical strength as the second-largest of the Slavic-speaking nations, Ukrainians may be classed with what Czech scholar Miroslav Hroch (1985) designated the "small nations" of Europe. Such nations "were in subjection for such a long period that the relation of subjection took on a structural character;" that is, the majority of the ruling class belonged to the ruling nation, while the subjugated nation possessed an incomplete social structure partially or entirely lacking its own ruling class (Hroch, 1985, p. 9). The Ukrainians were basically a nation of peasants, their national movement being led by a numerically small intelligentsia. As in other areas occupied by subject nations in Imperial Russia and early Soviet history, the local nobility, bourgeoisie, and urban population in Ukraine were overwhelmingly Russian or Russian-speaking (Liber, 1990, pp. 12…15).

In the 19th century, Ukrainians underwent a national revival similar to that of Czechs and other "small nations"; that is, romantic scholarly excursions into the local language and history, along with the creation of a vernacular literature, brought a spreading sense of local patriotism and national identity that in turn gave way to political aspirations and, ultimately, territorial home rule. Yet, when in 1925 Stalin wrote, "The national question is, according to its essence, a question of the peasantry" (Stalin, 1946…1951, Volume 7, p. 72), this held true for almost all the non-Russian peoples of the Soviet Union and certainly for Ukrainians.

The social development of Ukrainians in the Russian Empire had been retarded by extraordinarily repressive policies. In 1863, the Imperial Russian government responded to what it perceived as a nascent threat of "Ukrainian separatism" by banning education and publications (except for folk songs and historical documents) in the Ukrainian language, declaring it to be a substandard variant of Russian. This ban was broadened in 1876 to eliminate the modest exemptions in the earlier measure and remained in effect until 1905 (Savchenko, 1930). After 1905, a Ukrainian language press enjoyed a brief flowering in central Ukraine, but creeping reimposition of the old prohibitions all but eliminated it within a few years. Because repressive tsarist policies had stunted the growth of social differentiation within Ukrainian society, Ukrainian activists could expect to gain mass support only among the peasantry. Consequently, when Ukrainian political parties evolved in Imperial Russia at the turn of the century, they assumed a revolutionary socialist character, and the form in which Ukrainian political aspirations gained majority support during the Russian Revolution of 1917 was through the agrarian

socialism of the Ukrainian Party of Socialist Revolutionaries (Hermaize, 1926; Khrystiuk, 1921…22, volume 1, p. 35).

After the collapse of the Russian imperial authority in 1917, the national movements that attempted to establish local governments throughout the former empire•s non-Russian periphery, including the Ukrainian movement, drew most of their mass support from the village, while in the cities various groups competed more or less as they did in Russia proper.

The group that seized power in the center, Lenin•s Bolsheviks, mistrusted the peasants as petty property owners and relied on forced requisitions of agricultural produce in order to keep the urban population fed. Thus, the national struggle between Russians (•RedŽ or •WhiteŽ) and the subject peoples was at the same time a social struggle of the countryside versus the town, where even the working class was drawn from the oppressor nation or had assimilated its culture. As Ukrainian Communist spokesmen recognized as early as 1920, the Russian-speaking worker, who provided the main source of support for Soviet rule in Ukraine, sneered at the Ukrainian village and wanted nothing to do with it (Mace, 1983, pp. 68…69). During the wars that followed the Russian Revolution of 1917, a Soviet regime had been imposed on Ukraine by Russia against the will of most of Ukraine•s inhabitants, an absolute majority of whom had voted in free elections for groups that supported Ukrainian self-rule (Borys, 1980, p. 170, table).

In order to overcome rural resistance to the Soviet order, in 1921 Lenin proclaimed the New Economic Policy (NEP), which ended forced procurements and allowed a private market in which agricultural producers could sell what they had produced. In 1923, in order to overcome the continued national resistance of the non-Russian countryside, Lenin proclaimed a policy of indigenization (korenizatsiia), which attempted to give non-Russian Soviet regimes a veneer of national legitimacy by promoting the spread of the local language and culture in the cities, recruiting local people into the regime, ordering Russian officials to learn the local language, and fostering a broad range of cultural activities (Mace, 1983, pp. 87…95; Liber, 1990, pp. 33…46).

The Ukrainian Famine of 1932…1933 occurred within the context of the so-called •Stalinist Revolution from AboveŽ, a violent experiment in social transformation in which state-orchestrated paranoia about internal and external enemies was used to blame shortcomings on the machinations of class enemies. Like Nazism, Stalinism attempted to explain the world as a struggle between different categories of people, some of whom were considered inherently deleterious and whose elimination was an essential prerequisite toward the attainment of a new and better state of affairs. As a degenerated offshoot of Marxism, Stalinism attempted to explain the

world by using class categories, rather than the racial ones employed by the Nazis. But what Hitler and Stalin had in common was a dualistic view of human society as composed of two implacably hostile forces the "good" force destined for victory (Aryans for Hitler and the proletariat for Stalin), which could only liberate itself and achieve its destiny by destroying utterly the forces of evil (for Hitler, Jews and Gypsies, which he considered racially polluting elements, and for Stalin, representatives of "exploiter classes").

A major difference between Stalinism and racism (like Nazism) is that racism at least knows how to define what it hates: people who look or speak differently or have different ancestors. Class warfare, however, is a sociological concept. Sociological categories are much easier to manipulate than racial ones, especially when applied in and by a state that claims, as did Stalin's, a monopoly on truth and science thanks to its "correct" understanding and application of a theory based on claims of holistic scientism; that is, claims that it explains everything with the certainty of (pseudo) scientific laws. By redefining and manipulating such notions as class enemies and enemies of the people, and objectively serving the interests of such dark forces, Stalin was able to declare practically any group or individual worthy of destruction. This enabled Stalin to reduce Marxism, one of the great (if flawed) intellectual systems of the 19th century, to the level of a sanctioning ideology for perhaps the paradigmatic example of what Leo Kuper (1990) has called the genocidal state.

Marxism views history as class struggle. It holds that modern capitalism is defined by the struggle between proletarians and capitalists, the former being destined to triumph over the latter and thereby create a new socialist stage of human history in which the economic exploitation of one person by another will be abolished. Independent small-holding peasants are viewed as peripheral in this struggle, a petty capitalist holdover of an earlier era. Leninists saw an inevitable process of class differentiation among peasants into three strata: the relatively wealthier kulaks (Ukrainian kurkuls) or village exploiters, the middle peasants or subsistence farmers who did not hire labor or depend on outside employment to get by, and the poor peasants, who could only make ends meet by working for others and thus were at least partially a rural proletarian. The middle and poor peasants were often lumped together as the toiling peasantry in order to mark them off from the kulaks. However, such a division of the peasantry into such categories was arbitrary, and just who was a kulak was never defined with any precision (Lewin, 1985, pp. 121…41).

As for the national question, most varieties of Marxism reject nationalism as a species of false consciousness that reflects the interests of an exploitative bourgeois class by convincing the exploited that they owe

loyalty to their capitalist-ruled nation rather than to the international working class. Orthodox Marxists believe that only internationalism can serve the interests of the working class. There have been many conflicting policy prescriptions advocated by Marxists designed to overcome nationalistic prejudices and achieve the internationalist unity of the toiling classes.

Just as nationalism can have a variety of meanings, so can internationalism. In the pre-Stalinist period, the Soviet authorities found what they considered the "correct" internationalist approach to building socialism by attempting to combat the imperial pretensions of Russians (the dominant group) and by assisting the formerly subject peoples of the Russian Empire to overcome the legacy of colonial domination by rebuilding their various national cultures and societies „ under the Party's guidance, of course. This ideological prescription actually reflected political necessity: Before the adoption of such a policy, non-Russian peasant dissatisfaction had threatened political stability in wide areas of the new Soviet Union. But there were certainly other Marxist views of internationalism. For example, Rosa Luxemburg advocated a view often criticized as "national nihilism" when she argued that national self-determination was a chimera: It was utopian so long as capitalist exploitation survived and would be rendered irrelevant once socialism had brought about the final end of all forms of exploitation (Luxemburg, 1986 pp. 308…14).

Once an ideology comes to power, theory becomes the stuff of practical politics, influencing and being influenced by considerations of power. Ukrainization, the Ukrainian version of indigenization, went further than elsewhere in the Soviet Union because roughly 30 million Ukrainians were several times more numerous than any other single national group. On the eve of the Famine they constituted about two-fifths of all non-Russian inhabitants of the USSR. The policies of indigenization, designed to placate the national aspirations of the non-Russian overwhelmingly peasant nations, went hand-in-hand with the limited free market policies of the New Economic Policy, which were designed to satisfy the economic aspirations of both Russian and non-Russian peasants.

With indigenization having legitimized national priorities among non-Russian Communists and the high politics in Moscow centering on a protracted struggle for power, throughout the 1920s national Communists in the constituent republics of the USSR accumulated a large measure of autonomy from central dictates. When, at the end of the decade, Joseph Stalin emerged victorious in the succession struggle, he abruptly changed course by announcing the crash collectivization of agriculture on the basis of the liquidation (that is, destruction) of the kulaks as a class.

Collectivization meant forcing millions of small farmers into large collective farms, which many peasants saw „ not without reason „ as a

reinstitution of serfdom, the only difference being that the state was now taking the place of the nobleman who owned the peasants' grandparents. Forcing the majority of the population to restructure their lives in a way they did not wish to meant provoking a degree of hostility, which rendered concessions that had been designed to placate the non-Russian peasants on national grounds politically irrelevant.

The changed political situation enabled Stalin to pursue four objectives toward the non-Russians. Donald Treadgold (1964) rightly has summarized them as follows: (1) the elimination of centrifugal pressures by stifling local nationalism; (2) subversion of neighboring states by having members of a given Soviet nationality conduct propaganda among their co-nationals in neighboring areas; (3) economic and social transformation designed to destroy native society and substitute a social system susceptible of control by Moscow; and (4) the economic exploitation of non-Russian areas (pp. 297–98).

Transforming society by force far exceeded the capacity of any traditional authoritarian state. It required the mobilization and motivation of mass constituencies who could be called upon to do the regime's will. Starting with a phony war scare in 1927 and followed by show trials designed to point out various social groups (managers and engineers held over from the old regime, academicians, people who had been associated with national or religious movements, etc.) as nests of plotters in the pay of world capitalism, a massive propaganda campaign was carried out designed to convince people that the Soviet Union was under siege by the hostile capitalist world that encircled it. Soviet society had to catch up with the capitalist West or be crushed. The crash collectivization of agriculture was portrayed as essential in order to do this.

In order to expropriate kulaks, enforce collectivization, and take possession of agricultural produce, the authorities mobilized anyone they could. As a self-proclaimed workers' state, it was logical that the regime would turn first to the workers and trade unions for personnel to impose its will. The entire network of officially sanctioned social organizations was mobilized. The resistance they faced was interpreted in class terms as kulak terrorism, for who but a kulak or his agent could oppose the socialist transformation of the countryside? Ultimately, any problem was blamed on "kulaks" or their "agents," and repressive policies were justified by the need to combat an enemy presence that was ever more broadly defined. The village itself became an object of official mistrust as tens of thousands of factory workers were issued revolvers and sent into villages with the power to completely reorganize life as well as to circumvent or abolish village-level governmental bodies. Workers were sent from factories, and sometimes a factory would be named "patron" of a given number of

villages; that is, the factory would be assigned villages in which to enforce collectivization and seize food.

Local "activists," that is, individuals whose positions gave them an active role in officially sanctioned social and political life, would also be given these responsibilities. Special peasant "tow" (buksyr) brigades were organized and given the task of "taking the kulaks in tow," which meant ejecting those selected by the local authorities from their houses to searching for and expropriating concealed foodstuffs. The members of these brigades did not always volunteer; sometimes county or district authorities would simply call up the able-bodied men in one village to act as a tow brigade in a neighboring village. A schoolteacher, for example, had no choice but to take part in the work of the local activists. At the height of the Famine, when most peasants were physically incapable of work, lines in front of city stores were raided from time to time, and the unfortunates rounded up were sent to weed sugar beets (U.S. Commission on the Ukraine Famine, 1988, pp. 448…49).

The essence of the collective farm system was official control over agricultural production and distribution. The state "procurement" of agricultural produce was carried out by force such that procurements (purchases) really became forced requisitions. Since, however, the collective farm was, in theory, a private cooperative, not a state enterprise, the authorities assumed no responsibility for the welfare of the collective farmers. Whatever the state required came from the "first proceeds" of the harvest; that is, the state took its quota first. If there was anything left, it went first to what was needed to run the farm, such as seed reserves, and what was left over was then shared among the collective farmers according to the labor days (trudodni) they had earned (Jasny, 1949, pp. 64…85).

These "labor days" were not actual days worked. Rather, they were allocated according to a complex formula designed to calculate the different values of different kinds of labor by converting all types of labor on the farm into the Marxist concept of simple labor time. Skilled workers, like a tractor driver, might earn two labor days for each day worked, while a simple farmer without any particular skill might have to work two days in order to earn one labor day. This, however, was of no consequence if there was nothing left: In that case, of course, the labor days of the collective farmers were worthless.

At the time of the Famine, roughly 20 percent of the Ukrainian peasantry was still outside the collective farms. They had their own household quotas, which were imposed by local authorities. If they could not meet a given quota, they were fined, and their farms searched with the aid of metal prods.

Collectivization led to a crisis in agricultural production that the regime met sometimes with force and sometimes with promises to

overcome •errorsŽ or •excessesŽ or •deviationsŽ from the Party•s •Leninist general lineŽ Such shortcomings were always blamed on subordinate officials, never on the policies of the Communist Party and Soviet state, which were held to be infallible. The first agricultural procurement campaign after crash collectivization, that of 1930, was met, thanks to a fortunate harvest. The following year, the quota was not met in spite of considerable force that succeeded only in creating pockets of starvation. In the first half of 1932, the regime announced that there had been a crop failure in parts of the Volga Basin and Asiatic Russia and sent aid there from other regions. In May, agricultural quotas for the coming crop were lowered to about the level of what had been obtained from the 1931 crop. Various officials were denounced for having used excessive force in seizing agricultural produce and promises were made that such •distortionsŽ of the official policy would not be tolerated in the future. Some local officials who had been particularly harsh toward peasants in their charge were publicly tried and punished. For a few weeks, even Ukraine received limited food aid.

Then, in the summer of 1932, with Ukraine on the verge of mass starvation, Stalin abruptly changed course. At a Ukrainian Communist Party conference in July, amid reports that the situation in the Ukrainian countryside was growing desperate, Stalin•s top assistants „ Prime Minister Viacheslav Molotov and Agriculture Minister Lazar Kaganovich „ announced that Ukraine•s quotas for bread grain deliveries would stand at the level announced the previous May. But once the harvest was in, there simply wasn•t enough grain to meet the quota. The Ukrainian authorities appealed to Moscow for an end to the grain seizures, but to no avail. Throughout the fall of 1932, Stalin sent various high officials to Ukraine to supervise the local Communists. In November, bread that had been •advancedŽ to the collective farmers at harvest time was declared to have been illegally distributed and was therefore seized. In order to make up for shortfalls elsewhere, those farms that met their quotas were subjected to supplementary quotas of foodstuffs that had to be delivered to the state. Local officials were ordered to determine how much bread there was in every collective farm and to put it toward the quota.

On December 14, Stalin•s intimate involvement in the Ukrainian Famine became clear when he called the top leaders of Ukraine, the North Caucasus, and the Western (Smolensk) District to Moscow. The meeting produced a secret decree signed by Stalin as head of the Party and Molotov as head of government. While the leader of the Western District was let off with a simple admonition to meet its quotas, the Ukrainian and North Caucasus representatives were blasted for having failed to root out Ukrainian nationalism:

> As a result of the extremely weak efforts and lack of revolutionary vigilance of a number of local Party organizations in Ukraine and the North Caucasus, in a substantial portion of these organizations counterrevolutionary elements „ kulaks, former officers, Petliurists, adherents of the Kuban Rada, and so forth „ have been able to worm their way into the collective farms as chairmen or as influential members of their administration, bookkeepers, store managers, threshing brigade leaders, and so forth, were able to worm their way into village councils, agricultural offices, cooperatives, and attempted to direct the work of these organizations against the interests of the proletarian state and the Party•s policy, attempted to organize a counterrevolutionary movement, to sabotage the grain procurements, and to sabotage the sowing, the All-Union Communist Party Central Committee and Council of Peoples Commissars of the USSR direct the Communist Party and government leadership of Ukraine and the North Caucasus to resolutely root out the counterrevolutionary elements by means of their arrest, long sentences of confinement in concentration camps, and not excluding application of the highest measure of legality (that is, execution) in the most criminal cases (Postanova, 1991, p. 78).

The decree went on to name officials on the local level who had failed to make their quotas, mentioning the officials by name and detailing which of them were to be given prison sentences and which of them were to be shot. In addition, Ukrainian officials were condemned for their •mechanistic Ž (that is, overzealous) implementation of Ukrainization, while Ukrainization was ordered halted in the North Caucasus (Postanova, 1991).

A week later, Stalin•s representatives in Ukraine ordered the seizure of even the seed that had been put aside for spring planting. In January 1933, Stalin took direct control of the Ukrainian Communist Party apparatus. His appointees, accompanied by tens of thousands of subordinates, initiated a campaign that led to the destruction of nationally self-assertive Ukrainian elites, the end of the Ukrainization policy and virtually all Ukrainian cultural self-expression, and the gradual return to the exclusive use of the Russian language in Ukraine•s cities and educational institutions (U.S. Commission on the Ukraine Famine, 1988, xi…xiv; Holod, 1990, pp. 148…235).

The food seized, people began to starve. Millions died either from starvation „ an agonizingly slow process in which the body literally consumes itself until the muscles of the chest can no longer lift the rib cage to inflate the lungs and the victim suffocates „ or, more commonly, from

diseases that in such a weakened condition the body can no longer fend off. But to report deaths from starvation or from diseases like typhus, which are associated with famine, was considered anti-Soviet. Physicians used euphemisms like vitamin or protein deficiency (which does usually accompany caloric deficiency), heart failure (because the heart stops), diarrhea (from eating plants the body cannot digest), or •exhaustion of the organism.Ž (Gannt, 1937, pp. 147…162).

Estimates of the number of victims in Ukraine range from 3 to 8 million. According to the long-suppressed 1937 census, released only in 1991, in 1937 Ukraine had a million fewer inhabitants than in 1926, 3 million fewer than official estimates of the early 1930s, which were probably not far off the mark (Vsesoiuznaia, 1991, p. 28, table). Using these and other long-suppressed figures, demographers in the former Soviet Union have calculated that, while the population of the USSR increased from 148.7 million in 1927 to 162.5 million in 1937, during the year 1933 the population decreased by 5.9 million. Their figures further suggest that the number of victims of famine in 1933 was between 7.2 and 8.1 million (summarized in Ellman, 1991, pp. 375…79). Given that all but 1 or 2 million of these victims perished in Ukraine, the number of victims of the Ukrainian Famine would be in the range of 5 to 7 million.

As living conditions worsened, the authorities expanded the system of hard currency stores, the torgsin. The name was an abbreviation for the Russian phrase, torgovlia sinostrantsami (trade with foreigners), because only foreigners had the right to possess precious metals and convertible currency. In exchange for food, these stores helped extract the last valuables remaining in the countryside. Often a small piece of jewelry, a gold tooth, or a concealed silver or gold coin meant the difference between life and death.

The famine had a major long-range impact on Ukrainians. The adoption in 1932…1933 of an internal passport system from which peasants were excluded meant that the agricultural population could not leave the countryside without official permission. This meant attaching the peasantry to the land in a way not entirely different from traditional serfdom. The psychological traumatization inevitable in any situation of mass mortality was undoubtedly compounded by a policy of official denial extending to the most remote village. At the height of the Famine, Stalin adopted the slogan •Life has become better; life has become more fun,Ž and even the starving had to repeat it. To speak openly of everyday reality meant running the risk of punishment for propagating anti-Soviet propaganda.

Children were encouraged to inform on their parents, and Pavlik Morozov, a boy who had informed on his parents and was killed by villagers after the parents• subsequent arrest, was held up as a model for

Soviet young people. As a result, parents became afraid to talk openly in front of their own children. While Stalin•s rapid industrialization brought millions of Ukrainian peasants to Ukraine•s cities, mines, and factories, the abandonment of policies promoting the use of the Ukrainian language there often meant the rapid linguistic and cultural Russification of these new workers and city-dwellers.

As a result of the Famine and accompanying destruction of national elites, the Ukrainian nation was literally crushed. Their leadership (including the natural village leadership, the more prosperous and industrious peasants) was destroyed. Their language and culture, which had made significant inroads in the cities in the 1920s, was largely pushed back to the countryside whence it came. And in the countryside, about one out of every five people had perished. As a result, the development of Ukrainians as a nation was violently and traumatically set back.

The Ukrainians might never have recovered as a nation had it not been for Stalin•s 1939 pact with Hitler, by which the Soviet Union annexed Western Ukraine as its share of the dismembered Polish Republic. Western Ukraine contained areas that had never been under Russian rule and were consequently the most developed and nationally conscious regions of Ukraine. The joining of Western Ukraine to the devastated central and eastern Ukrainian territories largely undermined Stalin•s deconstruction of the Ukrainian nation in the 1930s, paving the way for Ukrainian independence in the 1990s.

Drawing lessons from history is always a risky business, but surely one of the principle lessons of the Ukrainian Famine has to do with the dangers of pseudo-scientific totalitarian ideologies. Such ideologies, which often claim scientific validity, explain problems within a given society by blaming them on the presence of permanent enemies that by virtue of their very existence prevent the bulk of society from achieving its destiny, living the good life, or otherwise solving its problems. Such enemies may be racial, national, political, or social, but however defined, such ideologies may easily be used as warrants for mass murder and genocide. The monopolies or near-monopolies of propaganda, reward, and coercion that totalitarian societies possess in turn make it possible for totalitarian regimes to attract sufficient mass participation to carry out such designs.

Moreover, as George Orwell demonstated nearly half a century ago in 1984, the totalitarian monopoly of official expression allowed the Stalin regime to define and redefine concepts in order to radically change their meaning. Thus, in the Ukrainian case, class categories were manipulated in order to redefine national issues as class ones. Thus, the Ukrainian Famine further shows that the Fascist Right has no monopoly on genocide. Even ideologies espousing internationalism and social justice

can be manipulated so as to target ethnic groups by redefining their terms to mean whatever might seem expedient at a given moment.

The refusal of even the moderate Left to perceive the full horror of Stalinism also carries lessons about the selective perception of evil. While it is understandable that one is more charitable to actions taken by regimes that profess adherence to "one's own" side of the political spectrum, civilized adherents of both the Left and the Right should realize that the most important issue of political life is not between continuity and change but between those who uphold such universal human values as the right of living people to remain among the living and those who do not recognize such a right for members of a given out-group. For those who profess humane values, the willingness to countenance the death of millions for their goals ceases to have anything in common with political progress it is simply mass murder on an unspeakable scale.

Eyewitness Accounts: Soviet Man-Made Famine in Ukraine

Account 1

S. Lozovy, "What Happened in Hadyach County," pp. 246–55. In S. Pidhainy, et al. (Eds.) The Black Deeds of the Kremlin: A White Book. Toronto and Detroit, 1953–1955. The Black Deeds is the classic collection of eyewitness accounts of the Famine, compiled by the Democratic Association of Ukrainians Who had Been Repressed By the Soviets (DOBRUS), which was associated with the Ukrainian Revolutionary Democratic Party, a socialist group formed after World War II by Ukrainians who had emigrated from Central and Eastern Ukraine.

Having received from comrade Kolotov, boss of the county seat, instructions to establish a commune, the chairman of the village soviet, Tereshko Myshchachenko, took great pains to carry them out. He gave them wide publicity and, as a further incentive, put his name first on the list of commune farmers. Another reason was comrade Gapon from the city of Orel who certainly would have been made chairman if Tereshko had failed in his "duties."

This was in 1930. The village of Kharkivtsi then numbered 780 individual farmers. Out of this number, only four followed his lead and joined the commune. It was easy for them to do so because they had never had places of their own, or else had sold their houses shortly before the instructions were received.

But this venture was still born. Even these four, having tasted commune life for one season, turned against it and began to think of leaving it.

The authorities, aware of the fact that people were reluctant to join a commune, changed their tune and began to encourage the idea of a

collective farm. With this object in view, there appeared Demen Karasyuk from the city of Tambov. He spoke a Russian-Ukrainian jargon, while his family spoke only Russian. Karasyuk appropriated the house of Seredniak [middle peasant] Brychko and sent him to Siberia, where the poor fellow was worked to death six months later. Thus began collectivization and the liquidation of kurkuls [kulaks] as a class.

Rallies were held in the center of the village each day, at which Communists from the county seat agitated for collectives. But people did not want to join them and said so, arguing that the government had divided the land against them. And every day GPU agents arrested two or three men.

The village soviet, seeing that people did not want to attend these rallies, hired a boy of 12 to go around with a list and ask people to sign promises that they would attend the gathering. The measure was not successful because men would hide, and their wives would sign their own names arguing that the law gave both sexes equal rights. They also caused a lot of confusion at the rallies by making a terrible noise. The GPU stopped this by sentencing Maria Treba to one year in jail.

The Communists changed their tactics. The farmers were called out individually. Under threat of reprisals they were asked to sign papers agreeing to have their property nationalized.

The farmers began to sell their livestock and horses. Their unwillingness to join the collective was stimulated by the fact that people from the neighboring counties of Komyshany and Myrhorod, from villages already collectivized a year ago, came to the village begging for bread. This was an indication as to what they could expect from a collective farm and "Communist Socialism."

The taxes had to be paid in kind and those who paid them received additional demands, sometimes even greater than the first time, to pay with their products, especially grain.

Seeing no end to this the people began to hide their grain and potatoes if they had any left. A new arrival from the Hadyach Center, comrade Shukhman, who was commissioned to collect grain in three or four counties, gave orders to form buksyr [tow] brigades who had authority to manhandle every farmer until he gave up his grain to the state. These brigades were supplied with special tools made in advance in some factory to facilitate the "grain hunt." These were steel rods about 5/8 inch in diameter, three to ten feet long, with one end sharpened to a point and the other equipped with an oval-shaped handle. Some had a kind of drill on the end instead of a point. The buksyrs would attack piles of straw, first of all sticking their rods into it to see if sacks of grain were hidden in it. The other tool was used to drill in the gardens and other likely places. The grain when found was, of course, confiscated and the owner was forbidden

to remain in Ukraine and was sent to Russia [Solovky, Siberia, etc.]. The collective farmers did not hide the grain they received for their labor days [trudodni] because there was very little of it.

In October 1932, comrades Shukhman and Kolotov organized a "Red Column." Commandeering about 60 farm wagons, they filled them with toughs and sent them to the villages. Coming to a village, the toughs would scatter, go to the houses of the collective farmers and ask how much grain each had, pretending this was only for registration purposes. When the information was in hand, teams would come up to each house and the grain would be taken away. When all the farmers had been robbed of their grain, the wagons would be decorated with banners and slogans which proclaimed that the farmers had voluntarily, and in an organized manner, given their grain to the state.

This Red Column passed through villages to be observed, but it was always under GPU protection. When guards were absent, the columns would run into the woods or be robbed by former prisoners who escaped. Such columns took their toll from all the neighboring villages.

It should be observed here that the Communists robbed people not only of grain but also of potatoes and any other thing that could be eaten. In some cases farmers were ordered to thresh the straw when the records showed a yield to have been poor. Combatting the Communist menace, farmers would leave some grain in the straw by breaking the teeth in the cylinder of the threshing machine. Sometimes they succeeded in concealing up to 30 percent of grain which remained unthreshed in the straw. They hoped to thresh out this grain later, and thus save themselves and their families. But cases where farmers, in desperation, burned the straw together with their sheds were common.

Searches and arrests led people to despair. The indignation reached its culminating point on November 21, 1932, when great unrest in the village made the village soviet and all the buksyrs flee to the county seat for protection. The collective flew to pieces in half an hour. It was exclusively the work of women. They took their horses and cattle home, and the next day went to the approximate location of their former fields because all the field boundaries were destroyed.

The Communists were prompt in checking the incipient rebellion. They arrived in force in GPU cars the next night, arrested five persons and ordered that all collective farm property be returned. This order was carried out.

A stranger was now the chairman of the village soviet. Nobody knew where he came from, though he had a Ukrainian name, Boyko. He began to continue the work of his worthy predecessor, paying special attention to the Ukrainian movement for independence. "This is the work of our

arch-enemy, Petlyura,Ž he said. Then he tried to find out who had served in Petlyura•s army.

Alarmed by the prospect of inevitable doom which was approaching, the people carried off one night all the grain from the collective farm stores, covering their tracks with pepper to protect themselves from detection by GPU hunting dogs.Some went to the forest to gather acorns, but this practice was soon stopped by Boyko, who declared the woods to be state property. It wasforbidden to go there.

It wasimpossible to grind grain in the mill becausethe government grain quotaswere notfulfilled. The farmers constructed hand mills and stampers. Boyko issued an order for the immediate arrest of the manwho had built these machines, O.Khrynenko, but he waswarned in time and ran away to the Donbas [industrial region of the DonetsRiver Basin]. His wife was thrown out of the house, and it waslocked by the GPU. Then she was tortured to reveal the whereabouts of her husband and where he had hidden some gold coins. She gavethem 230 roublesin gold but did not know where her husband was and died in their hands.

The former chairman of the village soviet, Myshchachenko, sold his house tobuy liquor. Then he took a housefrom Petro Yarosh and, with the assistance of Boyko, managed to have the Yarosh family exiled to the region of Sverdlovsk where all eight family members died from hard labor and ill treatment. Another casewas that of F. Shobar, who did the same thing with the brothers Mykola and Stepan Nedvyha. One of them escaped and the other perished in Siberia, together with his family of ten.

A week or solater, the GPU arrested the following families Borobavko „ 5 persons, V.Brychko „ 7 persons, Ostapchenko „ 5 persons, Nykyfor and Zakhar Koronivsky „ 3 persons, O.Perepadya „ 4 persons, K. Riznyk „ 7 persons,Shyka „ 4 persons, Taras Besey „ 6 persons, Vasyukno „ 4 persons, and others. All of them received life terms with hard labor and were sent 280 miles north of Sverdlovsk. In 1942, 5 ofthem returned and said that all the others had died from hard labor and scurvy. They were lucky to getforged papers and escaped to Donbas,where they worked in the mines. [During their terms] they had not stayed long in any one place,because as soon asthey cleared a patch in the forest and built barracks and other buildings, they were sent to another placein the wilderness 18 to 24 miles away where the samething was repeated. The direction was always further north. Their addresswas Sverdlovsk 5, Letter G.

•There are nokurkuls now and presumably no Petlyura partisans, and we canbuild up our collective farm in peace,Ž said Boyko. •But you should keep in mind that there are many sub-kurkuls whom we have towatch and, if they are going to harm our Soviet government, we will send them after the others.Ž He again held meetings urging people to join the collective

farm. The government took away grain and meat for taxes. There were no cows or sheep in the village.

In the evening of November 2, an unknown group of farmers attacked a buksyr brigade. Makar Verba was killed, and three men ran away. The next day the GPU confiscated all the shotguns in the village. The attackers were not caught. Boyko then threatened that the Soviet Red Army would come and wipe out all the farmers.

The people were terrified. It was hard to find a farmer who had not served a jail term. Practically all joined the collective farm now; only 12 swore that they would not do it and did not until 1941. But these were all women and children whose husbands were in exile in Siberia.

After the fall of 1932, it became customary to go around and beg for bread or food from neighbors. These beggars were usually children and old people.

A new buksyr brigade appeared in the village, more cruel than the first one.

In the spring of 1933 one-third of the people in the village were starving. The others had a little food and ate once a day to keep from swelling. To save themselves and their families from starvation, men began to offer their properties for sale or in exchange for food. Some went to Kharkiv, Kiev, or Poltava [major cities of Ukraine] to buy a little food and came back disappointed. Those cities were no better than Hadyach. Then they went to Moscow, Stalingrad, Voronezh, and Orel [cities in Russia] where food could be obtained. But the GPU soon found this out and the people were searched on the trains, food confiscated, and they themselves were charged with speculation. Then an order was issued that no farmer would be allowed to travel by train without a permit from the county soviet executive.

In March 1933 all the people from the collective farm went to the authorities, asking for bread. They were not even allowed to enter the courtyard.

On March 28, 1933, we were shocked by the news that Myron Yemets and his wife, Maria, had become cannibals. Having cut off their children•s heads, they salted them away for meat. The neighbors smelled meat frying in the smoke coming from their chimney and, noticing the absence of children, went into the house. When they asked about the children, the parents began to weep and told the whole story. The perpetrators of this act said that they would have children again. Otherwise, they would die in great pain and that would be the end of the family.

Chairman Boyko arrested them himself, and about six hours later the GPU began to question them.•Who has so cunningly persuaded you to do this, kurkuls, near-kurkuls, or Petlyura henchmen? You know that this is the work of our enemies to cast dishonor upon our country, the Soviet

Union, the most advanced country in the world. You have to tell us who did it!Ž Hoping to save themselves in this way, the accused pointed to Pavlo Lytvynenko, who was supposed to have said: •If you have nothing to eat, butcher the children and eat them!Ž Lytvynenko was arrested and shot as an example to the others. Myron and Maria were sentenced to ten years in prison. However, they were shot about three months later because even the Soviet government was ashamed to let them live.

At the end of March or the beginning of April, a big department store was opened in Hadyach on Poltavska Street, by the park, across the street from Lenin•s monument. It was called Torgsin. Stocked very well, even with goods from abroad, it had one fault, that of selling [goods] only for platinum, gold, silver, or precious stones. The prices were: For 10 gold rubles one could buy there 17 pounds of bread, 22 pounds of buckwheat cereal, 6 2/3 pounds of millet, and 10 herrings.

As soon as people learned about this, all who had any gold or silver flocked to the city. There was a line eight abreast and 1/3 mile long in front of the store. There were always 50…70 people who could not get in before the store closed for the day. They spent their nights on the sidewalk disregarding cold, storm, or rain. Thefts were very common, but most died from hunger or stomach cramps after eating too much and too greedily the food they bought. The corpses were removed every morning by a GPU truck.

I also stood in line with my mother. There I saw with my own eyes ten dead bodies thrown on the truck like so many logs and, in addition, three men that were still alive. The dead were hauled to Hlyboky Yar [Deep Ravine] and dumped there.

None of the clerks in this store were Ukrainians and the store belonged to the state.

A month later, in April, this store was broken into and robbed. Half an hour before the opening an alarm was sounded that the store had been robbed at daybreak. The militia with dogs began to search the people waiting in line. All who were a little stronger, had little or no swelling and, perhaps, some gold, were arrested and taken to the building of the county executive committee which was quite close and had a large basement. The prisoners were searched and the gold coins or any other valuables they might have had were confiscated. Other GPU agents without dogs did the same.

One woman, Maria Bovt, had a gold •shipŽ which had been awarded her husband during the Russo…Japanese War for his bravery in saving a Russian ship. She was also arrested during this investigation and was sent to work at construction projects in Komsomolsk on the Amur River near the Pacific Ocean. All trace of her vanished. The ship must have been taken to swell the Russian treasury or went into the pocket of some GPU agent.

Two weeks later, it was discovered that the real culprits had been the clerks in collusion with the militia. They were not punished because they had false documents prepared in advance, and they escaped arrest. This explanation was given out by comrades Shukhman and Kolotov.

The department store had its good and bad sides. The Russians robbed the people of practically all the gold they had. On the other hand, it saved many people•s lives because 6 to 10 pounds of grain often saved one from starving to death. Those who had no gold for food died like flies or went to the cemeteries in search of corpses.

The most critical point was reached just before harvest. More and more people starved to death each day. Everything was eaten that could be swallowed: dogs, cats, frogs, mice, birds, grass, but mostly thistles, which were delicious if the plants were about 15 inches high and cleaned of spines. Many people went to graze and often died in the •grazing fields.Ž

When rye ears began to fill out and were at least half full, the danger of death from starvation receded. The people cut ears of grain in the fields, dried them and, rubbing them down, they ate the precious green grains.

The Communists now began to combat •the grain barber menace,Ž that is, people who cut off ears of grain with scissors. Mounted guards on watchtowers protected the grain from the •barbers.Ž One of these watchmen, Fanasy Hursky, killed a fellow who dared to •steal government property.Ž But sometimes the •barbers.Ž struck back. Some of them sawed through the props under the tower of Ivan Palchenkov when he was asleep. When the wind blew, the tower toppled down, and Ivan was killed.

In the spring of 1933, 138 people died in the village of Kharkivtsi. In comparison with some places this was very good. A great many people died from diseases caused by hunger, especially dysentery. There was only one child born at that time in the whole administrative unit to which Kharkivtsi belonged.

The 1940…1941 school year saw no beginners at all, while previously there had been about 25 each year. The new school principal, a Communist, saw the implication, and to save face made a first grade out of children a year younger if they were a little better developed than others. The same thing happened in neighboring villages.

The orphans who survived the Famine were taken to a children•s home in the village. They were well cared for and most of them grew up properly and reached maturity in the years 1939…1941. The boys raised in these homes when inducted into the army in 1941 were the first to desert with arms and go back to avenge themselves on the Communists in their home villages, who deserved punishment.

Account 2

Case History SW34 (U.S. Commission on the Ukraine Famine, 1988 pp. 385…93). The interview was conducted as an oral life history in 1987 by Sue Ellen Webber and translated by Darian Diachok under the auspices of the U.S. Commission on the Ukraine Famine.

Q: Please state your year of birth.
A: 1922.

Q: Where were you born?
A: In Stavyshche, in Kiev Province.

Q: In which district?
A: The Stavyshche District.

Q: Where did you live during the 1920s and the 1930s?
A: In Stavyshche.

Q: What was your parents• profession?
A: My father worked in a bank, and my mother worked as a seamstress in a store.

Q: I see. So they weren•t peasants, is that correct?
A: No, they weren•t.

Q: And you had said you were born in *f*
A: 1922.

Q: Do you remember anything from the NEP period?
A: Well, I might have been, oh, about seven or eight years old at the time. People lived well then. But this was only for a few years. Then people were milked dry. Every single drop was wrung out of them.

Q: What can you recall about collectivization?
A: I only remember that they took away horses, farming implements, tools. Everything was taken from people against their will. And then they shoved you into a collective farm.

Q: And what social category were you given, given the fact that your family wasn•t a peasant family, how were you designated?
A: Well, I come from the peasant class, but I•m not a peasant. It was a painful experience looking at all that was going on, seeing how the people were being uprooted and scattered about, how the dying were being brought in. At the time I lived close to the hospital. People were being driven in from villages near and far, as well as from Stavyshche, my native village. People were ever bringing in their own children, who were already

swollen. They would come to spend the night. And they would spend the night, and then they would be *f*

Closeby, there was a park belonging to the hospital. It was quite a large park. There were yellow acacias planted in the center of the park and fenced off. Well, this is right where the cemetery was. Enormous open pits were dug and the doctors carried on stretchers the bodies of those who had died and tossed them into the pits. The process would be repeated each day until the open pit was filled and covered over with dirt shoveled over it. I know the earth over the pits has settled quite a bit since that time. But today you can still locate the exact burial spot, right by the cemetery. This was the hospital morgue where they took patients who had died. Later, they didn't bother with the morgue anymore, but took the corpses straight to the open pits on stretchers. Often nurses carried as many as ten children on stretchers and tossed them into the pit.

Q: When did people begin to die?

A: The precise time? When spring came. People were wandering about the gardens and hoping to come upon something left behind in the gardens; they would dig and dig, and examine every clump of earth. If they came upon a smelly old potato, they would clean it and take the starchy residue. They would also dry and grind acacia blossoms. Linden leaves would also be dried and made into ersatz pancakes. People dug up all sorts of roots. It was terrible, absolutely terrible. People scattered all over; they wandered here and there. Sometimes, they'd spot some small creature in the water, like a turtle and eat it as food. It was terrible. People were reduced to this state. I was right there. Some of the starving were in such a bad way that they had begun to sink already. Their feet would swell up; their wounds would open and fester. It was terrible. You would see them walking about, just walking and walking, and one would drop, and then another, and so on it went.

Q: How many were there in your family?

A: Well, there were four children, my mother, father, and grandmother, who was already quite old.

Q: And how did you survive?

A: How I survived? I'll tell you. We always had a supply of pickled cabbage, which we would prepare for the winter, as well as a supply of onions and potatoes. And that's all we had. This was the common practice. In villages, there were various ways to prepare provisions. Some people had had all their provisions, all their potato crop, seized, and they themselves had been thrown out of their houses. That's all that I remember, because I was still small then. It all began in 1929, and at that time I was only seven years old. And I can recall how they would deport

people, people who never returned. And where they exiled these people, I can•t say. Everything that they had was destroyed.

Q: Was there a church in your village?

A: We had three churches, in fact. One of them was called the Rozkishna Church. It belonged to a rather large town of over 10,000 inhabitants. The town was located on the other side of a dam and could be reached by taking the bridge. But for some reason Rozkishna Church was on our side. I recall going past it in 1931 when the cross was being taken down. But I was not an actual witness to the dismantling of the bells. Apparently, they needed the metal to make weapons. During the dismantling, a band of the women assembled at the church to protest what was going on. The militia was called; the women were roughed up, hit over the head. The next day, activists arrived at night and quietly cut down the bells.

The church was converted into a grain storage building. They would bring grain from Zhazhkiv, 18 miles away from our village, which was once part of Kiev Region, but which is now part of Cherkasy Region. And that•s one of the places from where they were trucking the grain out. They had an enormous grain elevator there, and day and night they transported the grain from there, grain collected from the collective farms. Day and night!

This was all done at the MTS, the Machine-Tractor Station. And everywhere there were placards with the inscriptions, •MORE GRAIN!,Ž and other similar exhortations. More grain for the government. They literally pumped the grain out of the countryside, and all for the use of the government. In the spring the Party sent in Komsomol members, who walked about the villages with pikes to which small scoops were attached. The Komsomol members searched literally everywhere to find hidden grain. They looked especially in places like hay piles in barns. They dug everywhere. And if they happened to find some grain that someone had hidden away, well, that was pretty much the end of him. He would never see the light of day again. That•s how it was.

Q: And who exactly were these Komsomol members? Whose children were they?

A: The Komsomol members? Well, there were some Ukrainians among them, that•s true. But the vast majority were sent from Moscow. At one point, the so-called 10,000-es had been sent; there were supposed to have been 10,000 of them sent. Later, the government realized that this number was not enough, so it brought in the so-called 25,000-es. And it was these groups that confiscated the grain all over the countryside. And if you happened to be a member of the Komsomol, you were forced to do these things, too. But the possibility was always open to you, that if you did find

hidden grain, you could fail to report it, or you pretended you hadn•t seen anything.

Q: Did the Committees of Non-Wealthy Peasants exist at this time?

A: Non-Wealthy Peasants? Yes, there were such committees; in fact, pretty much all over the countryside but they were quickly suppressed. Even though I was quite young, I remember that during the SVU [in 1930], they were branded as •enemies of the peopleŽ I myself was also considered •an enemy of the peopleŽ They took away my father in 1937.

Q: Why was he taken away?

A: Why? Well, he had been branded an •enemy of the peopleŽ and they took him away in 1937. And they also took away one of my father•s brothers, and another brother, as well. And to this day, we don•t know what happened to them. And when my mother went to inquire as to my father•s whereabouts at the militia, they told her that he had been sentenced to ten years without the right of correspondence. It was common knowledge that this meant he had been shot. Most likely, his body is somewhere in Vinnytsia. So, the four of us were left. Yurii was the youngest, just six months old at the time. And that was how my mother was left to fend for herself. Many of the other women were sent off to Kazakhstan. It was common practice for wives of the men that had been sentenced to be sent for five years to Kazakhstan to pick cotton, or to perform similar tasks. Five years! My own Godmother was sent there and actually returned. But this was during the war. After the war, my mother came here for a visit, and told us that it became standard practice to tell the wives whose husbands had been sentenced without the right of correspondence • Your husband was killed in 1945Ž This was the standard line they gave everyone during the Khrushchev era.

Q: Do you recall how many people died of hunger during the Famine? What was the percentage?

A: In our village, you mean?

Q: Yes. Would you say it was about a half of the villagers?

A: Well, there was a village not far away from us called Kraseinivka, which had a population of about 10,000. It was a rather large village. They had to put up a black flag at one end of the village, and another one at the other end which indicated that absolutely no one had survived, not even a dog, or cat. The houses were all overgrown with goosefoot and other weeds. And our village? Well, what can I tell you? About ten percent of our village died of hunger. It was terrifying. Utterly terrifying.

Q: Were you yourself repressed during collectivization?

A: Well, in the beginning, you know, we had our own house, which later became my uncle•s house. They evicted us and told us that they needed our house as part of the new collective farm, and they made an office out of my uncle•s house. And they also confiscated 90 percent of everything we had. They took the land together with the house and all our belongings. We had had this garden there „ and we lost all of this.

Q: And they didn•t tell you anything?

A: At that point, they took whatever they wanted to, since technically these things were no longer ours. They would walk all over our fields, probing the latter with the sharp pikes. The pike was jammed into the ground and pulled up. If any grains of wheat were picked up, the conclusion was that grain was being hidden from the state. The men with the pikes were everywhere.

Q: Were you going to school at the time? And if so, was it a Ukrainian school?

A: Yes, it was. In our school, whenever any of the children mentioned the Famine, they were corrected by the teachers. They were told that there was no Famine, simply a year of difficulties. They confiscated all that we had and designated the year as one of difficulties!

Not far from us was a cemetery. There were many beautifully made crosses and memorials there. This was during the Famine. Every night there were two or three graves dug up. Wealthy people had been buried there, and, naturally, there were valuables in the caskets „ a ring perhaps, a watch, or earring. The robbers were caught: a man by the name of Abramovich and his son. The father had forced the son into it. Well, they had been trying to break into a tomb „ t he rich people had all been buried in tombs. The valuables buried with them were just waiting to be taken. Nothing was done to prevent theft. The entire site was ruined and everything of value was taken.

Well, when someone like a priest was buried, a gold cross was often placed in his casket. During the Famine hundreds of graves were unearthed *f*.

During the Famine they used to give us tea and a small piece of bread at school. The tea was made in the following fashion. It was simply overcooked sugar and some coloring. And that was our tea. A lot of children did not go to school; they were no longer able to, because they had already reached the stage where their bodies had swelled. A large number of children died.

A few of the villagers had planted potatoes in the spring, but they had to do the plowing with shovels, because by this time, all the horses had died and no implements were left. They dug the earth with shovels and planted the potatoes. But the problem was that anyone could easily figure

out where it was that you planted the potatoes, and the next day, usually at night, someone would come and dig up what you had planted. The field would again be barren. That•s what went on. So, as a result, people would try to cover their tracks by raking over the newly sowed ground. We used to plant small potato cuttings which were little more than peels. Well, we planted these in our garden, and the potatoes grew beautifully. Something so simple, it could only have come from God. It was just a potato peel with some eyes on it. We planted the peels and got perfectly good potatoes that way. That•s how we did it.

The greatest number of deaths from starvation actually occurred when the wheat-ears had matured. People began to steal the wheat-ears. They were starving, you understand, and all at once the wheat-ears were available. And when the people began eating great quantities of wheat-ears, they died even more rapidly, because their intestines would rupture. That•s when the greatest number of corpses began appearing.

Q: And what did they do with the corpses?

A: What indeed! Well, they went looking for them; they collected the corpses and dumped them into pits. And if the authorities happened to come across someone who was somehow managing to stay relatively healthy, well, they gave him the job of watching over the pit that they had dug out to make sure that it wasn•t used by anyone else.

Q: Are you aware of any cases of cannibalism?

A: I heard of instances but had never witnessed anything personally. But everyone talked about it. We had our own newspaper, The Red Collectivist. The newspaper mentioned that someone had been apprehended in connection with the discovery of barrels of salted meat. I can•t recall the entire episode. Rumors were circulating involving the activists. There were Ukrainians among them, and there may have been others as well. They were the real activists, you know. They were involved in dekulakization, and they used to go drinking in the gardens. In fact, they didn•t do much of anything else, except when it came time to dekulakize someone, they•d come and confiscate everything, throwing the children out, like unwanted puppies, into the courtyard. And this was in the dead of winter. The head of the household would go to the village soviet and request help for his seven children, and the activists would tell him something like, •Get out of here, and take those little mongrels with you!Ž That•s how it was. And no one would help these people out. And so they would just die *ƒ*.

Q: Who was the head of the village soviet at the time?

A: The head of the village soviet? A man by the name of Makharynsky. I've forgotten his first name. And later they took him away as well. I don't know what the cause for that was.

Q: And what sort of man was he? Can you describe him?

A: What kind of man? Well, he did whatever they ordered him to do.

Q: I see, a bureaucrat.

A: Whatever the bureaucracy told him to do, he'd do. You know, he himself didn't actually participate in the dirty work of dekulakization; and whenever they told him to pump the grain out of a particular village, he would send in the activists, the so-called 10,000-ers, and later the 25,000-ers sent by Moscow. And these were all foreigners, outsiders.

The Famine existed only in Ukraine. There were a lot of people, a lot of people who wanted to go to Russia. People figured they could go there with the shirt on their backs and sell it for bread. On their way back everything they were carrying would be confiscated. And they would be arrested and sentenced. I myself know of several people who went there. You see, Russia was some distance away from us. The people who lived closer did try to go, but the ones who made it never returned with anything. Everything they managed to get was confiscated. By this time, the passport system had already been introduced. According to this system, you would be arrested and in great difficulties if you happened to be somewhere for nine days without reporting. So, whatever you did, you would invariably find yourself in hot water.

Q: Did you leave the village during the Famine?

A: My father was still around. I remember once we bought some coffee. The so-called coffee had actually been made out of barley. It was just over roasted barley. Well, since there was nothing to eat, we were told to mix some of this and some of that into this coffee. This mixture was awfully bitter! Yecch!

Q: Do you remember how the Famine came to an end?

A: How the Famine ended? Well, they began to provide a little something for the people; people began to go to the collective farms for soup. But as far as to how the Famine actually ended? Well, it happened gradually, in stages. How can I explain? Well, the thing is that it never really completely ended. That's the way it is over there. People were no longer dying en masse, but in a sense the Famine still continued. In fact, it recurred in 1947. Once again there was a great Famine in Ukraine. My mother recounted how there was a great migration to the cities. Life was a bit better in the cities. But even in the cities, people were dying of hunger *f*.

Q: What sort of people joined the Party in your village?

A: There were very few Party members in our village.

Q: Well, what sort of people were the Party members?

A: What sort? There was a man by the name of Pokotylo who shot himself during the Famine. I believe he was in the District Party Committee, but I don't know what his rank was. I just know that he was a Communist and that he shot himself. There was another by the name of Nahornyi who also shot himself. This all happened during the Famine. These Communists committed suicide during the Famine, as did Mykola Khvyliovy, the writer, and Skrypnyk. Others committed suicide, too, because they saw what was actually going on. At one time they had embraced Lenin's slogans that Ukraine would be allowed to separate from the Soviet Union if it chose to. They believed the slogans, or at least I suppose they did. But later, when they understood the truth, they shot themselves. They had to. And that's how it was with our Party members.

And then came the Party purges. They were directed from Moscow. Party purges. And these were public spectacles. There was a building in our village that served as a club. And this is where the proclamations were made. When the Party purge began, they zeroed in on this fellow named Hrynchenko. They started in on him, tagging him with all sorts of accusations „ t hat he had pumped out insufficient quantities of grain, that there was too little of this and too little of that. Although there was already nothing at all left to pump out, and they were still accusing him of falling short. • Too little!Ž they shouted at him.

By 1934 they were already giving out 250 grams for one labor day. This is about half a pound of bread a day. But you really had to work to earn this ration. This was a very difficult life, but people began to manage. They planted potatoes and different varieties of pumpkins, beets, and other staples. But during the Famine, a group of Soviet ruffians would come through the villages and would even pull out whatever people happened to be baking in the oven. In the markets, they would even confiscate and destroy such items as beans in jars. It was terrible. Well, this is what I myself know and saw.

Q: How did people rebuild their lives after the Famine?

A: Slowly. Before collectivization, there were still large barns around the countryside, but all these were burned as firewood. Whoever had fences for keeping in domestic livestock, these were burned also because people didn't have anything to keep themselves warm. The only housing that was left were so-called •houses on chicken legs.Ž Reconstruction was simply awful. It was repulsive just to look at these buildings. It's probably the same way today. They say that there have been some changes, some improv

changes made, that some sidewalks have been added, that electrical lines have been added, and that sort of thing *f*.

Q: Did people ever talk about the Famine after it was over?

A: They talked about it constantly. If I knew you well, then I would feel free to talk about it; but if I didn•t know you well, I wouldn•t feel comfortable talking. I would be afraid of your denouncing me to the NKVD. There were so-called Judases who were capable of turning you in. Whatever you would say, they would immediately report it, and you would be in for some real trouble.

Q: You were only 11 years old during the Famine?

A: Yes.

Q: But did you hear the adults talking about the political affairs of the day? Did you know at the time who Skrypnyk was? Kaganovich? What was being said about these political figures?

A: We all knew! Kaganovich, Molotov. Except that at that time no one could speak openly about these matters. We couldn•t speak openly. Let me tell you about this little song that we had from that period. I can still remember this song from my school days.

During the Famine, they sent this fellow, Postyshev, as secretary to Ukraine. And then there was this other fellow, Kossior, who was Polish. He was in the Politburo. So you can see for yourself what lovely songs we had to sing as we starved.

> Hey, our harvest knows no limits or measures.
> It grows, ripens, and even spills over onto the earth,
> Boundless over the fields; while the patrolling pioneers
> Come out to guard the ripening wheat-ears of grain.

And now here•s the refrain:

> We•ve hardened our song in the kiln•s fires
> And carry it aloft like a banner, offering it to you;
> And in this way, Comrade Postyshev, we are submitting
> Our report of the work we•ve done.

I remember the song as if it were yesterday. We had a very beautiful park in our village, with a stream flowing by. A gorgeous park. And in all the parks, there were loudspeakers placed, as part of this radio network, which was itself linked to the post office. And in these parks, you could always hear songs in Russian being sung, one song particular:

Swiftly as birds, one after another,
Fly over our Soviet homeland
The joyous refrains of town and country:
Our burdens have lightened
Our lives have gladdened.

They broadcast this song while people were dying in the Famine. • Our lives have gladdened.Ž I can recall this song from my school years, when they were teaching the children to sing The Patrolling Pioneer. What kind of a country is this in which they keep bread from the people for the sake of a • better life Ž? They themselves sang, „The joyous refrains of town and country.Ž And this song would play every day, ten times a day, and as you listened to the song, everywhere all around you people are screaming, and starving to death, while the song played on: • Our burdens have lightened.Ž

Q: And what were you thinking?

A: What could I think?! All I could think of was where could I get some food. I didn • t think anything. They let the Ukrainians have it because they had wanted to separate from Russia. That • s what I think. The Ukrainian nation is still paying for that even up to this very day.

Q: Would you like to add anything to what you • ve said?

A: What is there that I could add? As long as you have Communism there, you will have this endless agony there. They can always institute another policy similar to NEP; they can always try something like that again. From what I hear, they want to give the people a greater share, a greater share of land as well „ t he primary reason being that the private plots of land yield more crops per acre than the collective farms. But people aren • t going to fall for this. First of all, they don • t have the implements with which to farm private land; and, secondly, let • s say, if a man does work his field, and he seeds it and plants something „ potatoes, for example „ t hen they • ll tell him to pay his taxes. And regardless whether or not something grows or doesn • t grow in your garden, you have to come up with the payment. People don • t want this system and aren • t going to be taken in by it. And as long as this system continues to exist over there, then that • s how it will be over there.

Q: Thank you very much indeed for this most interesting testimony.

A: I was quite young, but I saw a great deal. In fact, I can recall the events of those times better than I can recall what I did yesterday.

Q: Oh, yes.

A: It was all so horrible.

Account 3

Vasyl• Pakharenko, •Holodnyi 33-yi,Ž Molod• Cherkashchyny, July 18…24, 1988; translated by Vera Kaczmarskyj, Soviet Ukrainian Affairs, autumn 1988,pp. 14…15.hE author is a schoolteacher in the city of Cherkassy, a regional capital in Ukraine.

Recently I wasleafing through a thick notebook filled with eyewitness accounts. Ihad jotted them down at various times and different villages. They are simple narratives (I tried to record them verbatim). A surrealistic tragedy unfolds behind thesewords *ƒ*.

Here is Iaryna Larionivna Tiutiunyk•s account fothe death of her neighbor•s 6-year-old son, Myt•io. [Iaryna wasborn in 1905in the village of Subotiv in the Chyhyrin region]: •He was onhis way to the kindergarten one morning, where the collective farm wasdistributing a serving of millet meathe size of a matchbox. And he dropped by, begging „ Aunt ie, give me apiece of bread. I am schungry. I didn•t give him any becausI was mad at him for eatng the greens Ihad planted in the garden. To the day I die Iwill not forgive myself for begrudging the child apiece of bread. In the eveing, on our way home from work, we found him sitting right in the middle of the footpath „ dead. He wasprobably returning from the kindergarten, had got tired, satdown, and died.Ž

Antonina Oleksandrivna Polishchuk [born in 1925].She lived in the village of Buzhanka in the Lysianskyi raion: •In 1933, our mother pretended to sew somedolls for children, filling them with grain, so that they would not take away all the grain from us.But they found the grain even there and seized it. They took our ox away *ƒ* and killed it, taking the meatfor themselves *ƒ*.

•Our father died from hunger, asdid my 14-year-old brother, Vasia, and my twin sisters, Katia and Dunia [born in 1927]. We ate dry weeds and drank water. The corpseswere carted out to the cemeteries onbig carts. They pushed 300bodiesinto onehole *ƒ*.Ž

Tetiana Iakivna Vdovychenko [born in 1911]lived in the same village •It happened that they took people who were still alive and would throw them into the common graves. This happened with Khotyna Reverko. When they came tother house, shewas still alive. They started dragging her to the cart by her feet. •Where are you pulling me to? Give me abeet. I am hungry, I still want to live.•She wasyoung, notyet 30.

••You think we are going to comeback for you tomorrow?• growled the meninresponse,pulling her onto the cart by her feet. They brought her to the gravesite and threw her inside. She did not fall on her back, but propped up in a sitting position, her back against the side. They poked at her head and shefinally fell back.Ž

•Motria Vdovychenko was also taken to the graveside and buried alive with her two children [who were also still living]. Such incidents were frequentŽ

Denys Mykytovych Lebid• [born in 1914] from Iablunivka in Lysianskyi raion: •I was transported to the graveside and thrown into the common grave, but they did not cover it up that day. My friend Iaremii Stavenko was passing by and pulled me outŽ

Stepanida Hryhorivna [born in 1905] from the village of Zhab•ianka in the region by the same name: •In 1933, my neighbor lured my daughter to her house, killed her with a knife and ate her. My daughter was all of 6 years old at the time. When the beast was seized and taken to the raion [to be imprisoned], she kept taking out slices of meat and eating them, saying •Umm, how tasty. Had I known, I would have killed her earlier.• The police could not tolerate this any longer and shot her right there on the road *f*. Ž

Account 4

Oleksandr Mishchenko, Bezkrovna vina (Kiev, 1991) pp. 48…49. The author, a member of the Union of Writers of Ukraine, collected 42 accounts in the Poltava region in 1990. The following account is that of Petro Ivanovych Bilous, born 1909 in the village of Andriiky, which was formed from four farmsteads (khutirs), including the Andreiko farmstead, in Poltava region.

In 1932…1933 the people were terrified. They no longer slept nights but sat in their houses and waited for the brigades to come for bread. In order to survive, some started to hide some produce somewhere. For example, at Laryvon Andreiko•s house the brigade leader found some buried potatoes and beneath them a few poods of wheat. Then they crawled in the attic where there were flowerpots, cast-iron pots, and jars. And in every jar and pot there were beans, dried apples, ground millet, or crab-apples, all covered with charcoal to hide it. They found it all the same. They took it down from the attic and poured it all in one sack. They found a little cask of cheese. They ate his sauerkraut and I ate some, too, because I was hungry. Old man Laryvon was left with nothing. He survived somehow, but his wife died.

In our family, both mother and father perished. Mother died when the rye was already being harvested. She went to look at how they were pouring it. Even though the rye was ripe, they wouldn•t allow anyone to cut an ear. Even in their own garden. My brother was already married then. He went to live with his wife•s family at Marfyna Andreiko•s house. They had a cow, and he survived there. Another brother went around to the small farming communities (khutirs) and begged. And I was already near death, so swollen that I couldn•t get out of bed, but someone remembered about

my army requalification. And I was taken to the hospital. I stayed there a month and got better. I returned home. The house stood empty. All there was were the four walls. I didn•t think about that then. All I thought about was going somewhere in order to earn a piece of bread and not die. But in the village there was no place to go. The dead lay in the shadows, in kitchen gardens under a tree; the people wandered sluggishly, apathetically, dazed, and no one even buried the dead.

Over there across the gully lived Kateryna Andreiko. She lost four daughters, and she also gave up her spirit to God, but her two sons luckily, survived. One was already married, and his younger brother stayed with him. Andrii Vasyl•ovych Andreiko lost two boys and five daughters. The daughters were little, school-age. Andrii Vasyl•ovych from time to time served as chairman of the collective farm, and then they dismissed him, and then he died. His wife, too. Not only did our own people die but even outsiders who had been sent in. There was starvation in every house. At my wife•s, thanks to the fact that her father had a cow, nobody died. But everybody was swollen: her mother, father, and brother. She was given a little bread in the collective farm „ s he didn•t eat it herself but brought it home. And that•s how she saved her immediate family. At Odarka Andreiko•s house, not far from here, the father died, two brothers, and the sisters Mariika, Nasita, and Mylia. Odarka was already married then. She buried them in a pit. She worked on the burial detachment. Nobody made her. She came home and buried them herself. She buried Mariika, she buried Nasta, she buried her father. Before he died, her father asked for a piece of bread: •Give me some, my child, if only some crumbs, because I•m dying Ž She didn•t have any to give him. There just wasn•t any bread at all.

References

Borys, Jurij (1980). The Sovietization of Ukraine 1917…1923: The Communist Doctrine and Practice of National Self-Determination. Edmonton: Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies.

Conquest, Robert (1986). The Harvest of Sorrow: Soviet Collectivization and the Terror-Famine. New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Ellman, Michael (1991). •A Note of the Number of 1933 Famine Victims Ž Soviet Studies, XLIII(2):375…379.

Gannt, William Horsley (1937). Russian Medicine. New York: Harper & Brothers.

Hermaize, Osyp (1926). Narysy z istorii revoliutsinoho rukhu na Ukraïni (Sketches from the History of the Revolutionary Movement in Ukraine). Kharkiv: Knyhospilka.

Holod 1932…1933 rokiv na Ukraïni: Ochyma istorykiv, movoiu dokumentiv (The Famine of 1932…1933 in Ukraine: In the Eyes of Historians and in the Language of the Documents) (1990). Kiev: Vydavnytstvo politychnoï literatury.

Hroch, Myroslav (1985). Social Conditions of National Revival in Europe. A Comparative Analysis of the Social Composition of Patriotic Groups among the Smaller European Nations. Cambridge, London, New York: Cambridge University Press.

Jasny, Naum (1949). The Socialized Agriculture of the USSR: Plans and Performance. Stanford: Stanford University Press.

Khrystiuk, Pavlo (1921…1922).Zamitky i materiialy do istoriï ukraïns•koï revoliutsiï, 1917…1920 (Notes and Materials on the History of the Ukrainian Revolution, 1917…1920). Prague: Ukraïnskyi sotsiologychnyi instytut. Four volumes.

Kuper, Leo (1990)."The Genocidal State: An Overview," pp. 19…52. In Pierre L. van den Berghe (Ed.) State Violence and Ethnicity. Niwot, CO: University of Colorado Press.

Lewin, Moshe (1985).The Making of the Soviet System: Essays in the Social History of Interwar Russia. New York: Pantheon.

Liber, George O. (1990).Soviet Nationality Policy, Urban Growth and Identity Change in the Ukrainian SSR, 1923…1934. New York: Cambridge University Press.

Luxemburg, Rosa (1976).The National Question: Selected Writings. Ann Arbor, MI: Books on Demand.

Mace, James E. (1983).Communism and the Dilemmas of National Liberation: National Communism in Soviet Ukraine, 1918…1933. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Mace, James E. (1984)."The Man-Made Famine of 1933 in the Soviet Ukraine: What Happened and Why," pp. 67…83. In Israel W. Charny (Ed.) Toward the Understanding and Prevention of Genocide. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Mishchenko, Oleksandr (1991).Bezkrovna viina. Kiev: Vydanvnytstvo politychnoi literatury.

"Postanova TsK VKP(b) ta RNK SRSR pro khlibozahotivli na Ukraïny, Pivnichnomu Kavkazi ta Zakhidnii oblasti" (Decision of the All-Union Communist Party Central Committee and USSR Council of Peoples Commissars on Grain Procurements in Ukraine, the North Caucasus, and Western District) (1991). Zlotoi vorota: Al•manakh, No. 1: 78…79.

Savchenko, Fedir (1930).Zaboronene ukraïnstvo 1876 r. (The Suppression of Ukrainian Activities in 1876). Kharkiv and Kiev: Derzhavne vydavnytstvo Ukraïny.

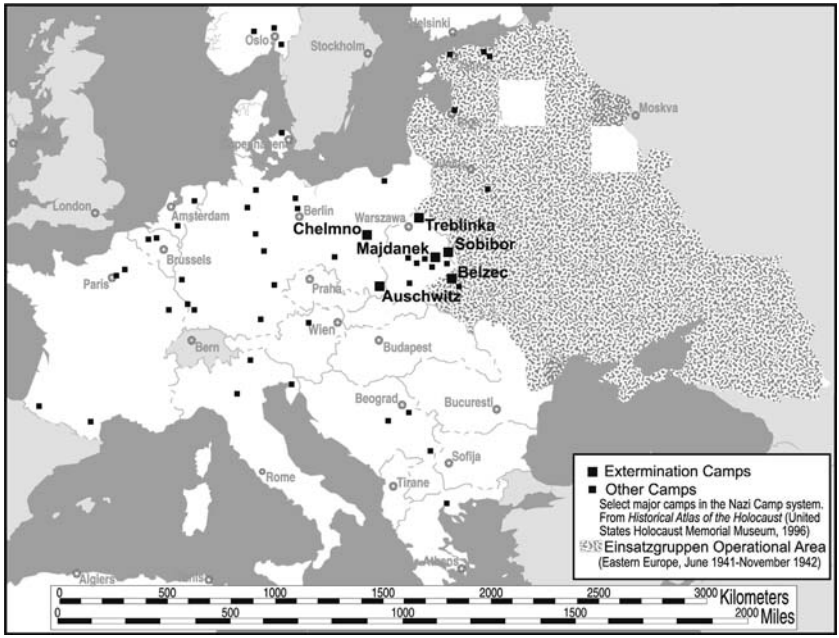
Stalin, I. V. (1946…1951).Sochineniia (Works). Moscow: Gospolitizdat. 14 volumes.

Taylor, S. J. (1990).Stalin•s Apologist: Walter Duranty, The New York Times•s Man in Moscow. New York: Oxford University Press.

Treadgold, Donald (1964).Twentieth Century Russia. 2nd ed. Chicago: Rand McNally.

U.S. Commission on the Ukraine Famine (1988).Report to Congress. Washington: U.S. Government Printing Office.

Vsesoiuznaia perepis• naseleniia 1937 g.: Kratkie itogi (All-Union Population Census of 1937: Summary). (1991). Moscow: Institut istorii SSSR


Oslo
Stockholm
Helsinki
Moskva
London
Amsterdam
Berlin
Warszawa
Chelmno
Treblinka
Majdanek
Sobibor
Belzec
Auschwitz
Brussels
Paris
Praha
Wien
Bern
Budapest
Beograd
Bucuresti
Sofija
Rome
Tirane
Athens
Algiers
Extermination Camps
Other Camps
Select major camps in the Nazi Camp system. From Historical Atlas of the Holocaust (United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, 1996)
Einsatzgruppen Operational Area
(Eastern Europe, June 1941-November 1942)
0 500 1000 1500 2000 2500 3000 Kilometers
0 500 1000 1500 2000 Miles

Germany

CHAPTER 4
Holocaust: The Genocide of the Jews

DONALD L. NIEWYK

The Nazi slaughter of the Jews during World War II gave the world the idea of genocide. The Nazis themselves did not use the term, nor was this the first such mass murder. But the systematic extermination of between 5 and 6 million Jews through shootings, gassings, and forced labor was a catastrophe on a massive scale. It was, moreover, closely related to broader Nazi racial policies that led to the murder of very large numbers of Gypsies, Russian and Polish prisoners of war, East European slave laborers, and Germans who were physically disabled or mentally retarded.

Perpetrators

Following Hitler's seizure of power in Germany in 1933, the Nazi state pursued policies designed to isolate and pauperize the 600,000 German Jews. The goal, more or less openly acknowledged, was to make the Jews despair of their future in Germany and emigrate, which many of them did. Violent attacks on Jews were uncommon, and Jews were sent to concentration camps only if they had been prominent in anti-Nazi parties. The exception to these rules was the "Crystal Night" (Kristallnacht) pogrom of November 9–10, 1938, when Nazi thugs physically attacked thousands of Jews and sent them to concentration camps. The latter were released only after promising to leave Germany. These actions were clearly the work of virulent anti-Semites in the Nazi Party, supported by government officials who found pogroms useful in advancing economic objectives. Most

ordinary Germans ignored these atrocities out of indifference to the Jews or a sense of powerlessness to help them.

These policies aimed at forcing Jewish emigration held for more than a year after World War II began. While many Jews in the part of Poland conquered by Germany in 1939 were mistreated, the Nazi bureaucracy made plans to expel them and all other Jews in German hands farther to the east or else to the Indian Ocean island of Madagascar. Only when Hitler invaded the Soviet Union in 1941 did emigration give way to extermination. Believing that the German people would not understand such a ghastly policy, the Nazis carried out the genocide of the Jews in secrecy and under cover of war. Accordingly, responsibility for mass murder was placed in the hands of the SS (Schutzstaffel), Hitler•s special guard of policemen and soldiers that had grown into the central agency of terror in Nazi-dominated Europe. Some of its officers were convinced anti-Semites who accepted the view that the Jews were Germany•s most dangerous enemies. All of them were convinced Nazis who were sworn to obey orders without question.

Genocide was too vast a process for the SS alone. The German army cooperated in the roundup of victims. Volunteers from the conquered Eastern countries served as auxiliary police and as guards in the camps out of sympathy with the Nazis or the desire to escape some worse fate at German hands. Occasionally local mobs in Poland, the Baltic states, and the Ukraine massacred their Jewish neighbors, with German encouragement. However, unlike the Germans, none of these other groups were dedicated to the systematic slaughter of every single Jew in Europe. The point is, the Holocaust was masterminded and implemented by Hitler•s elite guard, the SS.

Genocide: Policies and Procedures

As SS leaders prepared to participate in Hitler•s invasion of the Soviet Union in June 1941, they created four mobile killing squads called Einsatzgruppen for the purpose of liquidating Jews, Polish and Soviet intellectuals, and Communist Party officials. The 3000 members of these four squads shot and buried in mass graves between 1 and 2 million Jews during the course of the war on the Eastern Front, but their methods were considered slow and inefficient „ particularly if all 11 million European Jews were to die. Hence, Hermann Goering placed the formulation of what was to become the Nazis•• Final Solution to the Jewish problemŽ in the hands of Reinhard Heydrich, the most powerful SS leader after Heinrich Himmler. Heydrich•s plan was submitted at a conference of top Nazi officials held in the Berlin suburb of Wannsee in January 1942. It called for concentrating all the Jews under German control in Eastern European ghettos and labor camps, where those capable of doing slave labor for the

Third Reich would be worked to death. Those who could not work or who were not needed would be sent to special camps for immediate extermination.

Existence for the Jews in ghettos and their nearby forced labor camps almost defies description. Overcrowded, overworked, and underfed, they could hope only that producing for the Nazi war machine would buy enough time to save at least a remnant of the Jewish people. That hope, combined with the Nazi policy of holding all the Jews of the ghetto collectively responsible for any attempt at opposition or escape, kept Jewish resistance to a minimum. In 1944, the SS shut down the last of the ghettos and sent their piteous remnants to camps in Germany or else to the extermination centers.

The six extermination centers, all of them situated on what had been Polish territory, ended the lives of 3 million Jews. Four of them „ Chelmno, Belzec, Sobibor, and Treblinka „ were strictly killing centers, where victims were gassed immediately following their arrival. The Nazis already possessed the technical expertise, having employed poison gas to kill more than 70,000 incurably ill Germans in a •euthanasia Ž program between 1939 and 1941 (see chapter 6). The remaining two extermination centers „ Auschwitz and Majdanek „ were both killing and slave labor camps. In them, the able-bodied were selected for work in various military industries; the rest were consigned to the gas chambers or firing squads. To be selected for work often meant only a brief reprieve, since conditions were atrocious. As the SS saw it, the victims were to die eventually anyway, and there was no reason to spare them when a steady stream of replacements kept arriving. Hence tens of thousands were literally worked to death. Others were subjected to grotesque and painful medical experiments. Survival depended on almost superhuman determination to live and often on the good fortune of securing jobs in camp kitchens, offices, or medical wards.

Auschwitz was the last of the extermination centers to be shut down as Soviet forces overran Poland late in 1944. The SS drove the survivors of the various camps to Germany, where they were dumped in already overcrowded concentration camps and their outlying slave labor centers. Deprived of even the most elementary needs in the last days of the war, thousands died of malnutrition, tuberculosis, typhus, and other diseases. The liberating Allied armies found the camps littered with unburied corpses, and many of those still alive were too far gone to be saved. Of the approximately 200,000 Jews who survived, the majority attempted to return to their former homes, while the remainder entered European displaced persons• camps and applied for permission to enter Palestine, the United States, or some other place of permanent refuge.

Why the Jews?

Answering the question "Why the Jews?" requires an understanding of Adolf Hitler, the undeniable author of the Holocaust. His anti-Semitism dates from his youth in Austria before World War I, where Jew-baiting was advanced by the politicians he admired and the tabloids he read. If the psychohistorians are to be believed, it may have been more deeply rooted in some early personal trauma (Binion, 1976; Waite, 1977).

Whatever its sources, Hitler's Judeophobia comprised all the well-established and virtually universal stereotypes: Jews were corrupt and predatory materialists, devoid of patriotism and feelings for others, and they advocated subversive ideas such as liberalism, Marxism, and cultural modernism. Hitler adopted this hackneyed litany in its most extreme, social Darwinian form that interpreted history as a struggle between superior and inferior races. By the time he began his political career in postwar Munich, he was a convinced anti-Semite.

Doubtless, Hitler's anti-Semitism, and that of many of his followers, was intensified by the Bolshevik revolution in Russia, Germany's defeat in World War I, and the abortive Spartacus Revolt by German Communists in 1919. Then Hitler and his fledgling Nazi Party began associating the Jews with the alleged "stab in the back" of the German army, the liberal Weimar Republic established in Germany after the defeat, and the Communist menace. Anti-Semitism was always one of his central teachings. Occasionally Hitler called for the emigration or deportation of the Jews, but more often he blamed problems on a Jewish world conspiracy without specifying a cure beyond inviting Germans to support his movement. Moreover, the Nazi Party tended to use anti-Jewish propaganda opportunistically, playing it up or down depending on the responses it received. Hence no one could know exactly what Hitler and his party planned to do with the Jews, and it cannot be said that the large minority of Germans who came to support him after 1930 deliberately endorsed violent anti-Semitism. Today it is far clearer than it was at the time that genocide was implicit in Hitler's ideology.

That genocidal impulse became explicit as part of the events surrounding Operation Barbarossa, the attack on the USSR in 1941. No one knows exactly when or why the Germans decided to kill all the European Jews (and not just those targeted by the Einsatzgruppen). Fragmentary evidence suggests that the euphoric atmosphere surrounding Germany's initial victories on the Eastern Front may have convinced Hitler that the creation of his Aryan utopia was imminent. The dictator's increasingly barbaric campaign against the Soviet Union also sharpened his hatred for what he called "Judeo-Bolshevism" at the same time as it foreclosed opportunities to resettle the Jews. By 1942, Nazi genocide was being aimed at all of European Jewry.

The Victims

Although the Third Reich targeted all the Jews in Nazi-dominated Europe, their fate varied with local conditions. Jews were most vulnerable where German officials managed affairs directly (and did so from the beginning of the Holocaust); where the Jewish communities were large and unassimilated; and where indigenous anti-Semitism encouraged some degree of cooperation with the murderers.

All three of these elements combined to decimate the Jews of Poland, the western USSR, and the Baltic states. There Nazi rule was most openly brutal. First under the guns of the Einsatzgruppen and then in ghettos and labor and extermination camps, Jews from these areas died in numbers amounting to three-quarters of the total Holocaust casualties. Very few survived. Direct German control over Serbia, the Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia, and part of Greece meant that their Jews were deported to Poland and subjected to similar atrocities. Such was also the fate of the remaining German and Austrian Jewish communities. Only small numbers of German Jews who were of mixed race, living in mixed marriages, highly decorated war veterans, or prominent persons were spared. Hungary came under direct German rule only in March 1944, following which the SS, aided by Hungarian officials, swallowed up more than half of the large Jewish population. Doubtless the losses in Hungary would have been even greater had the Nazis taken control earlier.

Unlike Hungary, Germany's other Eastern European allies „ Romania, Bulgaria, Slovakia, and Croatia „ retained some measure of independence to the end of the war. Slovakia and Croatia, both satellites created by Nazi Germany, willingly established their own forced labor camps for some of the Jews and sent the rest to the extermination centers. Romania and Bulgaria, however, refused to comply with some Nazi demands. Neither was a German creation, and both were fiercely protective of their national rights. Bulgaria confiscated the property of many native-born Jews and forced some of them into slave labor, but it would not hand them over to the Germans. It did, however, deport Jews from lands newly acquired from Greece and Yugoslavia. In Romania, where (unlike Bulgaria) there was considerable anti-Semitism, tens of thousands of Jews in the newly reconquered provinces of Bessarabia and Northern Bukovina were murdered in pogroms or else deported across the Dniester River to be murdered by the Einsatzgruppen or at Auschwitz. And yet, the majority of Bulgarian and Romanian Jews survived the Holocaust.

The Jews of Western Europe, remote from the killing fields and the intense anti-Semitism of Eastern Europe, lost about 40 percent of their numbers to the Nazis. The SS gave priority to exterminating the Jews of the east, and the war ended before it could finish its work in the west. There, too, the pace of extermination varied with local conditions. In

Holland, which had been placed under direct German rule, three-quarters of the Jews perished because they were numerous, heavily concentrated in one place (Amsterdam), and led by passive community officials; they also had little opportunity to escape or hide in their heavily populated country. French Jews, too, perished as a result of the Vichy regime•s collaboration with the Nazis. And yet, only about 20 percent of them died in the Holocaust because they seized opportunities to hide in remote villages or to flee to neutral Spain and Switzerland.

At the opposite extreme, almost all members of the very small Danish Jewish community were transported the short distance by boat to Sweden by Danes who had no sympathy with anti-Semitism. The Italians, too, although German allies, were not racists. Only after Mussolini•s fall and the German takeover of the county were about 16 percent of the Italian Jews sent to their deaths, and the retreating Nazis had to do the job themselves. Hence, in certain circumstances resistance to the occupiers by local officials and private individuals saved lives. The fate of the different Jewish communities was determined by various concatenations of local attitudes, opportunities for flight or concealment, the size and location of the Jewish populations, and the nature of Nazi rule in the several countries (Fein, 1979).

Participants and Bystanders

Direct participation in the Holocaust by SS officials, Einsatzgruppen personnel, and camp guards was required in relatively small numbers. Indirect involvement by police, civil servants, private businessmen who profited from slave labor, and the like was considerably broader. Moreover, news of the exterminations rapidly leaked out of Eastern Europe in 1942, enmeshing much of the world in the catastrophe.

German police and government bureaucrats who defined, identified, assembled, and deported the Jews to the east were not always fanatical Nazis or anti-Semites. Many were careerists and efficient professionals, dedicated to following instructions and improvising solutions to problems in the spirit of their superiors. Amorality was encouraged by specialization; each department and individual was accountable for only one small segment of the program, diffusing personal responsibility. Ordinary Germans who had nothing to do with the Holocaust might hear rumors of crimes against the Jews in Eastern Europe, but they were preoccupied with staying alive and making ends meet in an increasingly disastrous wartime situation. The Jews quite literally were out of sight and out of mind.

In occupied Western Europe, the Nazis were stretched thin and depended heavily on local authorities to deliver the Jews for deportation. Especially in France and Holland, such assistance was widespread, encouraged by careerism and fear of reprisals. Small minorities in all the

Western European countries risked their lives to hide Jews or help them escape to neutral havens. Tens of thousands were saved as a result. Equally small minorities of Nazi sympathizers turned Jews and their helpers in to the authorities. The vast majority, however, were as apathetic and self-absorbed as most Germans.

Neutral countries such as Switzerland, Sweden, Spain, and Turkey accepted limited numbers of refugees but none wanted to antagonize Hitler while his armies seemed invincible. Once the tide turned against him, however, they became more willing to aid the Jews. The Vatican also held to its traditional neutrality. Pope Pius XII kept silent about the Holocaust, evidently fearing German reprisals and hoping to enhance his role as a mediator. Individual Catholic clerics and laymen, however, did intervene on behalf of the Jews, notably in France, Hungary, and Slovakia.

The nations allied against Hitler reacted to the genocide of the Jews in diverse ways. The Soviet Union gave refuge to large numbers of Eastern European Jews who had fled before the Wehrmacht, but it acknowledged no special Nazi program to kill the Jews. In contrast, Great Britain and the United States warned the Germans and their allies that they would be called to account for their acts of genocide. A key question is: Could more have been done? It has been charged that Jewish lives could have been saved if President Roosevelt had not waited until 1944 to establish the War Refugee Board; if Germany and its satellites had been pressed to release their Jews; if the Allied air forces had bombed Auschwitz and its rail approaches in 1944; and if negotiations with the Nazis to ransom the Jews had been pursued. That the measures were not taken may be explained by indifference or even covert anti-Semitism among Allied leaders.

Or it may be argued that the Allies' single-minded preoccupation with the military side of the war was responsible. As they saw it, the best way to help all the victims of fascism was to press for the quickest possible victory. Nor will everyone agree that such measures would have altered the outcome in any significant way. No one should underestimate Nazi determination to exterminate the Jews, regardless of disruptions of the killing centers and promises held out in negotiations.

The Burden of History

A number of historical trends combined to make the Holocaust possible: anti-Semitism, racism, social Darwinism, extreme nationalism, totalitarianism, industrialism, and the nature of modern war. The absence of any one of these trends would have made the genocide of the Jews unlikely.

Anti-Semitism has a long history in most of Europe, not just in Germany. Traditional anti-Semitism arose out of Christian rejection of the Jews as deicides and deliberate misbelievers. Once it had generated

pogroms, but in modern times it inspired contempt for the Jews by providing an explanation for their alleged materialism. Having rejected the saving grace of Jesus, some argument went, they had lost their ethical standards in the pursuit of physical wealth and materialistic philosophies. Religiously based Judeophobia partially merged with newer criticisms of the Jews• role in the modern economy. Having been emancipated from special laws and restrictions only in the 19th century, the Jews were still concentrated in a few highly visible economic sectors such as banking, publishing, and the metal and clothing trades. This made them convenient targets for the victims of industrialization, some of whom blamed the Jews for economic depressions, bankruptcies, and unemployment. At the same time, the Jews• support for liberal political movements that had advocated Jewish emancipation generated anti-Semitism among conservative foes of individualism and representative government. The prominence of Jewish intellectuals such as Karl Marx and Leon Trotsky in the European socialist movements sparked criticisms of Jews for sacrificing patriotism to internationalism.

Although anti-Semitism was widespread before World War I, it was not a central issue. Most Judeophobes advocated solving the •Jewish problemŽ through assimilation or the restoration of special laws for the Jews, not through violent action. Only in backward Russia were there pogroms against the Jews. Racism, which implied that Jews were incapable of changing their ways, and social Darwinism, some forms of which predicted inevitable struggle between nations and races, gained adherents before 1914. But even their most radical exponents limited themselves to advocating Jewish emigration, and they were marginal figures without much influence.

World War I changed that. Anti-Semitism became entwined in the outraged nationalism of defeated Germany and in the quest for national identity in new states like Poland and Hungary and would-be states like the Ukraine and Croatia. Demagogues „ such as Adolf Hitler in Germany „ associated the Jews with economic hard times and the foreign oppressors. The growth of threatening Communist movements, some of them led by Jews, added grist to the anti-Jewish mill. Hitler, who had become a racial anti-Semite and social Darwinist as a young man in Vienna before 1914, advocated total solutions to Germany•s staggering economic and political problems. Once in power, his totalitarian Third Reich enforced the •leadership principleŽ of absolute obedience to authority. Like Lenin, Hitler had learned totalitarianism from total war between 1914 and 1918. Then the belligerents had employed political centralization, economic regimentation, and thought-control to mobilize all national resources in a terrible war of attrition. The Third Reich would

use them to destroy domestic rivals, to mobilize the German economy for aggressive war, and ultimately to exterminate the Jews.

All of these historical trends came together in 1941 with Hitler•s war against the Soviet Union. Having identified the Jews with Communism, the dictator•s crusade against •Judeo-Bolshevism• provided both cover and justification for genocide. In Hitler•s name, highly specialized bureaucrats used the latest industrial technology to make war on the Jews as part of the larger national struggle for survival. The techniques of mass slaughter developed in the First World War were brought to new levels of perfection, only this time poison gas would be reserved for noncombatants.

Post-Holocaust Victim Responses

Studies of Holocaust survivors have shown that virtually all suffered to some degree from a •survivor syndrome• that included acute anxiety, cognitive and memory disorders, depression, withdrawal, and hypochondria. Some became clinical cases, but most learned to live with their trauma and rebuild old lives or start new ones (Berger, 1988).

Nazi genocide decimated the once-thriving Jewish communities of Eastern Europe. Hundreds of thousands of Holocaust survivors, fearing Communism and renewed outbreaks of anti-Semitism, would not or could not return to their former homes. Stranded in displaced persons• camps in Germany and Austria, virtually all expected to emigrate to Palestine or the United States. The U.S. government, however, limited the entry of refugees and placed heavy pressure on Great Britain to admit large numbers of Jews to Palestine. When Britain chose instead to honor its promises to the Arab majority limiting Jewish immigration, guerrilla uprisings by militant Zionists and international pressure forced Britain to withdraw from the area. The Jewish state that emerged from the partition of Palestine by the United Nations might eventually have come into being anyway, but the creation of Israel in 1948 was greatly facilitated by the need to find a home for large numbers of Holocaust survivors and by the widespread sympathy for Zionism engendered by Hitler•s murderous actions.

The genocide of the Jews also had a major impact on Jewish religious thought. For Judaism, God•s covenant with the ancient Israelites bound Him and the Jewish people to the end of time. History was viewed as the expression of God•s will, working out a divine plan in which the Jews occupied a special place. Judaism conceived of God as merciful, loving, and omnipotent. How, then, could the dehumanization and mass murder of God•s people be explained?

For some Jewish scholars this question could not be confronted without challenging traditional Judaism. After Auschwitz, they reasoned, faith in the redeeming God of the covenant, an omnipotent and merciful deity,

was no longer possible. Nor did they find it credible any longer to regard the Jews as His chosen people. Just where this reappraisal was leading remained unclear, and other Jewish theologians rushed to the defense of continuity with covenantal Judaism. One such response was to reaffirm orthodoxy by placing the Holocaust within the tradition that heard God•s commanding voice in catastrophes such as the destruction of the First and Second Temples. Judaism endured then, and Jews must not hand Hitler a posthumous victory by losing faith as a result of his policies.

A second approach embraced the traditional covenant by distinguishing between God•s work and man•s. God, for reasons that would become evident at the end of time, voluntarily placed restraints on Himself in order to make history possible. Hence the genocide of the Jews was man•s responsibility, not God•s. A third line of thought accepted that the covenant had been shattered in the Holocaust but held out the possibility of renewing it by returning to the quest for redemption and redefining tradition by living authentically religious lives (Roth and Berenbaum, 1989, pp. 259…370). In all these viewpoints, the impact of genocide on Judaism and on the Jews• sense of their place in the world was unmistakable.

Other Post-Holocaust Responses

Among Christian thinkers, the Holocaust induced a profound reappraisal of the traditional view of the Jews as living examples of what happens to those who reject Jesus. It is unlikely that those who advanced this view ever intended it to culminate in violence against the Jews, nor would it have done so by itself. And yet, there was no explaining away the contributions made by Christian anti-Semitism to the climate of opinion that made the genocide of the Jews possible in the European heartland of ostensibly Christian Western civilization.

Protestant theologians demanded a critical reappraisal of traditional Christian teachings of contempt for Judaism. They called for a reinterpretation of church Christology and eschatology to affirm the authenticity of the religion of the Jews and Christianity•s vital roots in Judaism. The Catholic Church repudiated Judeophobia during the reforming pontificate of John XXIII. One of the key documents that emerged from the Second Vatican Council in 1965 recognized the common patrimony of Christianity and Judaism and denounced •hatred, persecutions, and displays of anti-Semitism, directed at Jews at any time and by anyone.Ž In 1998, the Vatican Commission for Religious Relations with the Jews issued the document •We Remember: A Reflection on the Shoah,Ž apologizing for the Catholic Church•s failures during the Holocaust. It aroused controversy, however, because it did not link traditional Christian teachings about the Jews to Nazi genocide. German

church scholars of both denominations confronted the lamentable failure of German Christians to stand up for the Jews under Hitler.

Germans as a whole, however, were slow to absorb the implications of the genocide of the Jews. Although a few called it an Allied fabrication, most repressed it and the whole memory of the now-discredited regime that had brought about their downfall. Although the new West German government in 1952 agreed to pay reparations to Jewish survivors, the West German courts were reluctant to pick up prosecutions of war criminals where the Allied jurists left off in 1949.

German consciousness of the Holocaust arose principally during the 1960s when a new generation began asking uncomfortable questions, primed by the sensational 1961 trial of SS Lieutenant Colonel Adolf Eichmann in Jerusalem. Since that time, critical examinations of the Holocaust and the regime that brought it about have entered the media and the school and university curricula. Perhaps the most concrete expression of Germany•s reaction to the human rights abuses of the Nazis was its liberal postwar asylum law that up until 1993 made Germany a haven for political refugees from many lands.

The Eichmann trial also caused the Holocaust to have a delayed impact on American Jewry. Before then, little attention was paid to survivors and GI liberators of the concentration camps. The effects of the trial were intensified by the Six-Day War of 1967, which strengthened the Jews• sense of solidarity with Israel and encouraged them to encounter the agony of their co-religionists under Hitler as a means for intensifying their Jewish identity. For some American Jews that suffering imposed a special obligation to become involved in all forms of civil rights movements.

Elsewhere, the genocide of European Jewry had a much smaller impact. Austrians, who had welcomed Hitler in 1938 and perpetrated anti-Semitic outrages, hid behind the cloak of having been passive objects of Nazi aggression. Eastern Europeans, and especially Poles, saw themselves as victims of Nazism on the same level as the Jews. Until recently that view was reinforced by the refusal of Communist governments to acknowledge that the Jews had been singled out for annihilation by the Nazis.

Debates about the Holocaust

How and when did the decision to exterminate the Jews come about? For a group of historians referred to as •intentionalists,Ž Hitler probably planned the extermination all along and certainly gave the order no later than early 1941, when the attack on the Soviet Union was being prepared. Opposing this interpretation is the •functionalistŽ view that the Nazi leadership replaced resettlement schemes with genocide only after the June 1941 attack on the Soviet Union. Some functionalists explain it as a result of euphoria over early victories in the summer. Others stress Hitler•s

frustration over stiffening Soviet resistance and the entry of the United States into the war later in the year. Most functionalists refer to a •decision-making processŽ that involved two or more increasingly radical orders made over several months. Although some functionalists believe that the central decisions were made by Hitler and other top Nazi leaders, others stress initiatives by local and regional officials facing hopelessly overcrowded ghettos and believing (correctly) that Hitler would not disapprove of mass murder. Since documents have been lost and orders were often given orally (and not in writing), the evidence is incomplete. Hence these debates promise to go on indefinitely (Browning, 2000 pp. 1…57).

Some Holocaust scholars have faulted the Jews for failing to offer armed resistance to the Germans or cooperating with them to some degree (Hilberg, 1985 pp. 1030…44). Other scholars have disputed this reasoning, stressing instead the Jews• almost total vulnerability to their tormentors and demanding a broader definition of resistance that embraces all efforts to keep Jews alive. These include measures to make Jews economically useful to the Germans, to smuggle food into the ghettos and Jews out of Nazi-dominated territory, and to provide the victims with morale-building cultural and social support (Bauer, 1979, pp. 26…40).

What motivated the perpetrators? A popular interpretation contends that the killers were •willing executionersŽ because their German culture had been deeply anti-Semitic long before Hitler came to power. (Goldhagen, 1996) Another stresses the immediate impact of Nazi indoctrination and ideology on the perpetrators (Bartov, 2003). A third viewpoint holds that the killers were mostly •ordinary menŽ who yielded to peer pressure and deferred to authority (Browning, 1992).

Controversy also surrounds the role of Holocaust bystanders, both those in German-controlled areas and those abroad. Some scholars have criticized the Poles in particular for failing to aid the Jews and even for actively betraying their Jewish neighbors (Gutman and Krakowski, 1986). The contrary view holds that the Poles were themselves so direly persecuted by the Germans that they had few opportunities to assist the Jews (Lukas, 1986). The United States and its allies have been condemned for doing little to rescue the Jews (Wyman, 1984). Opposing this is the view that, given German determination to kill all the Jews, there was nothing more that outsiders could have done except defeat Germany as quickly as possible (Rubinstein, 1997).

People•s Perspective of the Holocaust Today

The Holocaust is perhaps the one genocide of which every educated person has heard. Especially in Israel and the United States, its memory is kept alive by schools, the mass media, and the observance of national days of remembrance. A network of Holocaust memorial centers educates the

public at large, although they often come under pressure from groups that would vulgarize the genocide of the Jews by placing it at the service of their political agendas.

In the not-too-distant past, German consciousness of this genocide helped spark what has come to be called the "historians' debate." Conservative German historians suggested that their countrymen are much too mindful of past Nazi crimes. It is time, they said, to regard the Holocaust as one of many genocidal acts around the world and pay closer attention to more positive episodes in German history. These conservative scholars were strongly attacked by scholars who stressed the uniqueness of the Holocaust and the need for Germans to confront their heavy historical responsibility for it. It remains to be seen whether and how Germans' continuing preoccupation with the reunification of West and East Germany will affect their receptivity to neoconservative revisionism.

Austrians were shaken out of their historical amnesia in the 1980s by a scandal over their president, Kurt Waldheim. Although he was no war criminal, Waldheim clumsily attempted to cover up his youthful service in Hitler's armed forces; once revealed, it called attention to Austria's role in the atrocities of the Third Reich. Similarly, the 1987 trial in France of Klaus Barbie, the Gestapo "butcher of Lyon" who excelled in deporting the French to Auschwitz, raised uncomfortable questions about French complicity in Nazi crimes against the Jews. In Eastern Europe, however, the post-Communist revival of nationalism seems ill-suited to any similar reconsideration of the Holocaust.

Lessons of the Genocide of the Jews

German history dramatizes the insidious nature of racial prejudice. Many Germans were prejudiced in varying degrees, but only a minority wanted or expected actual violence against the Jews. Although the Nazis were deliberately vague about the practical implications of their anti-Semitism, they were sufficiently bold in their propaganda against the Jews that anyone supporting Hitler had at least to condone his Judeophobia. Moderate anti-Semitism made that possible and helped deliver the German nation into the hands of one of history's most malicious leaders. The Holocaust demonstrates that there is no safe level of racism. On the contrary, it teaches that any agenda that places economic and political concerns above human rights has the potential to result in disaster.

Once the genocide of the Jews began, there was little that outsiders could do to rescue them. Earlier, however, many of the victims might have been saved had other countries opened their doors to Jewish refugees. The time to aid the targets of racial bigotry is before their situation becomes untenable.

Those who were called upon to carry out the extermination process found that the modern state has effective ways of securing obedience and cooperation. Although the threat of coercion and reprisal was always present, compliance was more commonly assured by assigning each person only a single, highly specialized function, often not particularly significant in itself. Overall responsibility rested with someone else, and ultimately with Hitler. Unable or unwilling to answer for anything but their little spheres, well-educated and cultured individuals effectively placed themselves at the service of barbarism. Their participation made possible the bureaucratic organization of modern technology for mass extermination, this genocide's most characteristic feature. It challenges us all to develop sufficient moral sensitivity to take responsibility as individuals for all our fellow human beings.

Eyewitness Accounts: Holocaust „ The Jews

Although the Germans kept careful records of their genocide of the Jews, not all of those records survived the downfall of the Third Reich, and in any event they could never view events from the standpoint of the victims. Hence, oral histories of the Holocaust are indispensable sources. Fortunately, interviews of survivors and witnesses have been conducted in many countries. These interviews cover a wide range of topics, including Jewish life before the Holocaust, Nazi policies toward the Jews in many countries, ghettoization, slave labor, resistance, successful and unsuccessful attempts at escape, liberation, and efforts to start over. Naturally, Jewish survivors living in North America, Western Europe, and Israel are most heavily represented.

Among the first scholars to interview Holocaust survivors was the American psychologist David P. Boder (1949). During the summer of 1946, he wire-recorded interviews with 70 displaced persons, many of them Jews, at camps in France, Italy, Germany, and Switzerland. Eight of the interviews were translated and published in book form under the title I Did Not Interview the Dead. The interview that follows was conducted by Boder, but was not included in that volume.

The Holocaust can never be encapsulated in a single person's recollections. However, this interview with Nechama Epstein reveals a remarkable breadth of experiences, including survival in ghettos, slave labor camps, and extermination centers. Made soon after World War II ended, it has the advantages of freshness and immediacy. Epstein begins her story in 1941 when the 18-year-old native of Warsaw and her family were herded into the city's ghetto together with 350,000 other Jews. [Note: This interview is housed in the David Boder Collection at the Simon Wiesenthal Center in Los Angeles. Acquisition # 81-992, spools 95, 96, pp. 104A/2593-2668.]

Epstein: When the ghettos began, among us began a great fight of hunger ƒ. We began selling everything, the jewelry ƒ. We finished at the last at the featherbed ƒ.

Q: Who bought it?

A: People who were smuggling. They had. They were earning. Christians bought it ƒ. And then we could already see that it was very bad. We had nothing to sell any more. Eight people were living on a kilo [2.2 lbs.] of beets a day ƒ. With water. And every day, day by day, there remained less strength. We did not have any more strength to walk. My brother•s 4-year-old child did not have anything to eat. He was begging for a small baked potato. There was none to give him ƒ. And thus it lasted a year•s time. Until ƒ the first burned offering in my home was my father who, talking and walking, said he is fading from hunger, and died. My father was 60 years old ƒ. When my father died, there began among us a still greater hunger. A kilo of bread cost 20 zlotys ƒ. Every day there were other dead, small children, bigger children, older people. All died of a hunger death.

Q: What was done with the dead?

A: The dead were taken ƒ if one fell on the street ƒ he was covered. A stone was put on top, and thus he lay until ƒ. There was not enough time to collect the dead ƒ. And then people drove around with small carts. There were no funeral coaches any more, nothing. People drove around with small carts, collected the dead, loaded them up, took them to the cemetery, and buried them „ women, men, children, everybody in one grave ƒ. And we ƒ It had broken out, the first deportation that was in the year 1942 ƒ. I do not remember the exact month. In the beginning of winter [Note: sic. Between September 5 and 12, 1942] There came down a whole ƒ a few thousand Germans had come down, with weapons, with machine guns, with cannons, and they ƒ made a blockade. They surrounded from one end of the street to the other ƒ. They began to chase the people out of the houses ƒ. It was terrible. Many ran into the gates. They [the Germans] saw small children. They grabbed them by the legs and knocked them against the walls ƒ. The mothers saw what is being done to their children. They threw themselves out of windows ƒ. They [the Germans] went into a hospital, a Jewish hospital ƒ. And they began taking out all the sick that were there ƒ.

Q: Did you see it yourself?

A: Yes ƒ. I was being led to the rail terminal ƒ. The sick began jumping out the windows. So they [the Germans] ran on the roofs with machine guns and shot down at the sick. And all were shot. And we were

led away to the rail terminal. There I was the whole night. That night was a terrible one *f*.

Q: What sort of a building was it [the rail terminal]? *f*

A: A school was there at one time *f*. Then a depot was made there, and the Jews of the ghetto were all concentrated there. They were led in there, and there they were a night, two nights. They led a railroad siding to the street, and in trains [Jews were] transported to Treblinka *f*. At night Germans came in, threw hand grenades. At the people *f*. There were loud screams. We had no place to go out. One lay on top of the other; we had to *f e h f* relieve ourselves on the spot *f*. It was a frightful experience to live through that night *f*. In the morning they began to chase us out. •Alle aus!Ž *f* And they began to arrange in rows of five mothers with children, men, everybody together. And whoever could not *f* walk straight, he was immediately shot on the spot *f*. We got into the railroad cars. Two hundred persons were packed into one railroad car. Riding in these wagons everyone saw death before the eyes at any instance. We lay one of top of the other. One pinched pieces from another. We were tearing pieces.

Q: Why?

A: Because everybody wanted to save one's life. Everybody wanted to catch air. One lay suffocating on top of another *f*. We could do nothing to help ourselves. And then real death began *f*. After we had traveled for four hours, it became terribly hot. But so fast did the train travel that there was nothing *f*. We began thinking, the youths, what should we do. The mothers were telling their children they should save themselves, they should jump. Maybe in spite of all they will remain alive.

Q: Were the doors open?

A: Closed, everything! There was a small window with bars.

Q: Then how could one jump?

A: Many had along with them files, knives, hammers *f*. There had begun a great thirst. It became terribly hot. Everybody undressed *f*. There were small children who began to cry terribly. •Water!Ž *f* So we started banging on the doors. The Germans should give water *f*. We were screaming. So they began to shoot inside, from all four sides.

Q: On the stations?

A: Not on the sta-*f* while traveling. They were sitting on the roofs *f*. where one steps down, on the steps, Germans were sitting *f*. And they began to shoot inside. When they began to shoot inside, very many people were killed. I was sitting and looking how one gets hit by a bullet, another one gets hit by a bullet. I, too, expected to get hit in a moment *f*. And I

saved myself by hiding under the dead. I lay down underneath the dead. The dead lay on top of me. The blood of the killed was flowing over me ƒ. There lay a little girl of four years. She was calling to me, •Give me a little bit of water. Save meŽ And I could do nothing. Mothers were giving the children urine to drink ƒ.

Q: Is it really true?

A: I saw it! I did it myself, but I could not drink it. I could not stand it any more. The lips were burned from thirst ƒ. I thought this is it, I am going to die ƒ. So I saw that the mother is doing it, and the child said, •Mama, but it is bitter. I cannot drink itŽ ƒ So she said, •Drink, drinkŽ And the child did not drink it, because it was bitter. And I myself imitated it, but I was not able to drink it, and I did not drink it. But what then? There were girders inside the railroad cars ƒ. From the heat, perspiration was pouring from the girders. This we ƒ one lifted the other one up. It was high up, and we licked the moisture off the girders ƒ. It was very stifling. There was that little window, a tiny one, so we wanted to open it. Every time we opened it, they would shoot in ƒ. And when we wanted to open it, not minding that they were shooting, we did. There were small children, and they were all suffocating ƒ. We could not stand it any more.

Q: And then?

A: And thus I rode all night. Early in the morning „ it was about 2 in the morning, maybe 3, just before dawn „ my mother began crying very much ƒ. She begged us to save ourselves. The boys took a saw and cut a hole „ it [the door] was locked with a chain from the other side ƒ. And we took the bars off the windows ƒ. And we started to jump. No. What does •to jumpŽ mean? One pushed out the other one ƒ.

Q: Aha. Did the Germans let them?

A: They did not let them. They immediately started shooting on the spot. When I jumped out I fell into a ditch ƒ. And I remained lying completely unconscious. And the railroad car ƒ the train passed ƒ. I came to. It was at night, around three in the morning, so I ƒ.

Q: And your mother herself did not jump.

A: No. The mother could not. With the small child she could not jump. And a woman of 60, she could not jump ƒ.

Q: And then? ƒ

A: I came to. I got back my thoughts, so I went to look for my brother ƒ. In the meantime there arrived some sort of a Polish militia man ƒ and told me that I should quickly run away from here, because the Gestapo is all around here. I will be shot here. I should run away. He told me that I

had jumped near Radzin and Lukow *f*. So he told me to go to the Miedzyrzec ghetto. There is a ghetto with Jews *f*. I began to walk on foot toward Miedzyrzec *f*. When I jumped out I met a little girl. She had also jumped. She had her entire leg completely torn open. While jumping she had caught on a piece of iron, and she tore open her leg *f*. And the two of us started to walk. Yes, after getting up I went to look for my brother. I had gone about ten feet. He lay shot. He had a bullet here in the heart *f*. I could not move away from him, but that Christian [the militia man] said that I should go away quickly. The struggle for life was stronger than anything. I left my brother on the road. I do not know what happened to his bones. And I went on. I had walked with that little girl for about three hours. Dark it was. Through woods, through fields we crawled, crawled, crawled *f*.

Q: That little girl was a stranger?

A: A strange little girl. I don't know at all that little girl *f*. She was about 14 years old *f*. And the little girl with the bleeding leg *f* for terror she did not feel the pain *f*. After having walked thus for perhaps ten kilometers, the two of us remained sitting where the road leads into a forest. And we could not walk any more. The child said that she cannot walk any more. The leg hurts her. We don't know what will be. In the meantime I had heard gentiles saying that Germans prowl on this road looking for Jews. And I saw it is bad. With the child I cannot walk. So I took the child. I did not know what to do. I carried her perhaps *f* perhaps, who knows, a kilometer or two. I myself did not have any strength. I was barefoot. My shoes had remained in the railroad car, because I had undressed. I did not have the time to put anything on. I was completely naked and barefoot. And that child remained in the field. And I went away. I could not help any more at all. The child had fallen, and I could not do anything to help any more. I went away. [A pause]

Q: Go on.

A: I had walked thus for about 20 kilometers. I do not know myself how many kilometers I had covered. I came to the Miedzyrzec ghetto *f*. I went in. It was a day after a large deportation. So I went in *f*. Entering the ghetto, it became faint before my eyes. It was at night. I did not have anywhere to go. When arriving there, I regretted very much that I had jumped off the train, because at every step, wherever I went, shot people were lying. Broken windows, all stores looted. Terrible things happened there *f*. In that ghetto I lived eight months.

Q: Did you *f* ?

A: *f* in deathly fear.

Q: *f* register with the *f* ?

A: There was a Jewish Community Council. I registered with the Jewish Community Council, and I [just sat there and waited]. It was not worth it. Every four weeks there were new deportations. From the small towns all around and around Jews were brought in there. And there was a sort of an assembly depot for Jews. And from there all the Jews were being sent to Treblinka. There I lived through three terrible deportations. During the first deportation I hid in an open attic and lay there for four weeks. I lived just on raw beets *f*. I did not have anything to drink. The first snow fell then, so I made a hole in the roof and pulled in the hand a little snow. And this I licked. And this I lived on.

Q: Were you there alone?

A: No. We were about *f* t here were about 20 people there. There was a father with a mother with child. There were some others *f*. We had nothing to eat. Thus we lived four weeks. We found raw peas which we ate. I had pared the beets, and afterwards I gathered the rinds of the beets, because I had nothing more to eat. And thus I nourished myself for four weeks, till there was a deportation. It lasted four weeks, that deportation. After the deportation we came down from the attic. At that time a lot of Jews had also been shot. Coming down from the attic, it was a terrible thing to see. We had to *f* we were taken to work removing the dead.

Q: Who were the SS? Germans and who else? *f*

A: There were a few Ukrainians, too, but not many *f*. All the streets were splashed with blood. In every ditch Jewish blood had been poured. We went down. We had nothing to eat. We started looking for something to eat so we *f*

Q: Was there no council, no Community Council?

A: At the time the chairman had been taken away. The chairman had been shot. He was taken out first. He was the first *f*. A very fine man. He was taken out the first „ with the wife, with the child. They were told to turn around, and they were shot. There were Jewish police, too *f*. Jewish policemen. So they [the Jews of the ghetto] were shot little by little. During each deportation ten, twenty were taken and also transported into the railroad cars. And they were shot, sent away. Those who escaped were shot *f*. So there was nobody to turn to. Everybody was afraid to go out. Many were lying [in hiding] there still a few weeks after the deportation. They did not know that it is already safe *f*. When we came down it was sort of peaceful for about two months. For two months time we lived on that which the Jewish Council gave to those who were strangers [from other towns and waiting for deportation] *f*. They gave them every day a kilo of potatoes and a piece of bread. The food was not important, because it was

f every day we lived in great fear. People walking in the streets were shot at.

Q: Did you have relatives there? Did you know anyone?

A: Nobody. I was all alone *f*. Mine had all gone away. I had remained all alone. I had to support myself. By how did I support myself? I carried water.

Q: For whom?

A: For the Jews who lived there I carried water. And for that I received a few pennies. And that is how I supported myself *f*. In brief, it dragged on till winter, till the Birth of Christ.

Q: That is when? Christmas?

A: Yes. Then there was a frightful night to live through. There came down drunken Gestapo from Radzin *f*. And in the middle of the night we were asleep in a room. There were perhaps, who knows, 30 people altogether in that house where we were *f*. And they entered. I was sleeping there with two little girls. These children had also escaped from the Radzin ghetto. Two girls, little ones. One was about eight years old, and one about six years. I was sleeping with them in the room. There were other girls. In our room there were about 15 persons. In the middle of the night we hear *f* shooting. We lay in great deathly fear. And they were knocking on our door. And I did not know why they could not enter through the door. In the morning I got up. I opened the door. A shot person fell into *f* my room, into the house where we were lying. When we came in [into the other rooms] there lay shot all who were living in those rooms. Two children with a father who were sleeping in bed, everything was shot. A man lay with his stomach completely torn open, his guts outside on the ground. And later Jewish police came in. The Germans had left, and we had to clean up the blood and all that *f*. During the second deportation I was not able to hide any more. I was led away to a synagogue. There was a large synagogue. There, all the Jews were assembled. In the synagogue it was terrible. They simply came in „ if they heard a cry, they shot in. They threw grenades. They beat. They struck. They did not give anything to drink. We had to relieve ourselves on the same place were we slept. I was there a whole night. I saw it was bad. I did not want to go to death. I went on fighting against it. I went over to a window. It was on the first floor. We took two towels, I and another girl. We lowered the towels from the windows, and we crawled down and escaped down into a cellar, and there we again lived through the second deportation *f*. Again we lived [there] a few months. During the last deportation I was not able to hide any more. I was led away into a transport. It was a beautiful summer day *f*. It was May Day *f*. We were

loaded on railroad cars. We were led through the streets exactly like we had been driven to Treblinka. They shot at those who did not walk in line. Many people fell, children. [We were] running fast. I myself received from a German *f* a [rubber] hose over the head. I got a large bump. I did not pay attention to the pain, but I ran fast *f*.

Q: What then?

A: We were put into the railroad cars. It was the same as to Treblinka, shooting. We had nothing to drink. We drove a day and a night. We were taken down to Majdanek. Many were saying that we were being taken to Treblinka, but the direction was toward Majdanek. We were taken off at the Majdanek camp. We were all lined up. There were many who were shot. They were taken down, those who were still alive. They were taken down on the square, and they were immediately shot to death. The mothers were put separately, the children separately, the men separately, the women separately *f*. Everything was separated. The women, the young women, were taken to the Majdanek camp. The men were taken to another camp. The children and the mothers were led to the crematory. All were burned *f*. We never laid eyes on them again *f*. I was in Majdanek two months. I lived through many terrible things. We had nothing to eat. We were so starved. At first we did not know yet what such a thing as a camp means. In the morning, at 6 in the morning, came in a German, an SS woman, and started to chase us with a large strap, beating everybody. We were lying on the beds, grieved, with great worries, thinking where the mothers were, where the fathers and the children were. We were crying. Then came in a German woman at 6 in the morning with a large strap and beat us over the head to go out to the inspection. At inspection it could happen that we would stand four, five hours.

Q: Why so long?

A: People were being kept so long because everybody did not know yet what *f* what this was all about. Many children of about 16 years hid in the attic. They were afraid to come out. They thought they were going to be shot *f*. And for that, that they had hidden, we stood five hours as a punishment. Later nobody hid any more. They said whoever will hide himself will be shot. And so I was in Majdanek two months.

Q: Did you work there?

A: Yes. We were sent to do garden work. We were sent to carry the shit which *f*. There were no toilets there, so we carried it in buckets. We were not given anything to eat. They were hitting us over the legs. They were beating us over the heads. The food consisted of 200 grams [7 ounces] of bread a day, and a little soup of water with [leaves of] nettles. This was the food. And I was there two months' time. The hunger there was so great

that when a cauldron of food was brought, we could not wait for it to be distributed, but we threw ourselves on the food, and that food would spill on the ground, and, with the mud, we ate it. After having been there two months … they began to select the healthy, healthy children who are able to work …. They tested the heart. Whoever had the smallest blemish on the body did not come out [any more] from there. Only 600 women were picked out, and I was among them. This was in … July …. I was taken away to Auschwitz. The conditions were then already a little better. Fewer were being packed into a railroad car. They were putting in already 60 to a wagon …. Arriving at Auschwitz, we were led into a large hall before taking us to be bathed. All the women had their hair cut off ….

Q: That was the first time you had that done?

A: For the first time … just in Auschwitz …. So I had my hair shorn off, and they tattooed numbers on us …. We had very great anguish, because we had our hair cut off. How can a woman live without hair? They took us and dressed us in long pants …

Q: Who cut off your hair?

A: Our hair was cut off by women who were working there.

Q: Yes. What then? They cut it from the whole body?

A: Completely. On the body, here [she points], everywhere, everywhere, everything …. And we were dressed in trousers and blouses. We were terribly hungry ….

Q: What did you do there? …

A: We went to work in a detail which was called the death detail. Why? This I will tell, too …. We went to work, the 600 women from Majdanek. It took a month, and there remained no more than 450. We died out of hunger …. We worked carrying stones on barrows, large stones. To eat they did not give us. We were beaten terribly. There were German women who were also prisoners [i.e., prisoner foremen]. They were imprisoned for prostitution …. They [the prostitutes] used to beat us terribly. They said that every day they must kill three, four Jews. And food they did not give us …. We carried stones on … barrows. We carried sand, stones. We were building a highway „ women! The work was very hard. We got heavily beaten with rubber hoses over the legs from those German women overseers, those who also were imprisoned, prisoners …. Thus I labored for three months, until I became sick. I had gotten malaria …. I went around for two weeks with a 41-degree fever [about 105 degrees F]. I was afraid to go to the sick-ward. There was such a sick-ward …. I was afraid to go, because it was said that if one goes there one does not come back any more, one is taken away to the crematory …. I saw that I cannot stand it any more. The legs were buckling under me. Each day I got more and

more beaten, because I did not work. I could not eat any more *f*. I would accumulate bread from one day to the next. I could not eat it any more. I gave it away to other girls *f*. I decided to go away to the sick-ward *f*. There were no medicines. I lay around for about four weeks without medicine *f*. There was a doctor, also a prisoner, a Jewess *f*. She was not able to help at all. She had no medicaments. None were given to her. And in this way I pulled through the crisis *f*.

Q: And then?

A: I lay around in such a way for four weeks. I did not have anything to drink *f*. I pleaded for a drink of water. They did not want to give it to me, because the water there was contaminated. It was rusty from the pipes. If one drank that water one became still more sick. I passed the crisis, and during that time there were three sub *f* selections. They came to take sick [people] to the crematory. During each time I lived through much deathly fear. My whole method of saving myself was that I hid myself. Christian women were lying there, so I climbed over to the Christians, into their beds, and there I always had the good fortune to hide.

Q: Did the Christian women let you?

A: Yes. There was a Christian woman, a very fine one *f*. She was also very sick. She was already near death, that Christian woman.

Q: Why was she in the concentration camp?

A: She was there for political causes *f*. And *f* s he was not taken. Christians were not taken to the crematory, just Jews *f*. [Note: Epstein was mistaken on this point.] They had it much better. They received aid from the Red Cross. They received packages from home, and we nothing. We had to look on how they ate. If there was one, a kind one, she would occasionally give us, the sick, something. And that is how I was going on saving myself in the sick-ward. My sickness was very terrible to describe. Complications set in afterwards. I had many boils on the body. I had neglected scabies *f*. And I had nothing with which to cure myself. At one time I lay already completely dead, that the Christian women cried *f* t hey made an outcry that I am already going to die. So there came up to me a doctor, and she brought some sort of an injection, and she gave it to me.

Q: A Jewish doctor?

A: Yes *f*. [Note: The SS routinely used Jewish doctors to treat fellow inmates who fell ill. This illustrates the tension that existed between the need to provide slave labor and the ultimate goal of genocide.] After that injection I became a little stronger, and I got out of bed. I nursed the other sick. Much strength I did not have, but I was already able to walk around a little. Three weeks had passed. There came an order to deliver the names of all the sick, everyone who had scabies *f*. Then one knew that he is for sure

going to his death. And I had it, too. I was very worried, and I knew that now has come the moment that I have to go ƒ. I did not sleep at night. I could not eat, because I knew that all my misery, all my suffering was for nothing, because now had come my end ƒ. But it was not so. The same day when they had ordered to make the list of us, they came to that sick-ward where there were only typhus patients, and all were taken out, the entire sick-ward. Not one remained. It was on the night of Yom Kippur.

Q: What was done with them?

A: All were taken, undressed, nude, wrapped in blankets, thrown in the ƒ t ruck like sheep, shut the trucks, and driven away in the direction of the crematory. We all went and looked, so we saw how the women [on the trucks] were singing Kol Nidrei ƒ. T hey were singing the Hatikvah When they said good-by, they said, •We are going to death, and you take revenge for usŽ ƒ T hey are still pleading to be left. They are young. There was a girl 18 years old, and she was crying terribly. She said that she is still so young, she wants to live, they should leave her, they should give her some medicine to heal her scabies. And nothing helped. They were all taken away.

Q: How come you were not included? You also had scabies.

A: I was not yet in the line ƒ. Everything went according to the line ƒ.

Q: How many sick were taken?

A: Four hundred persons. An entire block ƒ.

Q: Could the crematory be seen burning?

A: Of course! When we went out at night we saw the entire sky red [from] the glow of the fire. Blood was pouring on the sky. We saw everything. We knew. When we went to the shower hall we saw the clothing of the people who were not any more lying there. The clothing was still there. We recognized the clothing of the people who had left and returned no more ƒ. So that we knew. It was 100 percent! We saw every night the burning crematory. And the fire was scored it was gushing forth blood towards the sky. And we could not help at all. Sometimes, when we would go out at night to relieve ourselves, we saw how illuminated ƒ how transports were brought with mothers and children. The children were calling to the mothers.

Q: That was in Birkenau. [Note Birkenau was the extermination division of Auschwitz.]

A: It was to Birkenau that they brought huge transports from Hungary, from Holland, from Greece ƒ from all over Europe ƒ. And all that was burned in Auschwitz. The children they burned immediately, and from a certain number of people, from thousands, a hundred might be taken out,

and they were brought to the camp ƒ. And the rest were burned ƒ. The next morning a German doctor appeared. I became very scared. All who were in the block became scared „ we were all sick from malaria „ because it was said that the others were taken yesterday and us they will take today ƒ. In the meantime he came with a list, and called out my name and another 12 Jewish names, and to that another 50 Christian women ƒ. And he said that we who are sick with malaria, who show a positive sickness „ because there were positive and non-positive ƒ. Because on me was made a ƒ a ƒ a ƒ

Q: A blood test?

A: ƒ a blood test, and it showed that I had a positive malaria. So they told us that we were going to Majdanek, back to Majdanek ƒ. I did not believe it. In the evening all of us were taken, 70-odd people. We were put on a truck and driven to the train. Riding on the truck all of us believed that we were going to the crematory. We had thought that it will be an open truck, and we will be able to see where we are being taken to, but ultimately it turned out to be quite different. We were taken in a closed one. But [as we were driven] past the guard we heard ƒ •70-odd prisoners for Majdanek.Ž ƒ So we already knew that we were being taken to Majdanek ƒ. We were put ƒ on the station, we were led into a freight car, which is used for transporting cattle. We were all put in. Among [us] were many ethnic German women who had also been imprisoned there in the camp ƒ.

Q: Because for what?

A: They were for prostitution.

Q: How did they behave, those women?

A: Very mean. Very mean. They beat so. They hit so. One can•t at all a imagine.

Q: [Fighting] among themselves?

A: No they beat us, us ƒ. And upon coming into the railroad car they made such a little piece of a ghetto. They put us into a small part of the railroad car ƒ. And for themselves they took the bigger part. And in our part we were squeezed one on top of another. We nearly crushed ourselves to death. En route two girls died. They were very weak. We had no food. And they were full of scabies ƒ. They could not stand it any more. En route ƒ they were taken down in the middle of the night in Majdanek, and they were dead ƒ. We arrived there, 11 Jews ƒ. When I was there the first time there were still 30,000 Jews ƒ. A few days later we found out that there were Jews here. So one Jew sneaked away ƒ and came to us She wanted to see the Jews who had arrived. From them we learned about a most sad misfortune ƒ. On the 3rd of November it was. At 4 in the morn-

ing there came down the entire Gestapo with many policemen, with many SS men. They surrounded the entire Majdanek camp and called out all the people. There were 23,000 people.

Q: Not only Jews, everybody *f*.

A: Just the Jews. All the Christians remained in the blocks *f*. The Jews were taken out and told to form rows of five. The music played very violently and *f*

Q: Was it Jewish music?

A: No. Polish music. German music *f*. And the people were told to go up [to the place where] the crematory had been installed. Two days before, 80 men had been taken out. And they were told to dig very large pits. And nobody knew what these pits were for *f*. Ultimately it turned out that those pits were for the people who had dug them *f*. They went up in rows of fives, children, mothers, old, young, all went up to the fifth sector [of the camp]. Coming to the graves, there stood senties with Tommy guns and with machine guns. And they told them all to undress. Young women flung themselves at the senties and began to plead that he should shoot them with good aim so that they should not suffer *f*. In the head *f* not in the stomach or the leg so that they should suffer *f*. And the senties laughed at that and said, "Yes, yes. For you such a death is too good. You have to suffer a little." And not everyone was hit by the bullet. And from them were separated 300 women, those who had remained whom we had met. And these women had to clean up next morning „all those who remained „the shot. They were doused with gasoline and were burned.

Q: In the pits?

A: In the pits. And afterwards they had to take the clothes which everybody recognized from her mother from her sister, from her children. They cried with bloody tears. They had to take those clothes and sort them. And everybody was thinking, "Why did I not go together with them? Why did we remain alive?" *f*

Q: How had they been selected?

A: They came to the square where they were standing and picked out the most beautiful women *f* the youngest, the healthiest women were separated *f*. And 55 men *f*. Those men were prisoners of war *f*.

Q: Were they Christians or Jews?

A: Jews. All Jews *f*. And these Jews had remained there, these 55 Jews who helped us very much „[we] the women who had returned from Auschwitz *f*. We were completely non-human [i.e., dehumanized]. We

looked like skeletons. And they [the 55 Polish-Jewish POWs] put us on our feet. They helped us very much.

Q: What could they do?

A: They had ƒ in the things that they sorted from the dead was very much gold, very many diamonds, whole bars of gold. This they gave away. There were Christians there ƒ. And the Christians received food packages from home, from the Red Cross. So they [the Polish Jewish POWs] gave it that away, and they received pieces of bread, whatever one could. And with that they nourished us.

Q: Tell me, you were all searched. They looked and they searched, and one had to undress. How was it possible to find gold on the dead? ƒ

A: A Jew had it sewn in their drawers. A Jew had it in the sole of the shoes. A Jew had it concealed in the hair. On a Jew they could never ƒ. they searched and they searched, and they did not find ƒ. With that the Jews would save themselves. They always had something on themselves ƒ.

Q: And they did not hand it over to the Gestapo?

A: No. It made no difference any more. Who wanted to go to the Gestapo? We knew today we live and tomorrow we die ƒ. It was already all the same. At that time we were not afraid of anything any more, because we knew that our turn was coming now and now we have to perish ƒ. Later, ƒ when we became healthier, we were transferred to the fifth sector and we lived together in one block with these 300 women ƒ.

Q: You had recovered from the scabies?

A: Yes, I became cured, because these men took from the Christians salves which they received from the Red Cross, stole it from them and brought to us ƒ.

Q: Why did they bring you over there? ƒ To Majdanek, these who had positive malaria?

A: Because they ƒ it was [just] a whim on their part. Thirty thousand they burned and 13 they led to life ƒ. That is how it was being done by them ƒ. And I had the luck that I was among these 13, and that I had been taken out ƒ. And we could not believe it ourselves ƒ. And we were in Majdanek also thinking any day we will be burned. There are no Jews. To the crematory we saw them bringing every day other ƒ children, women ƒ. They were brought and immediately burned, from Lublin, from all over, from the entire Lublin region. Christians ƒ.

Q: They were not gassed?

A: Gassed first and then burned. If there was no gas, they [the SS] would shoot and then burn [them]. We even heard shots, too, because it

was very near *f*. And we were there together with them and we lived together with them. The women told us about those tragedies. It was so frightful. They cried so terribly that it was *f*. They would just repeat, "Are there still Jews in the world?" We thought there were no more Jews, only a few have remained. We thought that they have already exterminated all the Jews from Europe, from all Poland. And we told them there is still a camp in Auschwitz, they are still burning Jews every day *f*.

Q: And then?

A: After having been eight months in Majdanek, the second time, an order came. These women, the 300, the women survivors of the action, must go to Auschwitz. And we, the 13, of whom had remained 11, go someplace else, because we have been tattooed, and they [are] not. They began crying very much *f*. Two days later we were led out to Plaszow *f*. Near Cracow, a [forced labor] camp *f*. They had added yet 300 women from Radom *f*. There were little children, too. Pregnant women were there, and they led us away to Plaszow. Arriving in Plaszow, they took away the small children. They took away the pregnant women. There was a famous hill. They were taken to the top and undressed nude. There were no crematories. They were shot, and afterwards we carried boards and made a fire, and they were all burned.

Q: You yourself carried the *f*

A: Yes I carried the board! We carried the boards, and we saw how they shot them. If anyone had gold teeth, they pulled the teeth out.

Q: You saw that yourself?

A: Saw myself. I had afterwards still worse [experiences]. Before leaving Plaszow *f*. It was on the Jewish cemetery. Where the cemetery was once *f* they made a camp *f*. We walked on the tombstones. With the tombstones they made streets. They [the SS] shot people every day at first. A Jew was pushing a barrow with stones. He struggled. So he [the guard] did not like the way he pushed it. He was instantly shot *f*.

Q: And then?

A: While in Plaszow, a transport was brought with small children from Krasnik. I was all alone. I had it very hard, but I remedied it a little. I went to scrub floors in the blocks. People who had [something] gave me a little piece of bread to eat. When they brought the children I took a great liking to a little girl. That little girl was from Krasnik. Her name was Chaykele Wasserman.

Q: How come children were brought without mothers?

A: The mothers had been *f*. It was like this. They had liquidated the camp. The Russians were approaching Krasnik, so they liquidated the

camp. And that child•s mother had escaped, and she was shot. And that child had come alone, without a mother, to the lager. And many children „ t hey were all without mothers, because the mothers were immediately taken away. And the children separately. And the children were ƒ t hey did not have enough time to take along the mothers. They grabbed the children and ran with them. And the children were brought to Plaszow. I took that little girl. I was with that little girl for four months. That child was very dear to me. I loved it very much. That child could not go anyplace without me. I was thinking I shall live through this war. I will be very happy with such a pretty and smart little girl, because it had hurt me very much that I had lost my brother•s children. And I cheered myself up a little with that child ƒ.

Q: What did the child do there all day in the camp?

A: The child did nothing. The child went around ƒ on t he street. It was not even called to inspection. Sometimes it went to inspection, and sometimes not ƒ. After a time, they [the guards] came and took away from us all the children, without exception. And that child was very clever. She had a very clever head on her.

Q: How old was she?

A: She was eight years old ƒ. She hid in a latrine, that is in a privy ƒ. All the children were taken away. People came and told me to go there, Chaykele is calling me, she cannot crawl out from the hole. And I went and pulled out the child. The child stank very badly. I ƒ washed her up, dressed her in other clothes, and brought her to the block. And that child ƒ

Q: You have to excuse me. When a child hides in a latrine ƒ did the other people know when they went to the latrine ƒ

A: No. When inspection was over [and] the children were taken away, women went to the latrine. This was a women•s latrine. So the child began yelling they should call me and I should take her out ƒ. And I was instantly called, and I pulled the child out. When I pulled her out she was overjoyed with me, and she said she was a very clever little girl. •Now I shall already remain alive.Ž You see? ƒBut, alas, it was not so. After a time we were ƒ T he Russians were approaching Plaszow ƒ and we were again dragged away. I was the second time taken to Auschwitz ƒ. We arrived in the middle of the night.

Q: And the child with you?

A: The child I took along. What will be, will be. I kept the child with me. We came here at night. All night long the child did not sleep. She did not want to eat anything. She just kept asking me, •Does gas hurt?Ž ƒ I f not, [then] she is not afraid. But I cried very much. I said, •Go, you little silly one. There is a children•s home. There you will beŽ She says, •Yes, a

children•shome! You see,here is the crematory. It burns. There they will burn me.Ž It was very painful for me. I could not stand it. I could not sleep. But suddenly the child fell asleep in my arms. I left the child lying on the ground and went over to some man who worked there in the shower-bath, and I pleaded with him. I lied to him. I said it was my sister•s child, and he should see to help me save the child. So he said, •You know what? Tomorrow morning you will all be undressed nude, and you will all be led before the doctor. He will make such a selection. And the child ƒ you will hide in your rags when you will undress.Ž And that child was very clever. She did not even take off the shoes. She hid in the rags. And I was waiting thus „ it was in the morning „ t ill the evening, till the child will come out. And in the evening I saw the child all dressed up ƒ When they took away all the children ƒ t he child got out from under the rags and came to me. The German doctor had left, and the child came to me.

Q: And who ƒ how did she wash herself and everything?

A: In the shower-bath there were Jewish women, there where the bath was. She was washed. Clothes there were very plentiful, from the many children [who] had been burned there, thousands, hundreds of thousands of children. She had been dressed very nicely. And the child came to me with great joy. •See,Ž she says, •again I have remained alive. I shall again remain alive.Ž

Q: And how ƒ you too were left [alive]?

A: I bathed and was sent out ƒ. They beat badly. We were chased out. I waited. It was a huge transport of a few thousand people, so I waited till the last. Everybody had gone to the camp, to the block and I waited for the child to come out ƒ. And together with the child I left for the block ƒ. While being in the block, not long, a short time, three days, it was very bad. It was cold. They chased us out bare to inspection. There was nothing to eat ƒ. The cold was so cutting, one could get sick. And the child, too, had to go to inspections ƒ. The child was counted as a grown-up person, but that child had much grief. She was not numbered ƒ. [Note : Only those who were to be kept alive were tattooed.] After the three days there came a doctor ƒ. And he again selected women to be sent to Germany. I was taken away. And that child cried very much. When she saw that I was being taken, she cried very much and screamed, •You are leaving me. Who will be my mother now?Ž But, alas, I could not help any. I could do nothing with the German. I went away and left the child ƒ.

Q: Did you ask them ƒ t hey should ƒ

A: I asked, so he said, •If you want to go to the crematory, you can go with the child. And if not, then go away from the child.Ž ƒ

Q: And so you don•t know what happened to the child.

A: I don•t know anything [about] what happened to the child. I know only one thing: I left. The child said good-bye to me, and I was led away to Bergen-Belsen *f*. Arriving in Bergen-Belsen, there reigned a terrible hunger. People were dying *f*

Q: Do you remember in which month, in what year? *f*

A: The last month. In the year 1944, in winter *f*. I was in Bergen-Belsen three months. The hunger was so great „ a terror. We went to the garbage heap and picked the peels from the turnips that were cooked in the kitchen. And if one chanced to grab a turnip *f* I was very daring. I did everything. I fought strongly to stay alive. So I got out through the gate, where they were shooting, and grabbed a turnip. And a minute later they shot a girl who grabbed a turnip. I ran into the block.

Q: Did the turnip lay outside the gate?

A: No. Outside the gate there was located the kitchen *f* with *f* with wires so one would not be able to get near *f*. So I opened the gate and go in. I risked it. I knew that the moment I grab it the bullet may hit me, but the hunger was stronger than [the fear of] death *f*. And I went and brought such a turnip. I returned to the block. People, corpses, dead ones, assaulted me, that I should give them [some] too. I shared it with them. We rejoiced. We finished the meal and went to sleep. After having been [there] three months, a German came again, and again selected Jews. I did not know where to [turn]. But I only wanted to go on, on. It always seemed to me here it is no good, there it will be better. And again I traveled. They collected 200 Hungarian women, 300 Polish women, and we were led away to Aschersleben *f*.

Q: What was there?

A: There was an airplane factory *f*. There everything had been bombed *f*. There was a camp commander, a very mean one. There were foreigners *f*. Prisoners of war *f* Dutch, French, Yugoslavian. [Note: After about two months, the camp was evacuated on foot as American forces approached.]

Q: Where did you go?

A: Very terrible was the road. On the way many were shot, those who couldn•t walk. We didn•t get [anything] to eat. They dragged us from one village to another, from one town to another. We covered 60, 70 kilometers a day.

Q: How many people were you?

A: Five hundred *f* . Only women. Two hundred fell en route *f*. I stood and looked how the camp commander took out his revolver, and [to each] one who couldn•t walk he said, •Come with me,Ž took her aside and shot

her *f*. We endured all that till they dragged us as far as Theresienstadt *f*. [Note: Theresienstadt was the model Nazi ghetto, in Czechoslovakia, about 260 km. from Aschersleben.] Arriving in Theresienstadt we were completely in tatters. From the blankets we had to cover ourselves with, we made socks, we dressed ourselves. We were very dirty. We were badly treated. We were beaten. They screamed at us. •Accursed swines! You are filthy. What sort of a people are you?Ž *f* We were thinking how would they look if they were on our level *f*. There were only Jews, many Jews from Germany. There were very many old women who were mixed [intermarried], Germans and Jews. They had Jewish sons, SS men *f*. They were serving Hitler, and she was Jewish; the husband was a German. And that is the reason they remained alive. All old, grey women. And all the children with mothers had been transported to Auschwitz before *f*. There was very little food. And the Germans prepared a large crematory. They had heard that the front is again approaching. They prepared a large crematory, but they did not have enough time to do it *f*. [Note : Theresienstadt was liberated on May 8, 1945.] We heard the Russian tanks were here. And we didn•t believe it ourselves. We went out, whoever was able. There were a lot of sick who couldn•t go. We went out with great joy, with much crying *f*.

Q: And then?

A: But now there began a real death. People who had been starved for so many years *f*. The Russians had opened all the German storehouses, all the German stores, and they said, • Take whatever you want.Ž People who had been badly starved, they shouldn•t have eaten *f*. And the people began to eat, to eat too much, greedily *f*. Hundreds of people fell a day. After the liberation, two, three days after the liberation, there had fallen very many people. In about a month, half of the camp had fallen. And nothing could be done about it *f*. There were full stables full with dead. People crawled over the dead. It stank terribly. There was raging a severe typhus. And I, too, got sick. I lay four weeks in the hospital *f*

Epstein recovered from typhus and returned to Warsaw where she married and made preparations to emigrate to Palestine.

References

Bartov, Omer (2003). Germany•s War and the Holocaust. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Bauer, Yehuda (1979). The Jewish Emergence from Powerlessness. Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

Berger, Leslie (1988). •The Long-Term Psychological Consequences of the Holocaust on the Survivors and Their Offspring.Ž pp. 175…221. In Randolph L. Braham (Ed.) The Psychological Perspectives of the Holocaust and of its Aftermath. Boulder, CO: Social Science Monographs.

Binion, Rudolph (1976). Hitler Among the Germans. New York: Elsevier.

Boder, David (1949). I Did Not Interview the Dead. Urbana: The University of Illinois Press.

Browning, Christopher R. (1992). Ordinary Men: Reserve Police Battalion 101 and the Final Solution in Poland. New York: HarperCollins.
Browning, Christopher R. (2000). Nazi Policy, Jewish Workers, German Killers. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
Fein, Helen (1979). Accounting for Genocide: National Responses and Jewish Victimization During the Holocaust. New York: Free Press.
Goldhagen, Daniel Jonah (1996). Hitler's Willing Executioners. New York: Alfred A. Knopf.
Gutman, Yisrael, and Krakowski, Shmuel (1986). Unequal Victims: Poles and Jews During World War Two. New York: Holocaust Library.
Hilberg, Raul (1985). The Destruction of the European Jews (Three volumes). New York: Holmes and Meier.
Lukas, Richard C. (1986). The Forgotten Holocaust: The Poles Under German Occupation, 1939…1944. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky.
Roth, John K., and Berenbaum, Michael (1989). Holocaust: Religious and Philosophical Implications. New York: Paragon House.
Rubinstein, William D. (1997). The Myth of Rescue. London: Routledge.
Waite, Robert G. L. (1977). The Psychopathic God, Adolf Hitler. New York: Basic Books.
Wyman, David (1984). The Abandonment of the Jews: America and the Holocaust, 1941…1945. New York: Pantheon.

Western and Eastern European sites of Nazi camps

CHAPTER 5
Holocaust: The Gypsies

SYBIL MILTON

The mass murder of between one-quarter and one-half million Roma and Sinti (Gypsies) during the Holocaust has been under-represented in current historiography about Nazi genocide. Instead, suspicion, prejudice, and stereotypes have continued to dominate historical literature about this subject.[1] Thus, Yehuda Bauer's suggestion that "the Nazis simply did not have a policy regarding the Gypsies" and that therefore Nazi persecution of Gypsies was fundamentally different from that of Jews is erroneous. Similarly, Hans-Joachim Döring's contention that Nazi policy was motivated by a combination of crime control and military security considerations, or Bernhard Streck's classification of the killing of Roma and Sinti in Auschwitz-Birkenau for epidemiological and public health reasons is equally fallacious.[2] To be sure, the "Jewish Question" loomed larger than the "Gypsy Plague" in Nazi ideology, since Roma and Sinti were socially marginal, whereas Jews were increasingly assimilated in German society and culture; the Gypsies were also far fewer in number, representing about 0.05 percent of the 1933 German population. Nevertheless, there is a striking parallelism between the ideology and process for extermination for Jews and Gypsies. Despite the similarity and simultaneity of persecution, the disparity between the vast quantity of secondary literature about Nazi Judeophobia and the limited number of studies about the fate of Roma and Sinti has inevitably influenced current historical analyses, in which Gypsies are at most an afterthought.[3]

It is clear that the persecution of Roma and Sinti on racial grounds preceded the Nazi assumption of power. Under the Second Empire and the

Weimar Republic, the states of Baden, Bavaria, Bremen, Hesse, and Prussia had developed laws discriminating against Gypsies and established legal stereotypes defining them as vagabonds, asocials, criminals, and racially inferior aliens. Already in 1899, Bavaria had established an "Information Agency on Gypsies" (Nachrichtendienst in Bezug auf die Zigeuner) that collected genealogical data, photographs, and fingerprints of Gypsies above the age of six.[4] Although under Article 108 of the Weimar Constitution, Gypsies received full and equal citizenship rights, they were nevertheless vulnerable to discriminatory legislation. The Bavarian law for "Combatting Gypsies, Vagabonds, and the Work Shy" (Gesetz zur Bekämpfung von Zigeuner, Landfahrern und Arbeitsscheuen) of July 16, 1926, mandated registration of all domiciled and migratory Gypsies with the police, local registry offices, and labor exchanges. A similar Prussian decree from November 3, 1927, resulted in the creation of special Gypsy identity cards with fingerprints and photographs for 8,000 Roma and Sinti above the age of six. During the last years of the Weimar Republic, arbitrary arrest and preventive detention of itinerant Gypsies — ostensibly for crime prevention — became routine. In April 1929, a national police commission adopted the 1926 Bavarian law as the federal norm and established a "Center for the Fight against Gypsies in Germany" with headquarters in Munich.[5] This agreement was renewed on March 18, 1933, with the proviso that any state could issue additional regulations.[6]

Clear lines of demarcation cannot be drawn between these Weimar legal precedents that stigmatized Roma and Sinti as habitual criminals, social misfits, vagabonds, and so-called asocials and the first Nazi measures after 1933. Initially, the Nazis developed parallel racial regulations against Jews, Gypsies, and the handicapped. Gypsies were included as "asocials" (an aggregate group including — but not limited to — prostitutes, beggars, shirkers, and any persons the police designated as "hooligans") in the July 1933 Law for the Prevention of Offspring with Hereditary Defects and in the November 1933 Law Against Habitual Criminals. The first law resulted in their involuntary sterilization,[7] while the second permitted their incarceration in concentration camps. The Denaturalization Law of July 14, 1933, and the Expulsion Law of March 23, 1934, initially implemented against Ostjuden (Eastern and Polish Jews), was also used to expel foreign and stateless Gypsies from German soil.

Following passage of the 1935 Nuremberg racial laws, semi-official commentaries interpreting these laws, classified Gypsies, along with Jews and Blacks, as racially distinctive minorities with "alien blood" (artfremdes Blut).[8] Racially mixed marriages between those of German blood and "Gypsies, Negroes, or their bastard offspring" were prohibited on November 26, 1935, in an advisory circular from the Reich Ministry of the Interior to all local registry offices for vital statistics. In the ever escalating

series of interlocking Nazi regulations implementing the Nuremberg racial laws, both Gypsies and Jews were deprived of their civil rights.[9] Racial scientists compiled the official handbooks for the interpretation of the Nuremberg laws, providing the scientific justification for the regime for the later mass murder of Jews and Gypsies.

Already in 1934, the Nazi Racial Policy Office, together with the Gestapo, began to compile an "asocials catalog." The Nazi police and health bureaucracies continued and expanded the systematic registration of Gypsies as potential criminals, genetically defined, that had already begun during the Weimar Republic.[10] Thus, anthropological and genealogical registration (Rassenbiologische Gutachtung) identified Gypsies as "racially inferior asocials and criminals of Asiatic ancestry."[11] Moreover, Nazi social policy toward Jews and Gypsies resulted in decreased expenditures for welfare; assistance to the growing number of impoverished Jews was assigned in 1933 to the Reichsvertretung der Juden in Deutschland (Reich Representation of German Jews)[12] and after 1939 to the Reichsvereinigung der Juden in Deutschland (Reich Association of Jews in Germany),[13] whereas indigent Gypsies received progressively less financial assistance from municipal authorities.[14] These same officials subsequently interned Roma and Sinti in Gypsy camps.

A March 1936 memorandum to State Secretary of the Interior Hans Pfundtner contains the first references to the preparation of a national Gypsy law (Reichszigeunergesetz) and to the difficulties of achieving a "total solution of the Gypsy problem on either a national or international level." The interim recommendations in this memorandum include expulsion of stateless and foreign Gypsies, restrictions on freedom of movement and on issuing licenses for Gypsies with itinerant trades (Wandergewerbe), increased police surveillance, sterilization of Gypsies of mixed German and Gypsy ancestry (the so-called Mischlinge), complete registration of all Gypsies in the Reich, and confinement in a special Gypsy reservation.[15]

In lieu of national legislation, the Central Office of Detective Forces (Reichskriminalpolizeiamt, or RKPA) and the Reich Ministry of the Interior established, in early June 1936, the Munich-based Central Office to Combat the Gypsy Menace (Zentralstelle zur Bekämpfung des Zigeunerunwesens), which intensified harassment, coercion, and intimidation of Gypsies by the police. This Munich office served as the headquarters of a national databank on Gypsies and represented all German police agencies with the Interpol International Center for Fighting the Gypsy Menace in Vienna.[16]

On June 6, 1936, the Reich and Prussian Ministry of Interior issued a circular containing new directives for "Fighting the Gypsy Plague."[17] The circular also authorized the Chief of the Berlin Police to direct raids

throughout Prussia to arrest all Gypsiesprior to the Olympic Games. Consequently, 600 Gypsieswere arrested in Berlin on July 16, 1936, and marched under police guard to a sewagedump adjacent to the municipal cemetery in the Berlin suburb of Marzahn.[18] Although the presence of both sewage and graves violated Gypsy cultural taboos, Berlin-Marzahn became the largest Gypsy camp (Zigeunerlager). It consisted of 130 caravans condemned as uninhabitable by the Reich Labor Service; the camp was guarded by a detachment of Prussian uniformed police (Schutzpolizei). The hygienic facilitieswere totally inadequate; Marzahn had only threewater pumps and two toilets. Overcrowding and unsanitary conditionswere the norm; for example, in March 1938 city authorities reported 170 casesof communicable diseases.

The Gypsies atBerlin-Marzahn were assigned to forced labor. Further, the Reich Department of Health forced them to provide detailed data for anthropological and genealogical registration. In turn, this data provided the pretextfor the denaturalization and involuntary sterilization of the imprisoned Gypsies. The Berlin-Marzahn Gypsy camp provided evidence of a growing interagency cooperation betweenpublic health officials and the police, essential for subsequent developmentsresulting in the deportation and mass murder of German Gypsies.[19] After 1939, the prisoners at Marzahn were compelled to work at forced labor in the Sachsenhausen stonequarries or to clear rubble from Berlin streets after Allied air raids. Mostwere deported to Auschwitz in 1943.

In spring 1936, the Reich Department of Health created the Racial Hygiene and Demographic Biology Research Unit (Rassenhygienische und Bevölkerungsbiologische Forschungsstelle), as its Department L3. Headed by Dr. Robert Ritter, the unit began systematic genealogical and genetic research in 1937.[20] Ritter and his associatesworked in close cooperation with the Central Office for Reich Security (Reichssicherheitshauptamt, or RSHA) and the Reich Ministry of the Interior. Funded by the Deutsche Forschungsgemeinschaft, Ritter•s unit was assigned to register the approximately 30,000 Gypsies and part-Gypsiesin Germany in order to provide genealogical and racial datarequired for formulating a new Reich Gypsy law. Ritter•s group aimed to show that criminal and asocial behavior washereditary.[21]

In 1937, the anthropologist Dr. Adolf Würth, one of Ritter•s associates, described the growing parallels in Nazi policy toward Jews and Gypsies

> The Gypsy question is for us today primarily a racial question. Thus, the national socialist statewill basically have to settle the Gypsy question just asit has solved the Jewish question. Wehave already begun. Jews and Gypsieshavebeenplaced on equal footing in marriageprohibitionsin the regulationsfor implementing the

> Nuremberg laws for the Protection of German Blood. The Gypsies are not of German blood nor can they be considered related to German blood.[22]

Würth conducted genealogical and anthropological research on Gypsies in Württemberg and in 1940 supervised the first experimental deportation of 500 Roma and Sinti from the Württemberg state prison at Hohenasperg to Lublin.[23] Würth and the other practitioners of racial hygiene provided not only the intellectual infrastructure for genocide, but were also accessories in the process to mass murder. Their research was utilized by the police for implementing the segregation, sterilization, and deportation of Gypsies from the Reich.

Ritter•s associates included his assistant Eva Justin, a nurse who later received a doctorate in anthropology in 1944 for her research on Sinti children separated from their families and raised in •alien Ž surroundings at the Catholic St. Josefspflegehome in Mulfingen; after her dissertation research was completed, these children were deported to Auschwitz-Birkenau, where most were killed.[24] Ritter•s other colleagues included Dr. Sophie Ehrhardt, a zoologist and anthropologist, whose research focused on East Prussian Gypsies and on Jews and Gypsies in the Lodz ghetto and the Dachau and Sachsenhausen concentration camps. Ehrhardt was subsequently appointed professor of anthropology at Tübingen University in 1942.[25]

After 1935, municipal governments and local welfare offices pressured the German police to confine a growing number of German Gypsies in the newly created municipal Zigeunerlager. These Gypsy camps were, in essence, SS Sonderlager: special internment camps combining elements of protective custody concentration camps and embryonic ghettos. Usually located on the outskirts of cities, these Zigeunerlager were guarded by the SS, the gendarmerie, or the uniformed city police. After 1935, these camps became reserve depots for forced labor, genealogical registration, and compulsory sterilization. Between 1933 and 1939, Zigeunerlager were created in Cologne, Düsseldorf, Essen, Frankfurt, Hamburg, and other German cities. These camps evolved from municipal internment camps into assembly centers (Sammellager) for systematic deportation to concentration camps after 1939.[26]

In Frankfurt, for example, local officials „ including Frankfurt Chief of Police Beckerle, Mayor Krebs, and representatives from the welfare office „ expanded existing municipal anti-Gypsy ordinances in the spring of 1936. New measures included the following: police searches of all Gypsy residences three times a week; police checks on all Gypsy identity papers to determine whether any were stateless or foreigners, all of whom were vulnerable to expulsion; compulsory municipal genetic and genealogical

registration; resettlement of all Roma and Sinti found within the city limits in the Frankfurt Zigeunerlager; prohibition on renting local camp sites to Gypsies outside the municipal Zigeunerlager; and expulsion of migrant Roma and Sinti upon arrival in Frankfurt.[27]

Additional measures in Frankfurt further increased police harassment of both domiciled and migrant Gypsies. These directives included restricting the number of new trade licenses issued to itinerant Gypsies, thereby preventing or limiting their employment as knife (or scissors) grinders, horse traders, traveling salespersons, fortune tellers, musicians, and circus performers; checking school attendance by Gypsy children, with truancy to be punished by removal to municipal juvenile facilities; and compulsory registration of all Gypsies detained or arrested by the police.[28] At the Düsseldorf Höherweg camp, the Gypsies were compelled to pay six marks monthly for inferior accommodations in barracks that did not even have electricity; they were also barred from receiving either unemployment or welfare assistance. In addition, the camp commandant mandated rigid curfews, prohibited children from playing on the grounds, and banned visits and communications from non-Gypsy relatives.[29] Similar measures were implemented in other municipal Gypsy camps.

An examination of existing historical literature about the concentration camp system before 1939 reveals that several Sinti had already been arrested and detained in the Worms-Osthofen concentration camp in 1933 and that 400 Bavarian Gypsies were deported to Dachau in July 1936. This latter arrest occurred almost simultaneously with the arrest of Berlin Gypsies and the creation of Berlin-Marzahn. An additional 1000 Gypsies •able to work Ž were arrested in raids on June 13 to 18, 1938, and deported to Buchenwald, Dachau, and Sachsenhausen concentration camps; women were sent to Lichtenburg concentration camp in Saxony. These 1938 arrests were authorized under an unpublished decree on •crime prevention Ž (vorbeugende Verbrechensbekämpfung) issued in December 1937. This decree extended the use of preventive arrest to all persons whose asocial behavior threatened the common good, irrespective of whether the individual had a criminal record. It was applied to migrant and unemployed Gypsies, asocials, the unemployed, habitual criminals, homeless panhandlers, beggars, and Jews previously sentenced to jail for more than 30 days (including such offenses as traffic violations). The arrests were made by the Kripo (rather than the Gestapo) and provided the expanding camp system with potential slave labor.[30]

Austrian and German Gypsies were also sent to Mauthausen and Ravensbrück prior to the outbreak of war in 1939. In summer and fall 1938, about 3000 allegedly •work shy Ž Roma and Sinti from the Ostmark (incorporated Austria) were also deported to concentration camps. Thus, 2000 male Gypsies above the age of 16 were sent to Dachau and later

remanded to Buchenwald, and 1000 female Gypsies above the age of 15 were sent to Ravensbrück.[31] In 1939 and 1940, special internment camps at Maxglan/Leopoldskron in Salzburg and Lackenbach in Burgenland were created specifically for Roma and Sinti in the Ostmark and all German decrees and regulations against Gypsies, including genealogical and police registration, were implemented.[32]

The registration and census of Gypsies in Austria was begun in late October 1939. Similarly, a census of Gypsies was conducted in the Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia in August 1942, after the incarceration of Gypsies in compulsory penal labor camps at Pardubice near Prague, Lety in Bohemia, and Hodonin in Moravia.

In the Netherlands, in February 1936 the Dutch Minister of Justice had already created a central Gypsy register linked to the Munich central police office and the Vienna Interpol office specializing in Gypsies. On December 30, 1937, the Police Gazette of Holland announced the opening of the Dutch Central Office for Gypsies; this office was closed in January 1939. In early 1941, a central registry for Gypsies, nomads, aliens, and the stateless was opened, and it implemented German anti-Gypsy measures for the arrest, internment, and deportation of Dutch Gypsies.[33]

Similarly in France, before the war in late 1939, Interior Minister Albert Sarraut specified that Gypsies be included among those without fixed domicile to be interned as security risks in the camps de concentration. The situation of French Gypsies did not improve with German occupation. The Commissariat for Jewish Affairs under Xavier Vallat in Vichy France also held jurisdiction over the fate of Gypsies as part of its responsibility for the administration of •measures for the maintenance of racial purity.Ž[34] As in the case of French Jews, the Nazi plan „ requiring the cooperation of the French police and civil service „ for the identification, concentration, and deportation of Gypsies was not fully implemented before the Allied armies liberated France.

The literature about Gypsies in the pre-1939 German concentration camps is too fragmentary to permit valid generalizations, and we therefore still do not know why some Gypsies were sent to municipal internment camps while others were committed to concentration camps.

In 1938 and 1939, the Nazi ideological obsession with Gypsies became almost as strident and aggressive as the campaign against the Jews.[35] In August 1938, Gypsies were expelled, ostensibly as military security risks, from border zones on the left bank of the Rhine, and, once war had begun, they were prohibited from •wandering.Ž In the western areas of the Reich. In May 1938, Heinrich Himmler ordered that the Munich bureau of Gypsy affairs be renamed Reichszentrale zur Bekämpfung des Zigeunerunwesens (Central Office to Combat the Gypsy Nuisance) and placed within the RKPA (Department V of the Central Office for Reich Security) in Berlin by

early October 1938). Moreover, on December 8, 1938, Himmler promulgated a decree for •Fighting the Gypsy Plague,Ž basing it on Ritter•s anthropological and genealogical registration (rassenbiologische Gutachtung).

This decree recommended •the resolution of the Gypsy question based on its essentially racial nature,Ž (die Regelung der Zigeunerfrage aus dem Wesen dieser Rasse heraus in Angriff zu nehmen) and mandated that all Gypsies in the Reich above the age of six be classified into three racial groups: •Gypsies, Gypsy Mischlinge, and nomadic persons behaving as Gypsies.Ž The guidelines for implementation published in early 1939 stipulated that the RKPA assist in •the development of a comprehensive Gypsy law prohibiting miscegenation and regulating the life of the Gypsy race in German space (im deutschen Volksraum).Ž[36] Comprehensive and systematic residential and genealogical registration of Gypsies by local police and public health authorities became mandatory, and photo identity cards were to be issued to all Gypsies and part-Gypsies. The implementation of Himmler•s decree also resulted in the purge of several dozen Gypsy musicians from the Reich Music Chamber in the spring of 1939, thereby effectively banning their employment as musicians.[37] The radicalization of Nazi attitudes by 1940 is also evident in a report from February 5, 1940 from Senior State Attorney Dr. Meissner of the Graz Circuit Court (Oberlandesgericht) to the Reich Minister of Justice in Berlin, which rejected the idea of Gypsy employment as musicians in Burgenland: •The Gypsies live almost exclusively from begging and theft. Their work as musicians is simply a cover and not genuine employment.Ž[38]

The deportation of German Gypsies began shortly after the outbreak of war in 1939. On October 17, 1939, Reinhard Heydrich issued the so-called Festsetzungserlaß, prohibiting all Gypsies and part-Gypsies not already interned in camps from changing their registered domiciles; this measure was essential for implementing deportations.[39] In the second half of October, Arthur Nebe, chief of the RKPA, tried to expedite the deportation of Berlin Gypsies by requesting that Adolf Eichmann •add three or four train cars of Gypsies.Ž to the Nisko Jewish transports departing from Vienna. Eichmann cabled Berlin that the Nisko transport would include •a train car of Gypsies to be added to the first Jewish deportation from Vienna.Ž[40] However, the failure of the Nisko resettlement scheme at the end of 1939 precluded the early expulsion of 30,000 Gypsies from the Greater German Reich to the General Government.[41] The aborted October 1939 deportation took place belatedly in mid-May 1940, when 2800 German Gypsies were deported from seven assembly centers in the Old Reich to Lublin.[42] In Austria, the deportations to the General Government planned for the second half of August 1940 were postponed indefinitely and the Gypsies were subsequently deported to Auschwitz-Birkenau in

1943.[43] The rules concerning inclusion and exemption for Gypsies paralleled the later regulations used in Jewish transports.

The property and possessions of the deported Gypsies were confiscated and the deportees were compelled to sign release forms acknowledging the transfer of their possessions as volks- und staatsfeindlichen Vermögens (under the Law for the Confiscation of Subversive and Enemy Property, initially used for the seizure of assets of proscribed and denaturalized political opponents after July 1933).[44] The same confiscatory procedures were also employed during the earliest deportations of Jews, prior to the passage of the 11th Ordinance. The 11th Ordinance provided for automatic loss of citizenship and confiscation of property if a German Jew took up residence in a foreign country; deportation to the East (including to the Ostland and the General Government) counted as such a change of residence.[45] The deportation of Gypsies from Germany and Austria was again suspended in October 1940 because the General Government had protested the potential dumping of 35,000 Gypsies as well as the impending arrival of large numbers of German Jews.[46] Again in July 1941, the RSHA halted the deportation of East Prussian Gypsies, probably because of the invasion of the Soviet Union, noting that "a general and final solution of the Gypsy question cannot be achieved at this time." Instead, the RSHA proposed to construct a new Zigeunerlager enclosed with barbed wire in the outskirts of Königsberg.[47]

The patterns of both Gypsy and Jewish deportations reveal the evolving system of killings. Thus, as with the Jewish deportations to Lodz, the deportation of 5000 Austrian Gypsies from transit camps at Hartburg, Fürstenfeld, Mattersburg, Roten Thurm, Lackenbach, and Oberwart from November 5 to 9, 1941, dovetailed with the establishment of Chelmno (Kulmhof), where these Gypsies were killed in mobile gas vans in December 1941 and January 1942.[48] Similarly, the Gypsies incarcerated in the Warsaw ghetto were deported to Treblinka in the summer of 1942.[49] By that time, the SS Einsatzgruppen operating in the Soviet Union and the Baltic region had already killed several thousand Gypsies alongside Jews in massacres.[50] Thus the RSHA reported, in its "Situation Report USSR" No. 153, that "the Gypsy problem in Simpferopol [had been] settled" in December 1941.[51] And in October 1947, Otto Ohlendorf, who had headed the Einsatzgruppe that operated in southern Russia and the Crimea, testified at Nuremberg that the basis for killing Gypsies and Jews in Russia had been the same.[52] In similar fashion, the Reich Commissar for the Ostland in July 1942 informed the Higher SS and Police Leader in Riga that "treatment of Jews and Gypsies are to be placed on equal footing (gleichgestellt)."[53]

Ritter's racial research estimated that 90 percent of the German Roma and Sinti were of mixed ancestry, thus Nazi measures were directed

primarily against Gypsy Mischlinge in Germany and Austria up to 1942. In 1942, the regime dropped the distinction between part and pure Gypsies and subjected all Gypsies to the same treatment. In 1942 and 1943, when most Gypsy deportations from the Reich occurred, the Nazis also eliminated all distinctions between the treatment of Gypsies and Jews. Thus, on March 12, 1942, new regulations placed Jews and Gypsies on equal footing for welfare payments and compulsory labor.[54]

There is suggestive evidence that Hitler may have been involved in the formal decision to kill the Gypsies. On December 3, 1942, Martin Bormann wrote a letter to Himmler, protesting that the Reich Leader SS had exempted certain pure Gypsies from "the measures to combat the Gypsy plague" until additional research into their "language, rituals [...], and valuable Teutonic customs" could be completed. Bormann complained that neither the public, nor the party, nor the Führer would "understand or approve." Himmler added a handwritten note on the face of the letter about preparing data on Gypsies for Hitler. The marginalia states "Führer. Aufstellung wer sind Zigeuner" ("Führer. Information who are the Gypsies").[55] Himmler met with Hitler on December 10, 1942, and six days later, responding to Bormann's pressure and probably to Hitler's order, Himmler issued the Auschwitz decree on Gypsies, which led to their deportation to and eventual murder in Birkenau.[56]

The evidence suggests that Hitler was directly involved and informed of most killing operations, and that simultaneously the administration of policy by German officials stationed outside Germany cumulatively radicalized the implementation of central policy toward German and European Gypsies.

Already on September 26, 1942, three months before Himmler's Auschwitz decree, 200 Gypsies were transferred from Buchenwald to Auschwitz and assigned to build the new Gypsy enclosure (BIIe) at Birkenau. On February 26, 1943, the first transport of German Gypsies arrived at the newly erected Gypsy "family camp" (BIIe) in Birkenau; Gypsies from occupied Europe arrived at Auschwitz-Birkenau after March 7, 1943.[57] The pattern of deporting Gypsies as a family unit was first established during the May 1940 Hohenasperg deportations to Lublin and continued in Auschwitz. The history and fate of the Gypsies in the Birkenau Zigeunerlager paralleled the creation and later destruction of the so-called Familienlager for Theresienstadt deportees in Birkenau BIIb.[58]

On August 2, 1944, the Gypsy camp at Auschwitz-Birkenau was liquidated. An earlier SS attempt to obliterate the Birkenau Gypsy camp BIIe on May 16 had failed because of armed resistance; the prisoners fought the SS with improvised knives, shovels, wooden sticks, and stones.[59] By the time Birkenau was evacuated, 13,614 Gypsies from the German Reich had died of exposure, malnutrition, disease, and brutal medical

experiments; 6,432 had been gassed, and 32 had been shot while trying to escape. Thus, about 20,000 of the 23,000 German and Austrian Roma and Sinti deported to Auschwitz were killed there.[60] Finally, on April 25, 1943, both Jews and Gypsies were denaturalized and placed on an equal footing under the provisions of the 12th Ordinance to the Reich Citizenship Law, and on March 10, 1944, a circular letter from Himmler directed that the publication of restrictive decrees against Jews and Gypsies be discontinued as their "evacuation and isolation" had already been largely completed.[61]

Despite the growth of specialized monographs, the lacunae in Holocaust literature about Nazi policies toward Roma and Sinti are still vast. Future research should address the need for a comprehensive and systematic handbook listing all published and unpublished Nazi laws, ordinances, and directives against German and Austrian Gypsies, as well as similar decrees in the other countries of Axis and occupied Europe. It is also important to analyze the presence and deportation of German Gypsies to ghettos in Bialystok, Cracow, Radom, Warsaw, and Lodz. Scattered entries in Adam Czerniakow's diary recorded the presence of German and Polish Gypsies in the Warsaw ghetto in April and June 1942; parallel decrees from the city and county of Warsaw confirm the incarceration of Gypsies in the Warsaw ghetto in June 1942 and their subsequent deportation to Treblinka.[62] Although fragmentary data are available, research about Roma and Sinti resistance is still negligible.

Current literature has also ignored references to the killing of Gypsies in Einsatzkommando situation reports from the occupied Soviet Union, although a more systematic analysis of this material would be relatively simple.[63] Likewise, Nazi usage and language toward Gypsies requires more organized analysis, since it seems logical that the pacification and antipartisan operations in the occupied Soviet Union and Baltic, known as Bandenbekämpfung, included activities against Jews, Gypsies, and Communist partisans. The public language of Nazi propaganda was used both for indoctrination and intimidation, whereas the less public language of Nazi bureaucrats utilized code words and circumlocutions for deportations and killing operations. The Nazis generally described their victims in pejorative terms, transmuting objective language into terms of contempt to describe the victims that their own policies and deeds had created.[64]

Holocaust historiography during the past 40 years has emphasized anti-Semitism and the Jewish fate. Despite new sources and research during the 1980s, the older interpretations are still dominant. There are still no parallel studies about the fate of Gypsies and Jews in the major German concentration camps (Bergen-Belsen, Buchenwald, Dachau, Mauthausen, Natzweiler, Ravensbrück, and Sachsenhausen); in transit camps such as Westerbork in Holland and Malines in Belgium; in killing centers at Belzec, Chelmno, Sobibor, Treblinka, and Auschwitz-Birkenau; and in the

labor camps that dotted the Reich and all of occupied Europe.[65] Furthermore, there are no comparative studies about the parallel fate of German Gypsies in concentration camps and Zigeunerlager prior to 1939. Current literature analyzing the fate of Roma and Sinti in occupied Europe is still relatively narrow, apart from several significant works about the Netherlands and Czechoslovakia.[66] The gaps in our knowledge about the Gypsy Final Solution are still vast, although significant progress has been made toward understanding the connection between Nazi ideology, German social policy, and the genocide of German and European Gypsies.

Discrimination against Sinti and Roma did not cease with the collapse of Nazi Germany in 1945. During the immediate postwar years, harassment by German and Austrian police, and housing, health, and welfare authorities was common. In Germany, Gypsy registration files created during the Nazi era along with some of the police personnel were transferred to postwar successor agencies; these compromising files disappeared and were sometimes destroyed when public disclosure of their existence proved embarrassing. Thus, for example, from the early 1950s to the mid-1970s, the Landfahrerzentrale (Vagrant Department) of the Bavarian police retained the Gypsy records of the Nazi Central Office to Combat the Gypsy Menace headquartered after 1936 in Munich. These records disappeared and were allegedly destroyed in the 1970s, when the nascent Sinti and Roma civil rights movement initiated inquiries about them.[67]

Prior to the 1980s, few archives and scholars were interested in documenting Nazi crimes against Roma and Sinti. The fragmentation and dispersion of German records during and after World War II hampered early recognition of the importance of the partial files of Ritter•s Racial Hygiene and Demographic Biology Research Unit located in Ehrhardt•s research collection at Tübingen University; it also required several years to catalog these records after they were transferred in 1981 to the German Federal Archives in Koblenz.[68]

In addition, German bureaucrats encouraged the emphasis on Jewish victimization in Holocaust historiography, since the excesses of anti-Semitism could be blamed on the pathology of Hitler and his SS followers, whereas the murder of German nationals in the so-called euthanasia killings and the killing of Sinti and Roma, both carried out by •ordinary Ž German bureaucrats, scientists, and policemen, implicated a far larger segment of the German population. Moreover, the focus on Nazi anti-Semitism also prevented discussion of how deeply the German scientific community was involved in the killing operations against Jews as well as against Gypsies and the handicapped.

And finally, German postwar restitution legislation and its implementation excluded most Sinti and Roma survivors, subjecting them to arbitrary

and repetitive bureaucratic humiliations. Most Gypsy survivors were initially disqualified from receiving compensation as racial victims for imprisonment prior to the March 1943 Auschwitz decree. Although this date was later changed to December 1938, both dates excluded restitution for incarceration in early internment camps such as Marzahn or Lackenbach, ignored deportation to ghettos such as Radom or Bialystok after 1940, restricted claims for health disabilities caused by involuntary sterilization and medical experiments, and required minimum periods of involuntary detention in certain officially recognized camps and ghettos to qualify for meager settlements. Claims filed by Gypsy survivors for homes and businesses impounded at deportation were invariably disallowed, often after investigation by the same policemen who had previously arrested them in the Nazi era. Health claims for physical and psychological trauma were similarly disregarded. This failure of empathy with Gypsy survivors was rationalized using the language of Nazi stereotypes that defined the victims as "asocial and criminal." Despite minor improvements in both legislation and court decisions by the 1980s, hostile practices such as the involuntary denaturalization of many German Sinti survivors and the reduction of modest restitution settlements by deducting any prior welfare assistance established a flagrant pattern of official dissembling and hostility.[69]

Despite democratization and economic recovery, de-Nazification in postwar Germany and Austria remained incomplete. West German political culture included widespread amnesia to the continuities of personnel in government and academia. This continuity exemplified one aspect of the collective failure to assume political responsibility for the Nazi murder of Sinti and Roma. For example, the staff of the Racial Hygiene and Demographic Biology Research Unit in Berlin-Dahlem had little difficulty in securing employment after 1945, and they eluded all penalties during postwar judicial proceedings. Ritter taught criminal biology at the University of Tübingen from late 1944 to 1946 and was hired in December 1947 as a physician for children by the Frankfurt Health Office. Once again, Ritter hired Justin to work with him; she was employed as a psychologist at the Frankfurt Health Office. After brief investigations, judicial proceedings against Ritter and Justin as accessories in the murder of German Gypsies were discontinued.[70]

Ehrhardt continued her research and teaching as a professor of anthropology at Tübingen University, where she used the plaster casts of Gypsy heads and fingerprint data from the records of the Racial Hygiene Unit entrusted to her after the war. Judicial proceedings against her were dropped in 1985.[71] Würth became an official in the Bureau of Statistics in Württemberg-Baden from 1951 to 1970. Würth was never tried as an accessory to murder since judicial investigations of his career were

discontinued. Many perpetrators were never placed on trial; for example, the physician and anthropologist Professor Otmar Freiherr von Verschuer, who had supervised and subsidized many of Josef Mengele•s notorious experiments on Gypsy and Jewish twins at Auschwitz, was never investigated or indicted. After the war, he established the Human Genetics Institute at the University of Münster in 1951 and was appointed a professor at Münster in 1953.[72]

Postwar police careers revealed a similar lack of repercussions for involvement in the deportation and killing of Sinti and Roma. Thus, Josef Eichberger, who had been responsible for Gypsy deportations in the RSHA, became head of the •Gypsy Department Ž of the Bavarian State Police; Leo Karsten became head of the •Migrants (Landfahrer) Department Ž of the Baden State Police in Karlsruhe; and Hans Maly, a senior officer in Department VA2 (preventive measures against asocials, prostitutes, and Gypsies) of the RSHA from January to late September 1943, was later hired as head of the Bonn Kripo after 1945. Judicial proceedings were dropped against these police.[73]

In 1969…1970, during the trial of Otto Bovensiepen, the former chief of the Berlin Gestapo from March 1941 to November 1942, the statute of limitations had expired on all crimes of the Nazi period except murder. Bovensiepen was indicted for •knowingly and with base motives assisting in the deportation and killing of at least 35,000 Berlin Jews and 252 Gypsies Ž The trial was suspended in 1971, since Bovensiepen had suffered a heart attack and his physician testified that he would never be able to live through the trial.[74] Furthermore, after a 43-month trial, the Siegen District Court sentenced Ernst August König on January 24, 1991, to life imprisonment for murders he had committed as SS Blockführer in the Gypsy camp BIIe at Auschwitz-Birkenau.[75]

Allied tribunals of the four postwar occupation armies and the successor states (the Federal Republic of Germany, the German Democratic Republic, and the Republic of Austria) tried large numbers of Nazi criminals for crimes committed during World War II; usually specific crimes against Sinti and Roma were part of larger indictments against suspected perpetrators for participation in the Einsatzkommandos or crimes committed in the concentration camps.[76]

On a different but related note, it is uncommon to find explicit acknowledgment of Sinti and Roma victims in most postwar Holocaust memorials. That said, their tragic fate is explicitly recognized in monuments on Museumplein in Amsterdam, at the former Gypsy camps in Salzburg and Lackenbach, in concentration camp memorials at Bergen-Belsen and Auschwitz-Birkenau, and in new memorials at the children•s home in Mulfingen, as well as at the sites of their deportation in Heidelberg and Wiesbaden.[77]

German unification and changes in the former Soviet bloc since 1990 have altered the political map of Europe. These changes are, however, still, incomplete and it is still too early for any final analysis. Nevertheless, recent developments do show that the administration of memorials in the countries of Eastern Europe and in reunited Germany will at best transform and at worst diminish the status of most Holocaust memorials. Growing popular resentment against Jews and Gypsies, hatred of outsiders, as well as the emergence of local fascist and neo-Nazi groups also bode ill for the future of these memorials.[78]

The belated recognition of the Gypsy Holocaust is still incomplete in current historiography. During the 1980s new sources and research produced interpretations that corrected many of the old imbalances by pointing to the connections between the murder of the Jews and that of the Gypsies and the handicapped. These analyses have, however, been unable so far to alter the older interpretation; prejudice and the habits of some 50 years cannot be reversed overnight.

The Gypsy Holocaust has taught us that the German health care system and the involvement of German scientists „ physicians, psychiatrists, anthropologists, and geneticists „ were essential to implement the mass murder of all European Gypsies alongside that of the European Jews.

These findings also provide us with a better understanding of how Nazi policy evolved. Although there is an obvious link between policy and ideology, there was no defined corpus of Nazi ideology (even other Nazi leaders did not read Alfred Rosenberg). Instead, Nazi ideology was reflected by the writings of large numbers of people, including Party functionaries, government bureaucrats, and racial scientists. In fact, policy was revealed less in ideological statements by leaders than in the day-to-day activities of middle-level management. Hitler set policy goals, but middle-level management delineated and implemented policy. Hitler was preoccupied with racial purity and was determined to cleanse the gene pool of the German nation. He demanded the exclusion of the unfit and the alien. In cooperation with racial scientists, the Nazi party and German government bureaucrats defined the groups to be excluded.

From the beginning in 1933, these bureaucrats focused on the handicapped, Jews, and Gypsies, advancing solutions for exclusion that became progressively more radical. Before the Final Solution of mass murder became feasible, these bureaucrats proposed sterilization and deportation (or emigration) as solutions. The handicapped were thus sterilized before they were killed, and this also applied to many Gypsies. Even during the war, Nazi functionaries continued to search for an easy method that would make mass sterilization of Jews possible. When emigration or expulsion was no longer feasible but before the killings commenced, the Nazis instituted the deportation of Jews and Gypsies as a means of exclusion.

Sterilization, deportation, and killings thus reflected the evolving policy of exclusion and was applied to the handicapped, Jews, and Gypsies.

Further, Party and government agencies competed for the right to implementpolicy. Ideologueslike Julius Streicher, even Joseph Goebbels, were •outside the loopŽ when the policy to kill was decided and implemented. The killing of the handicapped wasdirected by the Führer Chancellery in cooperation with racial scientists and health care functionaries. The killing of Jews and Gypsieswasdirected by Heydrich (later Ernst Kaltenbrunner) as chief of the Security Police and SSSecurity Service. Under Heydrich•s command, the Gestapo (political police) dealt with Jews, and the Kripo (detective forces) dealt with Gypsies. While it is true that the Kripo, traditionally concerned with crime prevention, tended to focus on Gypsy mobility and supposed Gypsy crime, it deferred to racial scientistsfor its guidelines onhow to classify and exclude Gypsies. The delineation of Gypsy policy thus largely devolved on Ritter, a psychiatrist whoseresearch in racial science centred on Gypsies, and who headed the Eugenic and Criminal Biological Research Station (Rassenhygienische und Kriminalbiologische Forschungsstelle) of the Reich Health Office and later the Criminal Biological Institute of the Security Police at Kripo headquarters. Both Gestapo and Kripo thus relied on racial scientists todefine the condemned groups. They also needed Hitler•s order, or at leastthis authorization, to implement apolicy of mass murder. In the final analysis, the activities and records of theseimplementing agencies reflect policy decisions about genocide better than do public declarations, evenHitler•s speeches.

The German racial theories that served as the basis for extermination were never rational or consistent. Thus in Germany, •pureŽ Jews were killed, but those of mixed ancestry were usually not included in killing operations,becausethe bureaucracy chose not to alienate Germansrelated to Jews. In contrast, Gypsies of mixed ancestry were the first victims, becausetheir German relatives, usually holding low social statusposed no bureaucratic problems. And while the bureaucracy worked hard to limit the number of exempted Jews of mixed ancestry, Ritter classified 90 percent of all Gypsies ashaving mixed origins. Various Nazi leaders, including Himmler, had their own favorite racial theories,but none ever inhibited the relentlessbureaucratic drive toward extermination. The files of Ritter•s agency provide incontrovertible documentary evidence that •pureŽ Roma and Sinti were registered and incarcerated, thereafter deported, and eventually killed. Our growing understanding of the Gypsy Holocaust enables us torestore the complexity of thishistory, and perhaps this history may also provide uswith a better understanding of the interaction between science and statebureaucracy with the forces of popular prejudice and racism.

Eyewitness Accounts: Holocaust „ The Gypsies

The fate of the Gypsies (Roma and Sinti) in the concentration camps and killing fields of the Holocaust has been largely invisible in current historiography about Nazi genocide. Recent scholarship about the experiences of Roma and Sinti in Nazi-occupied Europe has generally been printed by an assortment of small publishers, thereby discouraging most scholars from ferreting out this diverse literature and impeding the inclusion of new data as more than an afterthought. This has resulted in a tacit conspiracy of silence about the isolation, exclusion, and systematic killing of the Gypsies, rendering much Holocaust scholarship deficient and obsolete.

Several reasons explain the disparity between the vast quantity of literature about Nazi persecution of the Jews and the limited number of studies about Nazi anti-Gypsy ideology and practice. Although the percentage of Gypsy mortality was approximately the same as the percentage of Jewish mortality in the Holocaust, the sheer weight of numbers of the Jewish victims captured immediate attention. Moreover, even in the 1940s, surviving sources about the fate of European Jews were far more numerous than those about Gypsies. Further, Jewish survivors published a substantial memoir literature, whereas Gypsy survivors were less articulate in print and more dependent on oral traditions. As each group of victims tended to write its own history of the Holocaust, the larger Jewish communities obviously dominated postwar historiography, whereas the less articulate communities of Gypsies remained largely silent and had no academic representation.

Although there is at present no comprehensive bibliography about the fate of Roma and Sinti during the Holocaust, the growing literature about this subject has been a by-product of the European Roma and Sinti civil rights movement since the 1980s. A substantial number of these new local and regional studies include eyewitness narratives.

The following survivor narratives were selected from this published literature. They represent typical aspects of the cumulative experiences of German and Austrian Roma and Sinti men and women between 1933 and 1945. These events include the internment of German Sinti in special municipal camps after 1935, such as the Dieselstrasse camp in Frankfurt (Jakob Müller); the May 1940 deportation from Hamburg to Lublin (Lani Rosenberg); the Belzec labor camp (Lani Rosenberg); imprisonment in Sachsenhausen, Gross-Rosen, and Litomerice concentration and labor camps (Hugo Franz); medical experiments on Gypsy prisoners at Natzweiler-Struthof and Neckarelz (an unnamed Sinto from Nuremberg); daily life in the Auschwitz-Birkenau Gypsy family camp, BIIe, including the May 1944 revolt and the August 1944 liquidation (Elisabeth Guttenberger and Anna P.); the 1942 killings of Gypsies at Treblinka

(Michael Chodźko); and the difficulties encountered by Roma survivors in Austria after 1945 (Maria Kohlberger, Leopoldine Papai, and Johann Breirather). All translations are by Sybil Milton.

The German Sinto, Jakob Müller, born in 1928, recounts his childhood experiences of deportation from Worms to the special municipal Gypsy internment at Dieselstrasse in Frankfurt am Main, where he was forced to live from September 10, 1940, until his family was deported to Auschwitz on March 13, 1943. His detailed description of the Dieselstrasse special camp reveals the overcrowded conditions and the special difficulties of the incarcerated Sinti children. Müller's story is published in Eva von Hase-Mihalik and Doris Kreuzkamp, Du kriegst auch einen schönen Wohnwagen: Zwangslager für Sinti und Roma während des Nationalsozialismus in Frankfurt am Main, [•You will also get a nice wagon to live in: Involuntary internment camps for Sinti and Roma in Frankfurt under the Nazis Ž] (Frankfurt: Brandes and Apsel, 1990), pp. 23…27

> *ƒ* No reasons were given when we were picked up in Worms. We lived in a large area with many other Sinti. After surrounding the area, they arrived in our home at Kleine Fischerweide 50, located adjacent to the Nibelungen school. Screaming •Out, out, out Ž„ we could only take the most essential items with us. We were placed on a truck that took us directly from Worms to Frankfurt. My father wasn't at home, since he was with the German air force.
>
> In 1941, my father was dishonorably discharged from the army •for racial reasons Ž and he too was sent to the Frankfurt camp. We arrived at the Dieselstrasse camp in Frankfurt on September 10, 1940, and were there until we were deported to Auschwitz on March 13, 1943.
>
> The Dieselstrasse camp was about 80 meters [ca. 240 ft.] long and 20 meters [ca. 60 ft.] wide. We were forced to live in abandoned moving vans. There were about 25 such vans and initially 150 to 180 persons were housed there. Many families with 8 to 12 members were forced to live in a space 7 meters [21 ft.] long by 2 meters [6 ft.] wide. They were forced to live in about 14 square meters and were crowded together in very cramped quarters.
>
> There was always roll call in the mornings; we were counted „ we were, to be sure, fenced in; there was a guard booth at the exit and four policemen on rotating shifts were always stationed there *ƒ*.
>
> We were allowed to attend the Riederwald school for one year, but then the local population complained about this and eventually

we were seated separately in the last row of the class. Then came the Frankfurt order that forbade Gypsy children from attending schools *f*.

Lani Rosenberg, a German Sinto, describes his experiences after 1938 in Hamburg and Belzec labor camp. His father and brother were initially arrested during the June 1938 raids targeting "asocials" and deported to Sachsenhausen concentration camp; in mid-May 1940 the rest of his family was arrested and deported from Germany to Lublin (in occupied central Poland). Rosenberg's account is excepted from Rudko Kawczynski's essay, "Hamburg soll 'zigeunerfrei' werden" ("Hamburg will be 'free of Gypsies'"). In Angelika Ebbinghaus, Heidrun Kaupen-Haas, Karl Heinz Roth (Eds.) Heilen und Vernichten im Mustergau Hamburg: Bevölkerungs- und Gesundheitspolitik im Dritten Reich ["Healing and Killing in the Model Gau Hamburg: Reproductive and Health Policies in the Third Reich"] (Hamburg: Konkret Literatur Verlag, 1984) pp. 49…50

> The eldest in our family were arrested first. My father and older brother were arrested by the police in June 1938 at 5 A.M. In the greatest of haste, my mother asked an attorney to try to free my father and brother. Although the police had no grounds for arresting them, shrugging his shoulders the attorney reported that one couldn't do anything about it. He informed us that they had been taken to Sachsenhausen concentration camp. I wrote petitions for clemency, requesting my father's and brother's release, to Department C2 of the Reich's kriminalpolizeiamt in Berlin and to the Führer. Eventually, I received a warning from the Hamburg-Eimsbüttel local police to stop annoying the Führer, or I too would also be arrested. Those Sinti that were still free were ordered not to leave the city limits. For starvation wages, I was compelled to do heavy physical labor.
>
> On May 16, 1940, I, my mother, and all my other siblings still in Hamburg were arrested. I asked the police why we were being arrested. They replied that we were being resettled in Poland. We were assembled together with several hundred other Gypsies and brought to a shack near the harbor. Each of us received a red number painted on our skin. The transport to Poland began several days later. We were permitted to take only some of our clothing with us. All money and items of value were confiscated.
>
> After several days travel we arrived in Poland at a place called Belzec. We were immediately received by an SS unit and were separated by age and gender. The SS took no great pains with many of the Gypsies, who were forced to dig their own graves; these Gypsies

were then shot and buried. While being beaten we were forced to run to a shack. Later we had to put barbed wire around this hut. Early every morning we had to stand for roll call. Afterwards there were more beatings, we then received our tools, and were forced to run to "work" while again being beaten. The work place was located close to the Russian border. During the first three months of arrest, many of the younger children died of starvation and disease. There was no medical care. I often witnessed how Gypsies were shot, only because they tried to get some water. Once I observed that several 8- to 12-year-old children were compelled to lie on the ground while booted SS men marched over their bodies. It is impossible to detail everything that I experienced during five years in the concentration camps, since words are inadequate to report all of it. I lost eight brothers and sisters as well as my parents under the Nazis. My father was shot someplace near Schwerin shortly before the war ended *f*.

Hugo Franz, head of the German Sinti organization in Düsseldorf, was a victim of German racial persecution. Franz was born in Dresden in 1913 to a family that had lived in Germany for 300 years. When Franz graduated from secondary high school (Gymnasium), Nazi racial laws prevented him from entering law school. He instead attended the Saxon state orchestral school and then formed his own band in Hamburg together with his three brothers; after 1939 his identity papers were confiscated and he was not permitted to accept road engagements for his band. Franz was compelled to abandon his profession as a musician and was forced to work at the Blohm and Voss copper plant. Arrested in January 1942, he survived subsequent imprisonment in Sachsenhausen, Groß-Rosen, and Litomerice concentration and labor camps. His experiences are published in an interview in Jörn-Erik Gutheil et al. (Eds.) Einer muß überleben: Gespräche mit Auschwitzhäftlinge 40 Jahre danach ["One of us must survive: Conversations with Auschwitz prisoners forty years later"] (Düsseldorf: Der Kleine Verlag, 1984) pp. 50-52

> At the time I was living with my parents in Hamburg. On January 7, 1942, I was arrested by the Gestapo at 5 in the morning. They told me to pack my tooth brush and other toiletries. My mother was told that I would be taken to a concentration camp *f*.
>
> At the police station, I had to countersign the protective custody order for my arrest, and I was then imprisoned for about a month until a transport for Oranienburg-Sachsenhausen could be consolidated. Beatings had already started during the transport. We

wondered, •What will become of us, and where had we landed?• Everything was utterly new and strange.

We stood in the grim cold in Sachsenhausen for five hours „ it was winter „ and were then delivered to the Political Department. There an SS Technical Sergeant informed me that since I was a Gypsy, my transfer to this concentration camp was the end of the road for me, that it was a one-way street with no way back out. There, for the first time in my life, I saw shrunken heads like the ones made by headhunters, but these were Gypsy heads. They stood on a sideboard in the Political Department.

We were then taken to a barrack, where every hair on our bodies was shorn and shaven off. We were next taken to the bath, an ice cold shower. We were compelled to hand over all of our clothing and in return received prisoner uniforms „ zebra uniforms. I wore size 39 shoes and was given size 43. By this time, we all looked a bit odd. The beating began when we arrived back in the barracks. There were already Sinti prisoners in this camp and I knew a few of them. They had connections to the clothing depot and arranged for me to get half-way decent clothing. A brown triangle had been sewn onto my prison uniform, because I had been classified an antisocial. [The inverted brown or beige triangle was the special marking used to identify Gypsy prisoners; it was frequently replaced by the more common black triangle for Roma and Sinti prisoners reclassified as •asocials Ž in the concentration camps.]

We were then separated into different work groups. We carried stones that were to be used in construction and had to move everything at double time. We had to carry hundred-weight sacks, two at a time. Anyone not able to do this had signed his own death warrant because SS guards kicked him mercilessly with their rubber boots. Out of a work command of 100 men, 30 to 40 were often gone by the end of the day *f*.

[In mid-March 1942,] we were transferred to work in a rock quarry in Gross Rosen concentration camp; we often worked until midnight on the construction of the camp. We slept four men to a blanket. The windows had not yet been installed in our barracks, and when we awoke in the morning, there was often snow on our blankets.

Our rations were a piece of bread, which had at best 30 percent flour; the rest consisted of ground chestnuts and sawdust. Afternoons, turnips; evenings, coffee. We had to save some of our breakfast bread for evening, and we then got one cube of margarine for 60 people. The result of this bad food was dysentery. For medicine, there was carbon or chalk tablets, and this white substance had to be taken by spoon. The result was zero, nothing whatsoever. The

majority of prisoners died. A transport of 5000 to 6000 prisoners was completely used up in eight weeks.

I, too, had typhus and at one point weighed only 78 pounds. A friend managed to have me transferred to the kitchen, where I peeled potatoes. There I did not have to work as hard, and I received a half-liter more to eat per day. That•s how I recovered from that disease. Otherwise, typhus meant a death sentence. The crematorium could not keep up. We had mountains of ashes which were used to fertilize fields. Whenever a German prisoner died, the camp notified his relatives. These notices were, of course, pre-printed forms. They usually stated that the cause of death was due to a generally weakened condition or heart failure. For 20 marks, the family could receive the ashes of the deceased in an urn *f*.

At Gross-Rosen, the Sinti were not housed together in a separate barracks, but you could tell who they were by their triangular marking *f*. As Gypsies, we could not be appointed to any prisoner posts. I was, however, the only Sinti who kept the barracks register for the Lageältesten [camp elder]. It worked as follows: The block leader, a prisoner, received his assignment from the camp elder, who in turn reported to the SS. The SS appointed the prisoners to clean the barracks. The members of this work crew were responsible for order and cleanliness in the barracks, reporting to the block leader. The SS made it easy for themselves. If anything untoward occurred, punishments descended down the hierarchy; the SS would beat the camp elder, who in turn would beat the barracks elders, then the barracks elder would in turn beat the room elder, and then the room elder would beat the prisoners.

My block elder had been brought up in a juvenile care program, starting in special schools and homes and then in prison. Whenever he wanted to write home, I had to write these letters for him, but never received any benefits for doing this. A German prisoner could become a capo, a room elder, a block elder, or even a messenger to the Political Department. No Sinto could get any of these posts *f*.

I was in Gross-Rosen until 1943 and was then transferred to a satellite camp, a chemical plant owned by BASF at Dyhrenfurth near Breslau. There were 300 prisoners in the small camp at this factory. The factory produced poisonous gas for weapons: bombs, grenades, these were the Führer•s last weapons. Many prisoners became unconscious and died while filling these weapons. We were almost blinded by our work, and tiny little pills were placed in our eyes to dilate the iris so we could continue to see. Because we worked with these weapons, we were sworn to secrecy. I was not allowed to tell any of the other prisoners anything about my work.

And because I knew these secrets, I had a double sense of despair and hopelessness that the Nazis would not allow me to survive.

When Lodz was liberated by the Russians on January 2, 1945 we were evacuated and had to march 70 kilometers in wooden clogs back to Gross Rosen. Prisoners too exhausted to survive the march were shot. The main camp at Gross Rosen was filled beyond capacity, since all the satellite camps had been reassembled at the main camp. After a brief stop at Gross Rosen, we were marched to Striegau *f*. I will never forget that march. Women standing along the road threw stones and other objects at us, calling us "pigs." At Striegau we were loaded onto open freight cars, but the locomotive did not arrive and we were forced to march back to Gross Rosen through the night. Two to three hundred prisoners were crammed into a barrack normally assigned to one hundred prisoners; we stood packed together like sardines in a box.

In the middle of the night, the barracks were lit up when the camp came under attack. The Russians had probably learned that the prisoners had been evacuated, but were unaware that the prisoners had been forced to return that night. We pushed the window panes out and sought safety from the shelling outside. We saw many wounded and dead lying everywhere. The next morning the transport to Striegau was reassembled. Every hundred prisoners were placed in open freight cars, seated adjacent to grenades that were tied together. We collected snow from the edge of the train car in order to moisten our lips, since we had not received any water all day. We travelled for six days in those open freight cars from Gross Rosen via Dresden to Litomerice in Czechoslovakia; the latter camp was located four kilometers from Theresienstadt. By then, there were only 13 prisoners left in my car.

We arrived at the camp, a former barracks already occupied by Czech and Polish prisoners. The bunk beds consisted of ten levels of boxes and since the lower tiers were already occupied, a weak prisoner could not climb that high. Our block elder from Gross Rosen arranged that we were sent to a small satellite camp called Elsabe. The prisoners worked 150 metres deep in subterranean mine tunnels completing tank motors for the Elsabe Company of Chemnitz *f*. After two months there, I learned from a guard that the tunnels were mined and would be blown up along with the prisoners to prevent these motors from falling into enemy hands *f*.

A German Sinto from Nuremberg, whose name is deleted to protect his privacy, narrates his ordeal with phosgene gas experiments at Natzweiler-Struthof concentration camp in the excerpt "I was a Guinea Pig," published in Jürgen Ziegler (Ed.) Mitten unter uns; Natzweiler-Struthof: Spuren eines Konzentrationslagers ["In Our Midst; Natzweiler-Struthof:

Traces of a concentration campŽ] (Hamburg: VSA Verlag, 1986) pp. 96…98

On March 8, 1943, our entire family was arrested. We were sent to the Nuremberg prison and then to the concentration camp at Auschwitz. Auschwitz was a nasty camp. We were frequently beaten and had to do heavy labor. The death toll was high. One day, 90 volunteers were requested for construction work in Germany. We reported since conditions couldn•t be worse than here at Auschwitz.

More people reported than were selected. They took only young men who still had some strength left. We were taken from Auschwitz to Rothau in cattle cars. From there, we traveled by truck uphill to Struthof. Our transport was divided into two groups: 45 men had to share a small room with three-tier bunk beds; each bed was occupied by 2 men. We had to hand over all of our clothing and received only a night shirt and wooden shoes. We lived in this room for a while. Then the medical experiments began. By then, we regretted volunteering and said •not one of us will come out of here aliveŽ *f*. Meanwhile we learned that previously at Struthof, not even 1 women among the 90 who had been subjected to medical experiments had survived.

One day we were informed that physicians would come to inoculate us. We were told that we shouldn•t be afraid, since antidote shots would also be distributed. The physicians in their white coats arrived and we had to march past them with goose steps. I received an injection in my upper left arm. Everyone became ill with high fevers. One person went mad hitting his head repeatedly with his wooden clogs until he died after several days. He was not the only person to go crazy after these experiments. At first I was spared from the high fevers. The others couldn•t eat anything because of high fevers. Several people died in our room. When the others were improving, I had a high fever and was bathed in sweat for several days, but I survived. We were not forced to work in the camp during these medical experiments, but were isolated and prohibited from leaving our room. The experiments lasted from fall 1943 to spring 1944. After this, we were compelled to work in the camp. We had to cart away waste from the latrines. The carts had to be pulled up the mountain *f*.

One day a transport for Neckarelz was assembled. [Neckarelz contained two satellite labor camps for male prisoners from Natzweiler and existed from March 21, 1944, to late March 1945.] Everyone reported for labor. Since I didn•t want to remain in Natzweiler, where I feared I would die of lethal injections or be forced to participate in phosgene gas experiments, I volunteered for Neckarelz *f*.

We were taken to Neckarelz by train and housed in a school. The school was surrounded by barbed wire. I was, however, too weak to work. When we reported for roll call, the other prisoners assisted me. I was also carried

to work in the tunnels. I tried to hide whenever I could. One day a prisoner physician who occasionally visited the school informed me: "I can no longer keep your [condition] secret and will have to send you back to Natzweiler." Since I was too weak to work loading stones onto trucks in the tunnels, I was sent back to Natzweiler. I was immediately placed in a large room with perhaps 100 other prisoners, they were ill with tuberculosis. They died like flies in front of me, behind me, and next to me. Here I met a prisoner physician to whom I owe my life. He was French. He concluded that my illness was not that severe and that he could help me. Once I was a bit better, I was moved to another room. One day, we were informed that all Gypsies in the camp had to report. We were taken to the gas chamber in Struthof. Many of us were taken to that gas chamber. Before I entered it, an SS doctor gave me an injection *f*. The interior of the gas chamber had white tiles. I had previously heard that there were gas experiments on prisoners at Struthof. One of the other prisoners said to me: "If you are sent inside, you should urinate on your handkerchief, hold it to your mouth, and lie down next to the door sill." I couldn't really imagine this, but in any case followed those instructions. When I entered, I took a towel scrap on which I had urinated, held it firmly to my nose and mouth, and placed myself as low as possible by the door sill. After a while, the door was opened and I stumbled out. Even today, I don't know how I survived. Perhaps I was lucky, perhaps it was the injection, or maybe they had used too little gas. At any rate, I emerged from the gas chamber and reentered the camp. I stayed there until late summer 1944, when the camp was evacuated to Dachau. The Americans arrived [at Dachau] on April 29, 1945, and we were liberated *f*.

The report by Anna P., née Schopper, born in 1926 in Dortmund, details her experiences in the Gypsy family compound BIIe at Auschwitz-Birkenau from mid-March 1943 to early summer 1944. It is excepted in the published catalog of the Dortmund Municipal Holocaust Memorial: Günther Högl (Ed.) Widerstand und Verfolgung in Dortmund, 1933-1945 Katalog zur ständigen Ausstellung des Stadtarchivs Dortmund in der Mahn- und Gedenkstätte Steinwache (Dortmund: Wittmaack Verlag, 1992), p. 440.

I was deported to Auschwitz as a 16-year-old girl together with my mother and nine brothers and sisters. The journey from Dortmund lasted several days and was horrible. We were packed together in cattle cars and received almost nothing to eat and drink. We reached Auschwitz on March 14, 1943. On arrival, we were immediately forced to hand over the few things we had been allowed to take with us; they even seized our clothing and shoes. We were shaved and tattooed; I was assigned number Z 2964. Housing consisted of barracks without windows and with very few air

vents. There was barely any possibility to bathe and there was never any soap. The bathrooms „ a simple outhouse toilets „ mocked every description. It was ghastly.

I had to work on road construction crews together with other women; we hammered the pavement level and hauled stones. Frequently, we were whipped to force us to continue working.

Provisions were catastrophic. One small loaf of bread was divided into eight portions; we had to make do with one portion of bread, a small pat of margarine, and a minuscule quantity of turnip greens. For lunch we were fed turnip stock. We were always hungry and grew steadily weaker. Many died from exhaustion and illness, especially from typhus. I got sick with dysentery and felt wretched. There were no drugs. I was compelled to eat charcoal, a by-product of the wood burning stoves in the barracks and thus perhaps survived that illness.

I later worked in the kitchen and recovered a bit. Since I was able to work, I was transferred in early summer 1944 together with my sister to a munitions plant in Zwodau/Graslitz [today respectively called Svatava and Kraslice in Czechoslovakia; the 1944 site of a subsidiary labor camp of Flossenbürg concentration camp]. It was there, totally emaciated and at the end of my strength, that I was liberated.

Elisabeth Gutterberger, a German Sintezza, was born in Stuttgart in 1926 and completed eight years of primary school there. She attributes her survival at Auschwitz to her earlier education that resulted in her assignment to a camp office. Together with four brothers and sisters, she had previously lived •in a very beautiful part of Stuttgart with many gardens and parks. My father earned his living with antiques and stringed instruments. We lived peacefully together with our neighbours Ž Arrested and deported to Auschwitz-Birkenau in early March 1943, she was given prisoner number Z-3991. She describes resistance by the prisoners of the Birkenau Gypsy family camp (BIIe) in mid-May 1944 and the liquidation of BIIe in early August 1944, resulting in her transfer on August 1, 1944, to Ravensbrück concentration camp. Gutterberger has told her story in many books, including H. G. Adler, Hermann Langbein, and Ella Lingens-Reiner (Eds.) Auschwitz: Zeugnisse und Berichte, [•Auschwitz: Testimony and Reports Ž], 3d rev. exp. ed. (Frankfurt: Europäische Verlagsanstalt, 1984), pp. 131…34. Her narrative was republished in German, Polish, and English language in Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum and Documentation and Cultural Center of German Sinti and Roma, Heidelberg (Ed.) Memorial Book: The Gypsies at Auschwitz-Birkenau, 2 vols. (Munich, London, New York, and Paris: K.G. Saur, 1993), 2 1497…1503. Her published account in the Memorial Book has been reedited by Sybil Milton

to include additional material from Gutterberger•s earlier published accounts:

Gypsies, like the Jews, were persecuted for racial reasons. All Gypsies that could be found were deported to Auschwitz, without consideration for their profession or trade, whether they had fixed domiciles or not *f*. As a 17-year-old girl, I was arrested *f* and taken to Auschwitz.

f We were arrested in March 1943. At 6 o•clock in the morning the police came and took us away in a truck. I was then 17. I was deported to Auschwitz together with my parents, four brothers and sisters, a 3-year-old niece, my 80-year-old grandmother, and many other relatives. My other grandmother came somewhat later with her daughter and nine grandchildren *f*.

The first impression I had of Auschwitz was horrible. It was already dark when we arrived. A huge tract of land, although one was able to see only the lights. We had to spend the night on the floor of a huge hall. Early the next morning we had to march into the camp. There, prisoner numbers were tattooed on our arms and our hair was cut off. The clothes, shoes, and the few things we still had with us were taken away. The Gypsy camp was in the Birkenau section, located between the men•s camp and the prisoners•infirmary [Häftlingskrankenbau]. In this section were 30 barracks which were called blocks. One block served as the toilet for the entire camp. More than 20,000 Gypsies were kept in the rest of the barracks. The barracks had no windows, only air vents. The floor was made out of clay. In one barrack, where there was enough room for perhaps 200 people, 800 or more people were lodged. This way of housing so many people was a horrible martyrdom. My aunt walked next to me. We looked at each other and tears began to roll down our faces *f*. It was dreadful. The people sat motionless on their plank beds and just stared at us. I thought I was dreaming. I thought I was in hell.

After about 14 days, we were divided into work gangs. With many other women, I was forced to carry heavy stones for construction work in the camp. The men were forced to build the camp road. Even old men, whether they were sick or not, had to work *f*. Everyone was used. My father was then 61. No one paid any attention to that *f*. Auschwitz was a death camp.

At that time, the construction of Birkenau had not yet been finished. The worst part was the hunger. The hygienic conditions are barely describable. There was virtually no soap or facilities for washing. When typhus broke out, the sick could not be treated, because there was no medicine. It was hell. One cannot imagine anything more horrifying. First, the children died. They cried day and night for bread. Soon they all starved to death. The children who were born in Auschwitz did not live long either. The only thing the Nazis were concerned with was that the

newborn were properly tattooed and registered. Most infants died several days after their births. There was no child care, no milk, no warm water, let alone powder or diapers. The older children, above the age of ten, had to carry rocks for the camp road, despite the fact that starvation caused them to die every day *f*.

In our labor brigade, we had to do everything while running. An SS Blockführer accompanied us by bicycle. If a woman tripped, because she was too frail, she was whipped. Many died from those beatings. The Blockführer in charge of the Gypsy camp was an SS Corporal [Ernst August] König; I never heard that he was tried or sentenced after the war. Even today, I could identify him immediately. [König was belatedly arraigned and indicted for murders he had committed in the Birkenau Gypsy camp and after a trial lasting nearly two years was sentenced to life imprisonment in January 1991 in the Siegen District Court. He subsequently committed suicide in prison after his appeal was rejected.]

Early morning roll calls were torture, standing at attention from 6 to 8 in the morning irrespective of weather. Everyone had to assemble for roll call, even the elderly, the children, and the sick. On Sunday, roll calls often lasted until noon, often standing in harsh heat without protective head covering. Many collapsed from heat prostration and infirmities.

After my first month in Auschwitz, a transport with 2000 Russian Gypsies arrived. These poor people were in the camp for only one night. They were sent to the crematoria and gassed the next day. Everyone, however short their stay in Birkenau, asked about the chimneys that produced smoke all night and all day. They were told that people were gassed and burned there. On the evening that the Russian Gypsies were gassed, the barracks were secured and we were forced to remain in our barracks [Blocksperre]. At about 9 that evening, trucks arrived at our compound and the Russian Gypsies were forcibly shoved aboard and driven to the crematoria. I secretly witnessed their departure.

I was also an eyewitness to another gassing operation. I had already been assigned to work in camp clerical office and was permitted to walk outside our barracks. The so-called sick camp [Krankenlager] was adjacent to our barracks. Jewish and Polish male prisoners were incarcerated there. I observed two trucks driving up to their barracks and the sick were thrown on board. Many could no longer walk and were starved skeletons. A few were naked; others had only a shirt. Before the trucks departed, a few prisoners mustered enough courage to curse their murderers.

After about a half year, I was put to work in a camp clerical office. There I had to file note cards for the transport lists, and was placed in charge of the main men•s register for our camp. I had to enter the death notices brought in from the infirmary. I entered thousands of names into that book. I had been in the office for just eight days when a death notice with

my father•s name arrived. I was paralyzed and tears streamed down my face. At that moment, the door swung open and SS Staff Sergeant Plagge stormed in and screamed, •Why is she blubbering in the corner?Ž I could not answer. My friend, a clerk named Lilly Weiss, said, •Her father died.Ž In response Plagge said, •We all have to die,Ž and left the office *f*.

The Gypsies also tried to defend themselves against the liquidation of the Gypsy camp. That was a very tragic story. The Gypsies made weapons out of sheet metal. They sharpened the metal into knives. With these improvised weapons and clubs, they tried to defend themselves as best they could. I know an eyewitness, a Polish woman named Zita, who worked across from us and lived through the liquidation of the Gypsy camp. Later, she told me how the Gypsies hit out and defended themselves, because they knew that they were going to be gassed. The resisters were mowed down with machine guns *f*.

In 1944, about 2000 Gypsies able to perform labor were deported from our compound; about 4500 people were left behind. These were the elderly, the sick, and those no longer able to perform heavy labor. These people were •liquidated,Ž as the SS called it, during the night of July 31 to August 1, 1944. Of the 30,000 Gypsies deported to Auschwitz, only about 3,000 survived. I know these figures because I worked in the camp office.

I lost about 30 of my relatives in Auschwitz. Both of my grandmothers died there. An aunt with ten children was there, only two children survived *f*. My father literally starved to death in the first few months. My older sister contracted typhus and died in 1943. Naturally, malnutrition and hunger were significant factors. Then my youngest brother died at the age of 13. He had to carry heavy rocks until he was an emaciated skeleton. My mother died of starvation several months afterwards. Auschwitz cannot be compared to anything else. To say, •the hell of Auschwitz• is not an exaggeration *f*.

I left the camp ill and am still sick today. I would like to remove the prisoner number tattooed on my lower left forearm. When I wear summer clothing without sleeves, I always cover this number. I have noticed that people stare at this tattooed number and often make malicious and vicious comments, thus always reminding me of the hellish camp experiences *f*.

There are few survivor reports about the killing fields of occupied Poland and the Soviet Union, where Jews and Gypsies were executed in forests, drowned in local rivers, and killed inside many ghettos, labor camps, and killing centers. Several eyewitness accounts by local residents are excerpted in Polish postwar regional publications as well as in the materials assembled by postwar Polish judicial authorities. These extracts

provide us with some insight about the fate of Gypsies deported from various Polish ghettos to Treblinka or killed in Polish fields and forests. The narrative by Michael Chodz´ko, a former prisoner at the Treblinka labor camp, was initially published in his article "The Gypsies in Treblinka," Rzeczpospolita [The Republic], Lublin, no. 35, September 6, 1945) and was reproduced in Jerzy Ficowski's book, Cyganie na polskich drogach: Wydanie trzecie poprawione i rozszerzone ["Gypsies on the Roads of Poland"], 3d rev. exp. ed. (Cracow and Wroclaw: Literary Publishing House, 1965), pp. 125–26

In the spring of 1942, Gypsies [were locked up within the narrow walls of Jewish ghettos. The death penalty was threatened for leaving the ghetto and not wearing the armband with the letter Z [Zigeuner, Gypsy]. Until the fall of 1942, Gypsies were hauled off, along with Jews, to the killing centers at Majdanek, Treblinka, and others, where they were killed in the gas chambers, or else shot, and their bodies later burned. Despite the walls and barbed wire closing off the Jewish quarters, groups of Gypsies succeeded in temporarily getting outside the ghettos. The Germans sent Gypsies to the "labor camp" at Treblinka with assurances that they would like it in the camp especially organized for them in the forest [. They arrived in Treblinka to set up "their camp." The march was halted at the edge of the forest which was the place of execution and the grave for hundreds of thousands of people. Trustingly, the crowd sat down in a meadow; they were allowed to light a fire, over which they prepared hot meals. A few hours later the SS arrived, and the men were separated from the women and children. Their possessions and baggage were piled up in one big heap. The men were led off deeper into the forest [. They were forced into a pit a hundred at a time, and then machine-gunned. The Gypsies who were still alive were forced to bury those who had been shot „ and who were often only wounded „ before they, themselves, were pushed into the pit, and a hundred people more were deprived of their lives in the clatter of machine-gun fire. The bodies were covered with a shallow layer of earth [. When the men were taken away, the Gypsy women did not know what had happened to them, but when they heard the constant gunfire, they began to scream and wail. The Nazis at that point ceased to dissemble: they no longer spoke of a "Gypsy camp" and encouraged the soldiers to begin a brutal massacre. They seized babies from their mothers and killed the infants by bashing their heads against trees. With whips and cudgels the SS covered with blows the women who had been driven insane by the spectacle. The women threw themselves at the soldiers and tried to wrest their babies away. This scene was only brought to an end by salvos of gunfire from the surrounding SS and soldiers. The bodies of the executed women and children were later cleared

by other prisoners specially brought in for that purpose; the corpses were taken to graves that had been prepared beforehand in an adjacent forest.

An Austrian Roma survivor Leopoldine Papai, then 36 years old, was interviewed in 1966 in her modest home on the outskirts of Vienna by Selma Steinmetz for a project of the Documentation Archives of the Austrian Resistance, Vienna. Excerpts from this interview were reprinted in Steinmetz•s Österreichs Zigeuner im NS-Staat [•Austrian Gypsies under the Nazis•] (Vienna, Frankfurt, and Zurich: Europa Verlag, 1966) pp. 40…41

My father was the village blacksmith in Holzschlag. Many Gypsies lived there in 1938. And we were permanent residents, not like now [living] at the edge of town. We were then a large family with nine children; three of my brothers were already married and had many children. My married sister also had four children, when the persecutons began. Already in 1941, they took my father, three brothers, and two sisters to Sindisdorf near Pinkafeld. Two brothers and a sister were deported to Litzmannstadt [the Lodz ghetto] and were never heard from again. My parents and my other siblings were sent back home after two days and their ration cards were returned to them.

However, the SS returned in April 1943. My father was then above the age of 60. I was still a child, only 14; my youngest sister was four years younger. We were deported in cattle cars. If our town officials had been consulted, we would certainly have been allowed to remain at home. The mayor had tears in his eyes, when we last saw him. We petitioned to be allowed to remain at home. The residents assuedly needed a blacksmith like my father. This is why we had initially been allowed to stay. But by April 1943, it was too late and no pleas would have helped. We were forced to leave.

We were sent directly to Auschwitz with a large transport and were immediately driven to heavy labor. [Steinmetz notes that the Auschwitz Calendarium of April 16, 1943, records the registration of 1847 Austrian Gypsies arriving at Auschwitz, and that Leopoldine Papai was assigned the number Z-7706.] I had to carry 10 kg. of heavy stones. I also witnessed how Jews were sent to the gas chambers. We observed how they undressed *f*.

My parents were killed in Auschwitz, my father died of typhus. In the fall of 1944 *f* there were no longer any Gypsies in our large camp. We were told that they had all been sent to the gas chambers.

Shortly thereafter, my sister and I „ together with many Jews „ were sent to Ravensbrück. Many on this transport were shot, many died. After eight months, we were again deported, initially to Mauthausen and later to

Bergen-Belsen. That was the worst. There was absolutely nothing to eat there and we slept on the bare ground. The British freed us in Bergen-Belsen.

There are only 2 of us alive out of 36 family members; my sister and I ƒ. I have lung problems because of the camps and will probably never be completely healthy.

The former Austrian political prisoner Johann Breirather wrote to the Federal Association of the Austrian Resistance and the Victims of Fascism on February 21, 1961, about the fate of his foster daughter, the Roma child Sidonie Adlersburg. Sidonie Adlersburg•s tragic childhood was also narrated in a popular Austrian television dramatization entitled Requiem for Sidonie, directed by Karin Brandauer in 1990. This text by Sidonie•s foster father is preserved in the Documentation Archives of the Austrian Resistance (DÖW), file 668

Post Neuzeug 200, Upper Austria

Neuzeug, 21 February 1961

Dear Comrades!

Our family read in the newspapers that Franz Hofer, former Gauleiter of the Tyrol, was arraigned. I would now like to record the following:

In 1933, we accepted a foster child with dark skin from the child welfare office. Ostensibly the mother had abandoned this child, but we never learned more precise information. These are the circumstances of how we obtained this child. Her name was Sidonie Adlersburg and she was presumably of Gypsy descent.

We considered her a member of our family along with our two other children. Everyone, except for racial fanatics, was fond of this child with her amusing manner.

In the fall of 1942, we were repeatedly told by the Steyr district child welfare office that our Sidonie would be sent to a children•s home. We appeared several times at the child welfare office in order to keep this child. We don•t want to describe those difficult times. At the end of February 1943, the child welfare office informed us that they had ostensibly located the child•s mother. The mother was in Hopfgarten in the Tyrol. On 10 March 1943, a nurse from the Steyr child welfare office took Sidonie to Hopfgarten. We were not convinced that the mother had actually been found. After the collapse of the Third Reich, I became a communa

official of Sierning and, with American permission, telephoned Hopfgarten. I learned that Gypsies of all ages had been assembled and deported from Hopfgarten and that the children were deported last. This transport, which included our Sidonie, was sent to Auschwitz in Poland. After 1945 we learned from the Steyr district child welfare office that according to a nurse from Vienna, who had herself been a prisoner at Auschwitz, Sidonie Adlersburg was infected with typhus bacilli and had then been gassed. I will end my report here.

Comrades, I was a political prisoner during the years 1933…1934 and this fact is officially certified in document no. 243 issued to me by the Upper Austrian state government.

We are not screaming for revenge, but everyone responsible for the death of others should be held accountable before a court of law. If former Gauleiter Franz Hofer is responsible for the deportation of Gypsies and people of color from all of Austria, he should be placed on trial. I am enclosing a photograph [of Sidonie] for your documentation.

With fraternal greetings,

[signed] Johann Breirather

An official statement by the Austrian Roma, Maria Kohlberger, on May 3, 1948, at the Linz district administration [Bezirkshauptmannschaft] tells of her inability to work as a commercial exhibitor, her assignment to forced labor, and the death of most of her family in several concentration camps. Her statement reveals the failure of postwar restitution to Roma and Sinti Holocaust victims. Kohlberger's affidavit is found in the Documentation Archives of the Austrian Resistance (DÖW), Vienna, file 13457.

Ms. Maria Kohlberger, born on 25 March 1909 in Buch, Lower Austria, Austrian citizen, commercial exhibitor, residing at Ödt 34, Traun, records the following statement at the Linz district administration office on 3 May 1948.

Until 1938, I held a license as a commercial exhibitor. With the incorporation of Austria in the German Reich, this license was rescinded, since as a descendant of Gypsies I was unable to document that I was Aryan. Since that time, I was constantly under

Gestapo surveillance. I was assigned to conscript labor in the Göring armament factory, was not allowed to leave the city, and was not deported to a concentration camp, since my employers reported that I was a good worker.

My mother Cäcilie Kohlberger died in Auschwitz. My brother Julius Kohlberger, together with his three children, perished at Dachau. My sister Albine Rosenfeld died together with her eight children in Litzmannstadt (Lodz), only because they were not Aryans.

I suffered severe injury as a racial persecutee under the terms of the Victims Welfare Law (Opferfürsorgegesetz). All professional items were confiscated from my sister Albine Rosenfeld, who was also a licensed commercial exhibitor. I have never received restitution for all impounded articles related to the practice of my licensed trade. Police official Neudorfer at the police presidium in Linz can confirm these facts. I am therefore requesting under paragraph 4 of the Victims Welfare Law that all objects urgently needed to reestablish my business be returned to me *f*.

Notes

This essay is a revised and expanded version of a paper presented at the 1991 annual meeting of the German Studies Association, Los Angeles.

1. For a discussion of Gypsies in Holocaust historiography, see Sybil Milton, "The Context of the Holocaust," German Studies Review 13 (1990): pp. 269–83; idem, "Gypsies and the Holocaust," The History Teacher 24, no. 4 (August 1991): pp. 375–87; and Correspondence, ibid 25, no. 4 (August 1992): pp. 515–21. For a discussion of postwar trends in German historical literature about Roma and Sinti, see Michael Zimmermann, Verfolgt, vertrieben, vernichtet: Die nationalsozialistische Vernichtungspolitik gegen Sinti und Roma (Essen: Klartext, 1989): pp. 87–98; and Kirsten Martins-Heuß, Zur mythischen Figur des Zigeuners in der deutschen Zigeunerforschung (Frankfurt: Haag and Herchen, 1983).
2. Yehuda Bauer, "Holocaust and Genocide: Some Comparisons," in Peter Hayes (Ed.) Lessons and Legacies: The Meaning of the Holocaust in a Changing World (Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press, 1991): p. 42; idem, "Jews, Gypsies, Slavs: Policies of the Third Reich," UNESCO Yearbook on Peace and Conflict Studies 1985 (Paris: UNESCO, 1987): pp. 73–100; idem, "Gypsies," Encyclopedia of the Holocaust, 4 vols. (New York and London: Macmillan, 1990), Volume 2: pp. 634–38; Hans-Joachim Döring, Die Zigeuner im nationalsozialistischen Staat, Kriminologische Schriftenreihe, Volume 12 (Hamburg: Deutsche Kriminalogische Gesellschaft, 1964), pp. 19ff. and 193; Bernhard Streck, "Nationalsozialistische Methoden zur Lösung der 'Zigeunerfrage'," Politische Didaktik: Zeitschrift für Theorie und Praxis des Unterrichts 1 (1981): pp. 26–37; and idem, "Die nationalsozialistischen Methoden zur 'Lösung des Zigeunerproblems'," Tribüne: Zeitschrift zum Verständnis des Judentums 20, no. 78 (1981): pp. 53–77. With excellent critiques of Streck's misinterpretations and unambiguous use of Nazi stereotypes and linguistic usage are Joachim S. Hohmann, "Ihnen geschah Unrecht: Zigeunerverfolgung in Deutschland," ibid 21, no. 82 (1982): pp. 100–13; and Romani Rose, "Die neuen Germanen und die alte Ideologie: Zigeunerforschung „wie gehabt?'," ibid 21, no. 81 (1982): pp. 88–107.

3. Excellent examples are Leni Yahil, The Holocaust: The Fate of European Jewry (New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1990), and Richard Breitman, The Architect of Genocide: Himmler and the Final Solution (New York: Knopf, 1991).
4. See Ludwig Eiber (Ed.) •Ich wußte, es wird schlimmŽ: Die Verfolgung der Sinti und Roma in München 1933…1945 (Munich: Buchendorfer Verlag, 1993), pp. 14…16. For the development of police and psychiatric registration practices in the late 19th and early 20th centuries, see Susanne Regener, •Ausgegrenzt: Die optische Inventarisierung der Menschen im Polizeiwesen und in der PsychiatrieŽ, Fotogeschichte 10, no. 38 (1990), 23…38.
5. See Eiber, Die Verfolgung der Sinti und Roma in München, pp. 40…45; in Zimmermann, Verfolgt, vertrieben, vernichtet, and Joachim S. Hohmann, Geschichte der Zigeunerverfolgung in Deutschland (Frankfurt and New York: Campus, 1988).
6. Karola Fings and Frank Sparing, Nur Wenige Kamen Zurück: Sinti und Roma im Nationalsozialismus (Cologne: Landesverband Deutscher Sinti und Roma NRW and EL-DE-Haus, 1990), p. 3.
7. Gisela Bock, Zwangssterilisation im Nationalsozialismus: Studien zur Rassenpolitik und Frauenpolitik (Opladen: Westdeutscher Verlag, 1986), pp. 361…68 and 452…56. See Theresia Seible, •Sintezza und Zigeunerin,Ž in Angelika Ebbinghaus (Ed.) Opfer und Täterinnen: Frauenbiographien des Nationalsozialismus, (Nördlingen: Greno-Delphi Politik, 1987), pp. 302…16.
8. Wilhelm Stuckart and Hans Globke, Kommentare zur deutschen Rassengesetzgebung (Munich and Berlin: C. H. Beck•sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, 1936), p. 153; Arthur Gütt, Herbert Linden, and Franz Massfeller, Blutschutz- und Ehegesundheitsgesetz, 2nd ed. (Munich: J. F. Lehmanns Verlag, 1937), pp. 16, 21, 150, and 226.
9. The Reichsbürgergesetz of September 17, 1935 reduced Jews and Gypsies to second-class citizens because of their •alien blood.Ž And in 1942 the 12th decree to the Reichsbürgergesetz resulted in most German Roma and Sinti being declared stateless. Jews and Gypsies above the age of 20 also lost the right to vote in Reichstag elections on March 7, 1936. See Joseph Walk (Ed.) Das Sonderrecht für die Juden im NS-Staat: Eine Sammlung der gesetzlichen Maßnahmen und Richtlinien „ Inhalt und Bedeutung (Heidelberg and Karlsruhe: C. F. Müller Juristischer Verlag, 1981), no. 127 on p. 156. Similarly, neither Jews nor Gypsies were permitted to vote in the April 10, 1938 plebiscite on the incorporation of Austria; this directive was issued in Vienna on March 23, 1938, ten days after the incorporation of Austria. See Dokumentationsarchiv des österreichischen Widerstandes, Vienna (hereafter DÖW), file 11151.
10. See Franz Calvelli-Adorno, •Die rassische Verfolgung der Zigeuner vor dem 1. März 1943,Ž Rechtsprechung zum Wiedergutmachungsrecht 12 (December 1961) pp. 121…42; and Joachim S. Hohmann, Robert Ritter und die Erben der Kriminalbiologie: •Zigeunerforschung,Ž im Nationalsozialismus und in Westdeutschland im Zeichen des Rassismus (Frankfurt, Bern, New York, and Paris: Peter Lang, 1991).
11. See Heinrich Wilhelm Kranz, •Zigeuner, wie sie wirklich sind,Ž Neues Volk 5, no. 9 (September 1937) pp. 21…27.

    Heinrich Wilhelm Kranz (1897…1945), an ophthalmologist, had joined both the Nazi Party and Nazi Physicians•League prior to 1933. After his appointment to teach race science (Rassenkunde) at Giessen, he obtained, in 1938, the newly created chair for race science at Giessen University. He became the rector of Giessen in 1940. In Gessen he also headed the Race•Political Office of the Gau Hessen-Nassau. In 1940…1941, he, together with Siegfried Koller, he published their three-volume Die Gemeinschaftsunfähigen, advocating sterilization, marriage prohibition, and compulsory internment in labor camps for •asocials.Ž

    For biographical data on Kranz, see Berlin Document Center: Heinrich Wilhelm Kranz file; Michael H. Kater, Doctors Under Hitler (Chapel Hill and London: University of North Carolina Press, 1989), pp. 115…19; Benno Müller-Hill, Murderous Science: Elimination by Scientific Selection of Jews, Gypsies, and Others; Germany, 1933•1945, trans. George R. Fraser (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1988), note 73 on p. 181; and Hohmann, Geschichte der Zigeunerverfolgung, pp. 115…21.

    For the antecedents of Nazi practice and ideology towards Gypsies, see ibid, pp. 48-84. For a brief history of Ritter's office in the Reichsgesundheitsamt, see Bundesgesundheitsblatt 32 (March 1989), special issue •Das Reichsgesundheitsamt, 1933-1945: Eine Ausstellung.Ž

12. The Reichsvertretung der Juden in Deutschland (or the Reich Representation of German Jews) was created in 1933, and served as the federal umbrella organization established by Jewish organizations in Germany to represent the Jewish community vis-à-vis the German government; part of its name was changed under the Nuremberg racial laws of 1935 from "of German Jews" (der deutschen Juden) to "of Jews in Germany" (der Juden in Deutschland). In February 1939, following the dissolution of all remaining individual Jewish organizations in Germany, the Reichsvertretung was formally replaced by the unified Reichsvereinigung.
13. The Reichsvereinigung der Juden in Deutschland (or the Reich Association of Jews in Germany) was the compulsory association of all Jews in Germany after 1939.
14. Bundesarchiv Koblenz (hereafter BAK), R36, files 1022 and 1023 "Fürsorge für Juden und Zigeuner." The institutionalized handicapped faced similar deteriorating conditions, see Angelika Ebbinghaus, "Kostensenkung, "Aktives Therapie" und Vernichtung." In Angelika Ebbinghaus, Heidrun Kaupen-Haas, and Karl Heinz Roth (Eds.) Heilen und Vernichten im Mustergau Hamburg: Bevölkerungs- und Gesundheitspolitik im Dritten Reich (Hamburg: Konkret Literatur Verlag, 1984) pp. 136…46.
15. BAK, R18/5644 pp. 215…27, containing cover letter and 6-page memorandum from Oberregierungsrat Zindel to Staatssekretär Pfundtner, "Gedanken über den Aufbau des Reichszigeunergesetzes," March 4, 1936. The document states "Auf Grund aller bisherigen Erfahrungen muss jedenfalls vorweg festgestellt werden, daß eine restlose Lösung des Zigeunerproblems weder in einem einzelnen Staate noch international in absehbarer Zeit möglich sein wird." (emphasis in the original) Reproduced in facsimile in Henry Friedlander and Sybil Milton (Eds.) Bundesarchiv of the Federal Republic of Germany, Koblenz and Freiburg, Volume 20 of Archives of the Holocaust (New York and London: Garland, 1993), 20 pp. 100…06.
16. Runderlaß des Reichs- und Preußischen Ministers des Innen betr. "Bekämpfung der Zigeunerplage," June 5, 1936 (III C II 20, rNr. 8/36), in Ministerialblatt für die Preußische Innere Verwaltung 1, no. 27 (June 17, 1936) 783. Reproduced in facsimile in Eva von Hase-Mihalik and Doris Kreuzkamp, Du kriegst auch einen schönen Wohnwagen: Zwangslager für Sinti und Roma während des Nationalsozialismus in Frankfurt am Main (Frankfurt: Brandes and Apsel, 1990), pp. 43…44.
17. Staatsanwaltschaft [hereafter StA] Hamburg, Verfahren 2200 Js 2/84 Reich- und Preußisches Ministerium des Innern, Runderlaß betr. "Bekämpfung der Zigeunerplage," June 6, 1936 (III C II 20, Nr. 10/36); published in Ministerialblatt für die Preußische Innere Verwaltung 1, no. 27 (June 17, 1936) 785. Reproduced in facsimile in Hase-Mihalik and Kreuzkamp, Wohnwagen, pp. 44…45.
18. See Ute Bruckner-Boroujerdi and Wolfgang Wippermann, "Das "Zigeunerlager" Berlin-Marzahn, 1936-1945: Zur Geschichte und Funktion eines nationalsozialistischen Zwangslagers," Pogrom 18, no. 130 (June 1987) pp. 77…80.
19. BAK, ZSg 142/3 Report about the Gypsy Camp Marzahn, September 1, 1936, and report by G. Stein, "Untersuchungen im Zigeunerlager Marzahn," Frankfurt, October 26, 1936.
20. See Hans Reiter, Das Reichsgesundheitsamt 1933…1939: Sechs Jahre nationalsozialistische Führung (Berlin: Julius Springer Verlag, 1939) pp. 356…58. See also the special issue "Das Reichsgesundheitsamt, 1933…1945: Eine Ausstellung," Bundesgesundheitsblatt 32 (March 1989) pp. 13…30; and Feinderklärung und Prävention: Kriminalbiologie, Zigeunerforschung und Asozialenpolitik, Volume 6 of Beiträge zur nationalsozialistischen Gesundheits- und Sozialpolitik (Berlin: Rotbuch Verlag, 1988).
21. Robert Ritter, "Die Bestandsaufnahme der Zigeuner und Zigeunermischlinge in Deutschland," Der Öffentliche Gesundheitsdienst 6, no. 21 (February 6, 1941) pp. 477…89; idem, "Die Aufgaben der Kriminalbiologie und der kriminalbiologischen Bevölkerungsforschung," Kriminalistik 15, no. 4 (April 1941) pp. 1-4; and idem, "Primitivität und Kriminalität," Monatsschrift für Kriminalbiologie und Strafrechtsreform 31, no. 9 (1940) pp. 197…210. See also BAK, R73/14005, containing Ritter's reports and correspondence with the Deutsche Forschungsgemeinschaft; and BAK, ZSg 149/22, similar Ritter material in the Hermann Arnold Collection.
22. Adolf Würth, "Bemerkungen zur Zigeunerfrage und Zigeunerforschung in Deutschland," Verhandlungen der deutschen Gesellschaft für Rassenforschung, Sonderheft des Anthropologischen Anzeiger Stuttgart 9 (1937…1938) 92.
23. Müller-Hill, Murderous Science, pp. 143…49.

24. See Reimar Gilsenbach, •Wie Lolitschai zur Doktorwürde kam,Ž in Beiträge zur nationalsozialistischen Gesundheits- und Sozialpolitik 6 (Berlin, 1988) pp. 101…34; Hannes Meister, •Schicksale der •Zigeunerkinder• aus der St. Josefspflege in Mulfingen,Ž Württembergisch Franken Jahrbuch (1984) pp. 197…229; and Ibid, •Die •Zigeunerkinder• von der St. Josefspflege in Mulfingen,Ž 1999 Zeitschrift für Sozialgeschichte des 20. und 21. Jahrhunderts 2, no. 2 (April 1987) pp. 14…51. See also Eva Justin, •Die Rom-Zigeuner,Ž Neues Volk 11, no. 5 (1943) pp. 21…24; and Justin•s dissertation, Lebensschicksale artfremder zigeuner Zigeunerkinder und ihrer Nachkommen, v. 57, no. 4 of the series Veröffentlichungen aus dem Gebiete des Volksgesundheitsdienstes (Berlin: Richard Schoetz, 1944).
25. Sophie Ehrhardt, •Zigeuner und Zigeunermischlinge in Ostpreußen,Ž Volk und Rasse: Zeitschrift des Reichsausschusses für Volksgesundheit und der Deutschen Gesellschaft für Rassenhygiene 17 (1942) pp. 52…57. From the Landesjustizverwaltungen, Ludwigsburg (hereafter ZStL), 415 AR 314/81, Bd. 1, pp. 110…31 (Ehrhardt) and Bd. 2, pp. 332…46 (Würth): Ermittlungsverfahren der StA Stuttart gg. Sophie Ehrhardt und Adolf Würth; these interrogations are reproduced in facsimile in Henry Friedlander and Sybil Milton (Eds.) Zentrale Stelle der Landesjustizverwaltungen, Ludwigsburg, vol. 22 of Archives of the Holocaust (New York and London: Garland, 1993), 22 pp. 315…48. See also Benigna Schönhagen, Ed., Nationalsozialismus in Tübingen: Vorbei und Vergessen (Tübingen: Stadt Tübingen-Kulturamt, 1992) pp. 107, 110…11, 292 n. 316…17.
26. For Cologne, see Karola Fings and Frank Sparing, •Das Zigeuner-Lager in Köln-Bickendorf, 1935…1958,Ž 1999 Zeitschrift für Sozialgeschichte des 20. und 21. Jahrhunderts 6, no. 3 (July 1991) pp. 11…40. For Düsseldorf, see Angela Genge (Ed.) Verfolgung und Widerstand in Düsseldorf, 1933…1945 (Düsseldorf: Landeshauptstadt Düsseldorf, 1990), pp. 126…33; and Karola Fings and Frank Sparing, •z. Zt. Zigeunerlager.Ž Die Verfolgung der Düsseldorfer Sinti und Roma im Nationalsozialismus (Cologne: Volksblatt Verlag, 1992). For Essen and Gelsenkirchen, see Michael Zimmermann, •Von der Diskriminierung zum •Familienlager•• Auschwitz: Die nationalsozialistische Zigeunerverfolgung,Ž Dachauer Hefte 5 (1989) pp. 87…114; and idem, Verfolgt, vertrieben, vernichtet, pp. 18…22. For Frankfurt, see Wolfgang Wippermann, Die nationalsozialistische Zigeunerverfolgung, Volume 2 of the four-part study Leben in Frankfurt zur NS-Zeit (Frankfurt: Stadt Frankfurt am Main „ Amt für Volksbildung/Volkshochschule, 1986), Die Grünen im Landtag Hessen, Lothar Bembenek, and Frank Schwalba-Hoth, Ed., Hessen hinter Stacheldraht; Verdrängt und Vergessen: KZs, Lager, Außenkommandos (Frankfurt: Eichborn Verlag, 1984) pp. 153…68; and Hase-Mihalik and Kreuzkamp, Wohnwagen. For Hamburg, see Rudko Kawczynski, •Hamburg soll •zigeunerfrei• werden,Ž in Ebbinghaus and others, Heilen und Vernichten im Mustergau Hamburg, pp. 45…53.
27. Stadtarchiv Frankfurt, Mag. Akte (Stadtkanzlei) 2203, vol. 1: Minutes of the Frankfurt City Council, March 20, 1936, concerning •Massnahmen gegen das Zigeunerunwesen.Ž
28. Hase-Mihalik and Kreuzkamp, Wohnwagen, p. 42.
29. Fings and Sparing, Die Verfolgung der Düsseldorfer Sinti und Roma, pp. 36…37.
30. StA Hamburg, 2200 Js 2/84. Decree of the Reich and Prussian Ministry of the Interior concerning •Vorbeugende Verbrechensbekämpfung durch die Polizei,Ž December 14, 1937, and •Richtlinien,Ž April 4, 1938. For the raids against so-called asocials, see Wolfgang Ayaß, ••Ein Gebot der nationalen Arbeitsdisziplin•: Die Aktion •Arbeitsscheu Reich• 1938,Ž Beiträge zur nationalsozialistischen Gesundheits- und Sozialpolitik 6 (Berlin, 1988) pp. 43…74. For a survey of the concentration camp system, see Henry Friedlander, •The Nazi Concentration Camps.Ž In Michael Ryan (Ed.) Human Responses to the Holocaust (New York and Toronto: Edwin Mellen Press, 1981), pp. 33…69; and Falk Pingel, Häftlinge unter SS-Herrschaft: Widerstand, Selbstbehauptung und Vernichtung im Konzentrationslager (Hamburg: Hoffmann and Campe, 1978). On camps for women, see Sybil Milton, •Women and the Holocaust: The Case of German and German-Jewish Women.Ž In Renate Bridenthal, Atina Grossman, and Marion Kaplan (Eds.) When Biology Became Destiny: Women in Weimar and Nazi Germany (New York: Monthly Review Press, 1984), pp. 297…333, passim 305…07. For the 1933 imprisonment of several Sinti in Worms-Oshofen concentration camp, see Michail Krausnick (Ed.) •Da wollten wir frei sein!Ž Eine Sinti-Familie erzählt (Weinheim and Basel: Beltz and Gelberg, 1993) p. 73.

31. The persecution of Gypsies in incorporated Austria is relatively well documented. See Selma Steinmetz, Österreichs Zigeuner im NS-Staat (Vienna, Frankfurt, and Zurich: Europa Verlag, 1966); Erika Thurner, Nationalsozialismus und Zigeuner in Österreich (Vienna and Salzburg: Geyer Edition, 1983); and Andreas Maislinger, ••Zigeuneranhaltelager und Arbeitserziehungslager•• Weyer: Ergänzung einer Ortschronik,Ž Pogrom 18, no. 137 (1987) pp. 33…36.
32. Dokumentationsarchiv des österreichischen Widerstandes, Ed., Widerstand und Verfolgung in Salzburg 1934…1945, 3 vols. (Vienna and Salzburg: Österreichischer Bundesverlag and Universitätsverlag Anton Pustet, 1991), 2 pp. 474…521; and Elisabeth Klamper, •Persecution and Annihilation of Roma and Sinti in Austria, 1938…1945,• Journal of the Gypsy Lore Society, 5, Vol. 3, No. 2 (1993) 55…65.
33. B. A. Sijes, and others, Vervolging van Zigeuners in Nederland, 1940…1945 (The Hague Martinus Njhoff, 1979).
34. See Michael R. Marrus and Roger O. Paxton, Vichy France and the Jews (New York: Basic Books, 1981) pp. 366…68.
35. See, for example, •Fahrendes Volk: Die Bekämpfung der Zigeunerplage auf neuen Wege,Ž NS-Rechtsspiegel (Munich), February 21, 1939 facsimile in Sybil Milton and Roland Klemig (Eds.), Bildarchiv Preussischer Kulturbesitz, Vol. 1 of Archives of the Holocaust (New York: Garland, 1990), Part 1, figs. 150…51; •Die Zigeuner als asoziale Bevölkerungsgruppe,Ž Deutsches Ärzteblatt 69 (1939:) pp. 246…47; and •Die Zigeunerfrage in der Ostmark,Ž Neues Volk 6, no. 9 (September 1938) pp. 22…27. See also DÖW, file 4942 Oberstaatsanwalt Dr. Meissner, Oberlandesgericht Graz, report to Reichjustizminister, February 5, 1940.
36. Runderlaß des Reichsführer SS und Chef der Deutschen Polizei im Ministerium des Innern, December 8, 1938 betr. •Bekämpfung der Zigeunerplage,Ž Ministerialblatt des Reichs- und Preußischen Ministeriums des Innern 51 (1938:) pp. 2105…19. See also •Ausführungsanweisung des Reichskriminalpolizeiamts,Ž March 1, 1939, published in Deutsches Kriminalpolizeiblatt 12, special issue (March 20, 1939).
37. See National Archives and Records Administration, Washington, Microfilm Publication T-70, reel 109, frames 3632755-6. Peter Raabe's remarks as president of the Reich Music Chamber published in Amtliche Mitteilungen der Reichsmusikkammer, May 1, 1939. The lists of expelled Gypsy musicians were published between February and December 1940. See ibid, frames 3632796-8, containing the list published on February 15, 1940. This material is cited in Alan E. Steinweis•Art, Ideology and Economics in Nazi Germany: The Reich Chambers of Music, Theater, and the Visual Arts (Chapel Hill and London: University of North Carolina Press, 1993) pp. 126…27, 132, 220 n. 205.
38. Nuremberg Doc. NG-684, copy in DÖW, file 4942.
39. StA Hamburg, Verfahren 2200 Js 2/88 RSHA Schnellbrief to Kripo (leit)stellen, October 17, 1939.
40. ZStL, Slg. CSSR, Bd. 148, pp. 55…57, and Bd. 332, pp. 289…300, 308. Some of these documents are reproduced in facsimile in Henry Friedlander and Sybil Milton (Eds.) Zentrale Stelle der Landesjustizverwaltungen, Ludwigsburg, vol. 22 of Archives of the Holocaust (New York and London: Garland, 1993), 22 pp. 71…78. See also Jonny Moser, •Nisko: The First Experiment in Deportation,Ž Simon Wiesenthal Center Annual 2 (1985:) pp. 1…30.
41. BAK, R18/5644, pp. 229…30. Letter from Leonardo Conti, Secretary of State for Health in the Reich Ministry of Interior, to the Central Office of the Security Police, Kripo headquarters, and the Reich Health Department, Berlin, January 24, 1940. The letter states

    > It is known that the lives of Gypsies and part-Gypsies is to be regulated by a Gypsy law (Zigeunergesetz). Moreover, the mixing of Gypsy with German blood is to be resisted and, if necessary, this could be legally achieved by creating a statutory basis for the sterilization of part-Gypsies (Zigeunermischlinge). These questions were already in a state of flux before the war started. The war has apparently suddenly created a new situation, since the possibility of expelling Gypsies to the General Government is available. Certainly, such an expulsion appears to have particular advantages at the moment. However, in my opinion, the implementation of such a plan would mean that because it is expedient to do this at the moment, a genuine radicalization would not be achieved. I firmly believe, now as before, that the final solution of the Gypsy problem (endgültige Lösung der Zigeunerproblems) can only be achieved through the sterilization of full and part-Gypsies *f*. I think that the time for a legal resolution of these problems is over, and that we must immediately try to

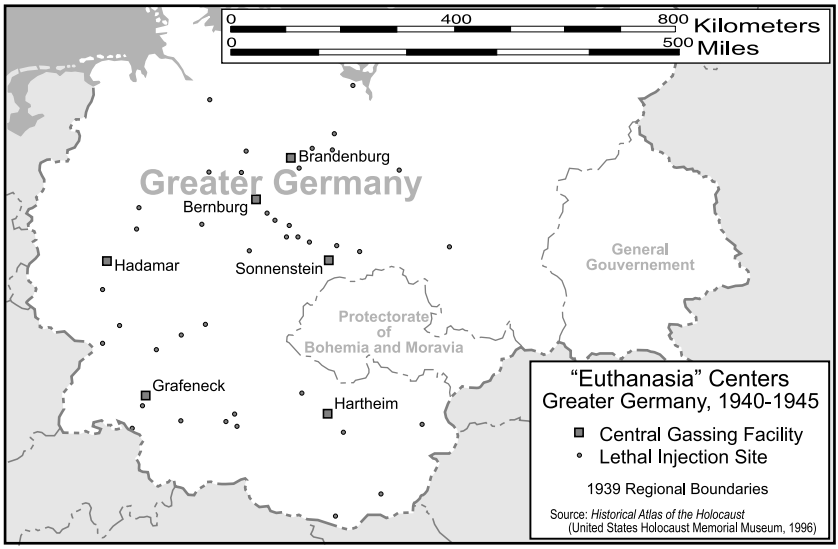
sterilize the Gypsies and part-Gypsies as a special measure, using analogous precedents *f*. Once sterilization is completed and these people are rendered biologically harmless, it is of no great consequence whether they are expelled or used as labor on the home front.

42. Hessisches Hauptstaatsarchiv, Wiesbaden [hereafter HHStA], 407/863. See also Milton, "Gypsies and the Holocaust," pp. 380-81; Zimmermann, Verfolgt, vertrieben, vernichtet, pp. 43…50; Hans Buchheim, "Die Zigeunerdeportation vom Mai 1940," in Gutachten des Instituts für Zeitgeschichte, 2 vols. (Munich, 1958), 1:pp. 51ff.; and Michael Krausnick, Abfahrt Karlsruhe 16.5.1940: Die Deportation der Karlsruher Sinti und Roma; ein unterschlagenes Kapitel aus der Geschichte unserer Stadt (Karlsruhe: Verband der Sinti und Roma Karlsruhe e.V., 1991). The May 1940 deportation was linked to Reinhard Heydrich's instructions to chiefs of police and district governors in Germany in the so-called Umsiedlungserlaß of April 27, 1940, for the "resettlement, arrest, and deportation of Gypsies above the age of 17 from western and northwestern border zones." See BAK, R58/473: Richtlinien für die Umsiedlung von Zigeunern, Berlin, April 27, 1940.
43. See DÖW, file E18518: letter from Kripostelle Salzburg to the Reichsstatthalter Provincial President Dr. Reitter, Salzburg, July 5, 1940. The Gypsies were to be imprisoned in a special camp until deportation; there they would be registered and given medical examinations.
44. United States Holocaust Memorial Museum Archives, Record Group 7, Washington, Fojn-Felczer collection: Ruling (Feststellung) of the Reich Ministry of Interior, Berlin, January 26, 1943, that Gypsies transferred to concentration camps on orders of the Reich Leader SS were defined as enemies of the Reich and, consequently, their property and possessions could be seized.
45. See Henry Friedlander, "The Deportation of the German Jews: Postwar German Trials of Nazi Criminals," Leo Baeck Institute Yearbook 29 (1984): p. 212.
46. Werner Präg and Wolfgang Jacobmeyer, Ed., Das Diensttagebuch des deutschen Generalgouverneurs in Polen, 1939-1945 (Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlagsanstalt, 1975), pp. 93, 146…47 (March 4, 1940), 158 (April 5, 1940), and 262 (July 31, 1940). See also Friedlander, "Deportation of German Jews," p. 209.
47. StA Hamburg, Verfahren 2200 Js 2/84: RSHA Rundschreiben to Kripoleitstelle Königsberg, July 22, 1941. The fate of one East Prussian Sinti family deported to the Bialystok ghetto is detailed in Amanda Dambrowski, "Das Schicksal einer vertriebenen ostpreußischen Sinti-Familie im NS-Staat," Pogrom 12, nos. 80-81 (March-April 1981): pp. 72…75.
48. See Jerzy Ficowski, Cyganie na Polskich Drogach (Cracow and Wroclaw: Wydawnictwo Literackie, 1985), pp. 129…51; Lucjan Dobroszycki (Ed.) The Chronicles of the Lodz Ghetto, 1941…1944 (New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 1984), pp. 82, 85, 96, 101, and 107; Antoni Galinski, "Nazi Camp for Gypsies," 16 pp. mimeographed paper presented at a conference of the Main Commission for the Investigation of Nazi and Stalinist Crimes in Poland (Warsaw, April 1983); and DÖW, files 11293, 11477, and 18518. See also Hanno Loewy and Gerhard Schoenberner, "Unser einziger Weg ist Arbeit": Das Getto in Lodz, 1940…1944 (Frankfurt and Vienna: Löcker Verlag, 1990), pp. 186…87.
49. Raul Hilberg, Stanislaw Staron, Josef Kermisz, Ed., The Warsaw Diary of Adam Czerniakow: Prelude to Doom (New York: Stein and Day, 1979), pp. 346…47, 351, 364…68, 375. See the decree of the Warsaw police president "Mit den Juden auch die Zigeuner hinter Mauern," Nowy Kurier Warszawski no. 131 (June 5, 1942); and Michal Chodzko, "Zigeuner in Treblinka," Rzeczpospolita (Lublin), no. 35 (September 6, 1944), translated and excerpted in Tilman Zülch (Ed.) In Auschwitz vergast, bis heute verfolgt: Zur Situation der Roma (Zigeuner) in Deutschland und Europa (Reinbek bei Hamburg: Rowohlt, 1979), pp. 101…03. See also Yad Vashem, Jerusalem, E 39: Elias Rosenberg, "Das Todeslager Treblinka," (11 pp. typescript, written enroute to Palestine, nd. [1946?]), pp. 6…7. Rosenberg describes the arrival of two Roma transports in Treblinka in late November 1942 and records their defiance on the way to the gas chambers, thus necessitating the use of additional German SS and Ukrainian guards.

50. For one example, see the published judgment (sentence to life imprisonment) against SS Lieutenant Colonel (Obersturmbannführer) Albert Rapp (chief of Sonderkommando 7a of Einsatzgruppe B) for killing Jews, Gypsies, and the handicapped; Landgericht Essen, March 29, 1965, 29 Ks 1/64, in Justiz und NS-Verbrechen: Sammlung deutscher Strafurteile wegen nationalsozialistischer Tötungsverbrechen, Ed. Adelheid L. Rüter-Ehlermann and C. F. Rüter, 22 vols. (Amsterdam: University Press Amsterdam, 1968…81), 20 vols. 588, pp. 732 and 754ff. See also ZStL, Sammlung UdSSR, Bd. 245 Acc. p. 318 Extract from a 1945 Soviet report concerning the town of Elgava, occupied on June 30, 1941, which notes that 6000 Jews were killed; 44 institutionalized psychiatric patients were shot on September 2, 1941, and an additional 440 psychiatric patients were shot and buried in a nearby forest on January 8, 1942; and 280 Gypsies were shot and killed on May 27…28, 1942.
51. Nuremberg Doc. NO-3278 • Ereignismeldungen UdSSR 153, January 9, 1942.
52. Trials of War Criminals before the Nuremberg Military Tribunals under Control Council Law No. 10 [Green series], 14 vols. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1950…1952), p. 286.
53. Yivo Institute, New York: Berlin Collection, Occ E 3-61 Reich Ministry for the Occupied Eastern Territories to Reichkommissar Ostland, June 11, 1942.
54. StA Hamburg, Verfahren 2200 Js 2/84 • Anordnung des Reichsarbeitsministers betr: die Beschäftigung von Zigeuner, March 13, 1942. The parallel law for Jews was • die Verordnung über die Beschäftigung von Juden, October 3, 1941, Reichsgesetzblatt 1: 675, and • die Verordnung zur Durchführung der Verordnung über die Beschäftigung von Juden, October 31, 1941, ibid. 1: 681.
55. BAK, R19/180.
56. StA Hamburg, Verfahren 2200 Js 2/84 • RSHA Schnellbrief betr: Einweisung von Zigeunermischlinge, Rom-Zigeunern und balkanischen Zigeunern in ein Konzentrationslager, January 29, 1943. The text of the December 16, 1942, unpublished decree has been lost, but the date of that December law is found in the first sentence of the January 29, 1943, Schnellbrief. Professor Richard Breitman, American University, kindly provided the information about the Himmler meeting with Hitler.
57. Danuta Czech, Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau 1939…1945 (Reinbek bei Hamburg: Rowohlt, 1989), p. 423.
58. See Milton, • The Context of the Holocaust, p. 275; and HHStA, 407/863 Richtlinien für die Umsiedlung von Zigeunern, Berlin, April 27, 1940.
59. Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum and Documentation and Cultural Center of German Sinti and Roma, Heidelberg (Ed.) Memorial Book: The Gypsies at Auschwitz-Birkenau, 2 vols. (Munich, London, New York, and Paris: K.G. Saur, 1993), 21547; and Czech, 774. See Elisabeth Gutterberger testimony, pp. 254…258.
60. See Benno Müller-Hill, Tödliche Wissenschaft: Die Aussonderung von Juden, Zigeunern und Geisteskranken, 1933…1945 (Reinbek bei Hamburg: Rowohlt, 1984), pp. 68ff.
61. Walk, no. 480 or p. 397. See above, notes 9, 44, and 45. See also Trials of War Criminals before the Nuremberg Military Tribunals under Control Council Law No. 10 [Green Series], 3 p. 713 (Nuremberg document PS 664). In 1943, German neighbors denounced the few remaining Sinti families living in Berlin-Karlshorst, see Reimar Gilsenbach, • Wie Alfred Lora den Wiesengrund überlebte: Aus der Geschichte einer deutschen Sinti-Familie, Pogrom 21, no. 151 (January-February 1990) pp. 13…18.
62. See above, note 49.
63. See Helmut Krausnick and Hans-Heinrich Wilhelm, Die Truppe des Weltanschauungskrieges: Die Einsatzgruppen der Sicherheitspolizei und des SD 1938…1942 (Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, 1981).
64. See Henry Friedlander, • The Manipulation of Language, In Henry Friedlander and Sybil Milton (Eds.) The Holocaust: Ideology Bureaucracy, and Genocide (Millwood, NY: Kraus International Publications, 1980) pp. 103…13.
65. The first special study on Gypsy labor assignments in concentration camps is Romani Rose and Walter Weiss, Sinti und Roma im Dritten Reich: Das Programm der Vernichtung durch Arbeit (Göttingen: Lamuv, 1991).

66. See Donald Kenrick and Grattan Puxton, Sinti und Roma: Die Vernichtung eines Volkes im NS-Staat, trans. Astrid Stegelmann (Göttingen and Vienna, 1981). Although dated, this useful study is European in scope. There are few comprehensive accounts for occupied Europe. For Belgium, see José Gotovitch, "Quelques données relatives à l'extermination des tsiganes de Belgique," Cahiers d'Histoire de la Seconde Guerre Mondiale 4 (Brussels, 1976): pp. 161…80. For Czechoslovakia, see Ctibor Necas, "Nad osudem českých a slovenských Cikánu (Brno, 1981); and idem, "Die tschechischen und slowakischen Roma im Dritten Reich," Pogrom 12, nos. 80…81 (March…April 1981): pp. 62-64. For occupied and Vichy France, see Jacques Sigot, Un camp pour les Tsiganes (et les autres): Montreuil-Bellay, 1940-1945 (Bordeaux: Wallada, 1983); and Uwe Knödler, "Saliers 1942…1944: ein Romalager im besetzten Frankreich," Pogrom 20, no. 146 (May 1989): pp. 39…40. For the Netherlands, see B.A. Sijes and others, Vervolging van Zigeuners in Nederland 1940…1945; and Leo Lucassen, "En men noemde hen Zigeuners": De Geschiedenis van Kalarasch, Ursari, Lowara en Sinti in Nederland, 1750…1944 (Amsterdam and the Hague: Stichting beheer IISG-SDU, 1990). For Poland, see Jerzy Ficowski, Cyganie na Polskich Drogach, pp. 129…51; and idem, Cyganie w Polsce: Dzieje i Obyczaje (Warsaw: Wydawnictwo Interpress, 1989). See also David Crowe and John Kolsti (Eds.) The Gypsies of Eastern Europe (Armonk, NY, and London: M. E. Sharpe, 1991).
67. See Eiber, pp. 10…11 and 132…36; and Thurner, appendix XXVIII, facsimile of September 29, 1948, note from the Austrian Federal Ministry of the Interior to all police departments recommending expulsion for "the increasing Gypsy nuisance."
68. See Eiber, pp. 136…38; Romani Rose, Bürgerrechte für Sinti und Roma: Das Buch zum Rassismus in Deutschland (Heidelberg: Zentralrat Deutscher Sinti und Roma, 1987) pp. 122…30; and Josef Henke, "Quellenschicksale und Bewertungsfragen: Archivische Probleme bei der Überlieferungsbildung zur Verfolgung der Sinti und Roma im Dritten Reich," Vierteljahrshefte für Zeitgeschichte 41, no. 1 (1993) pp. 61…77.
69. See Rose, pp. 46…67; Arnold Spitta, "Entschädigung für Zigeuner? Geschichte eines Vorurteils." In Ludolf Herbst and Constantin Goschler (Eds.) Wiedergutmachung in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland. (Munich: Oldenbourg, 1989) pp. 385…401; Christian Pross, Wiedergutmachung: Der Kleinkrieg gegen die Opfer (Frankfurt: Athenäum, 1988); and Ingo Müller, Hitler's Justice: The Courts of the Third Reich, trans. Deborah Lucas Schneider (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1991) pp. 261…69. See also the script for the film by Katrin Seybold and Melanie Spitta, Das falsche Wort: Wiedergutmachung an Zigeunern (Sinti) in Deutschland? (Munich: Katrin Seybold Film Productions, 1980). For Austria, see Brigitte Bailer-Galanda, "Verfolgt und vergessen: Die Diskriminierung einzelner Opfergruppen durch die Opferfürsorgegesetzgebung," Dokumentationsarchiv des österreichischen Widerstandes Jahrbuch (1992) pp. 16…20.
70. ZStL, 415 AR 55/82 StA Frankfurt, Verfahren gg. Robert Ritter u.a., 55 (3) Js 5582/48 (discontinued August 28, 1950); ibid, 402 AR 116/61 StA Frankfurt, Verfahren gg. Eva Justin u.a., 4 Js 220/58 (discontinued April 27, 1961); ibid, 415 AR 930/61 StA Frankfurt, Verfahren gg. Eva Justin, 4 Js 220/59 (discontinued December 12, 1960).
71. ZStL, 415 AR 314/81 StA Stuttgart, Verfahren gg. Sophie Ehrhardt u.a., 7 (19) Js 928/81 (discontinued January 29, 1982, reinstituted March 15, 1982, discontinued November 21, 1985).
72. Christian Pross and Götz Aly, Ed., The Value of the Human Being: Medicine in Nazi Germany, 1918…1945, trans. Marc Iwand (Berlin: Ärztekammer Berlin and Edition Hentrich, 1991), p. 38.
73. ZStL, 414 AR-Z 196/59 StA Frankenthal, Verfahren gg. Leo Karsten, 9 Js 686/57 (and 9 Js 153/59 (discontinued July 30, 1960); ibid, 415 AR 930/61 StA Cologne, Verfahren Hans Maly u.a., 24 Js 429/61, 124 Js 1/64 (discontinued May 13, 1970).
74. StA Berlin, Verfahren gg. Otto Bovensiepen u.a., 1 Js 9/65; microfilm of the indictment at the Leo Baeck Institute Archives, New York.
75. Memorial Book: The Gypsies at Auschwitz-Birkenau, 2: p. 1643. König committed suicide in prison.

76. Rose, pp. 130–34; Hey n Friedlander, • The Judiciary and Nazi Crimes in Postwar Germany, Ž Simon Wiesenthal Center Annual 1 (1984) pp. 27–44; dgien Weber and Peter Steinbach (Eds.) Vergangenheitsbewältigung durch Strafverfahren?: NS-Prozesse in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland (Munich: Günter Olzog Verlag, 1984); adh Heiner Lichtenstein, Im Namen des Volkes? Eine persönliche Bilanz der NS-Prozesse (Cologne Bund, 1984). Fo Austria, see Karl Marschall, Volksgerichtsbarkeit und Verfolgung von nationalsozialistischen Gewaltverbrechen in Österreich: Eine Dokumentation, 2nd ed (Vienna Bundesministerium für Justiz, 1987).
77. Sybil Milton (text) and Ira Nowinski (photographs), In Fitting Memory: The Art and Politics of Holocaust Memorials (Detroit: Wayne State University Press, 1991).
78. See Pogrom 21, no. 154 (July–Aug. 1990) pp. 11–30, containing articles on Roma in Bulgaria, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Romania, and the former German Democratic Republic.



Greater Germany

CHAPTER 6
Holocaust: The Genocide of Disabled Peoples

HUGH GREGORY GALLAGHER

Aktion T-4 Euthanasie: Summary of Program

In the late 1930s and throughout World War II, physicians of Germany's medical establishment, acting both with and without the acquiescence of the Nazi government, systematically killed their severely disabled and chronically mentally ill patients. These people were said by their doctors to be "useless eaters," persons with "lives not worth living."

The officially sanctioned killing program, begun in 1939, was called "Euthanasie," although most of its victims were neither terminally ill nor in unbearable pain, nor were they anxious to die. The program's proponents advanced various arguments in its justification — compassion, eugenics, economics, racial purity. The official program was halted by Adolph Hitler in the summer of 1941, in the face of a rising wave of protests from disabled people, their families and friends, and religious officials. Even so, many doctors, acting largely on their own counsel, continued killing patients in hospitals and institutions throughout Germany.

Over the course of the official program and the unofficial so-called "runaway" euthanasia that followed it, more than 200,000 German citizens met their death at the hands of their physicians. The mass murder techniques developed in the euthanasia hospitals were later utilized against Jews.

Aktion T-4 Euthanasie-Operation „ To Whom, by Whom, How, and Why?

In the fall of 1939, upon the successful conclusion of the Polish campaign, Hitler signed an order that read, in toto, • Reichsleiter [Philip] Bouhler and Dr. [Karl] Brandt, M.D., are charged with the responsibility of enlarging the authority of certain physicians to be designated by name in such a manner that persons who, according to human judgment, are incurable can, upon a most careful diagnosis of their condition of sickness, be accorded a mercy death.Ž (U.S. Nuremberg War Crimes Trials, 1946…1947, M887, Tape 17, Doc. 630-PS)

Hitler and Brandt together worked most carefully on the wording of the order. Brandt felt that it was impossible for a doctor to say with absolute certainty that a patient was incurable, and that, therefore, a certain leeway was required. But Hitler, who distrusted doctors after the death of his mother from cancer, did not wish to give them too much leeway; he insisted upon adding, • Upon the most careful diagnosis of their [the patients•] condition of sickness.Ž Brandt gave this account in his testimony at Nuremberg. He emphasized repeatedly that the order was not an order to kill; it was instead an authorization to specifically designated physicians allowing them to act if, in their judgment after • the most careful diagnosis,Ž the patient is • incurably sick.Ž The physicians were given a license to kill; they were not directed to do so (Mitscherlich, 1962, p. 265).

Brandt and the chief of Hitler•s Chancellery, Bouhler, set to work implementing the order. Bouhler•s deputy, Viktor Brack, would handle administrative details, and three other men were placed in charge of policy formulation and operation. All three were physicians Dr. med. Herbert Linden, who held the sub-Cabinet-level position of Chancellor in charge of all sanatoria and nursing homes within the Department of Interior; Professor Heyde; and his deputy Professor Nitsche, who served as the chief medical experts of the euthanasia program. Heyde had held the position of professor of psychiatry at the University of Wurzburg and was head of the University Cl0.5W0.15 0 TD 0.007/F3 1 Tf 0.2975 0 TD [(es)-4.f 0.8024 0 T

appointed review committees of Chief Surveyors made up of university professors of psychiatry and medicine.

An organizing conference was called in which the professors of psychiatry and the chairmen of the departments of psychiatry at the medical schools of the Universities of Berlin, Heidelberg, Bonn, and Wurzburg were participants. Continuing meetings of this oversight group were conducted on a quarterly basis under the direction of the professor of psychiatry at Heidelberg (Wertham, 1968p. 168).

• The Reich Committee Ž oversaw the preparation of a questionnaire designed to elicit the information it regarded useful in determining which persons were • worthy of help, Ž and which were • useless lives Ž candidates for • final medical assistance Ž. An instruction leaflet was also drawn up, giving detailed directions on how the questionnaire was to be answered. Many thousands of copies were printed by the Reich Minister of the Interior. These were distributed to the long-term hospitals, sanatoria, and asylums, along with a cover letter from Dr. Conti, Chancellor of Sanatoria and Nursing Homes, stating that a form in full must be completed for each patient by the attending physician. The information was to be typewritten with three carbons. The forms should be filled out at once, explained Conti • sletter, owing to • the necessity for a systematized economic plan for hospitals and nursing institutions Ž. At the briefings, confusion had been expressed over who was to be covered by the program. This confusion was certainly not relieved by Conti • sletter, the questionnaire, or the instruction pamphlet. This material does, indeed, provide a puzzling and imprecise picture of what facts were sought or for what purpose.

The pamphlet contained a list of qualifying illnesses that was so general as to be virtually all-inclusive of patients in long-term care facilities. The terms • insanity, Ž • imbecility, Ž • paralysis, Ž • chronic diseases Ž, and • senile maladies Ž are not narrow.

There were three full questions on the patient • s work, ability, and experience „ more than on any other topic. There were but two questions related to genetic theory: Did the patient have a twin? and Did he have blood relatives of unsound mind? The twin question was easy enough to answer, but the term • unsound mind Ž was so general as to be meaningless. No conclusions about the genetic origins of the patients • conditions could be drawn from such sketchy information.

Speaking in medical terms, the form was a trivial business. As a witness testified at the Nuremberg • Doctors Trial Ž: • On the basis of the questionnaires it was impossible for experts or top experts to form an exact medical opinion on the physical state of the patients Ž (U.S. Nuremberg War Crimes Trials, 1946…1947, M887 pTe 17, No. 617).

The physicians of the appraisal committee reviewed the information contained in each of the questionnaires, and determined which of the

patients should live and which should die. Originally, a death warrant required the approval of all members of the Appraisal committee. However, as the program came into operation, a majority of two out of three or three out of four members was usually sufficient.

The decisions of the appraising physicians were gathered and forwarded to a senior expert „ usually a professor and head of a medical department at one of the major universities.

Final decisions would be made by this senior expert. Names of the patients to be killed were then routed to Linden, who worked in conjunction with the General Patient Transport Company to arrange for the pickup and carriage of the selected patients from the nationwide array of mental institutions, nursing homes, and long-term facilities to the euthanasia institutions. There were six major euthanasia institutions. T-4 referred to them by letter. They were:

Grafeneck, in the Black Forest, southwest of Ulm
The •old jailŽ at Brandenberg, near the hospital at Gorden, southwest of Berlin
Bernberg, in central Germany
Hartheim, northwest of Linz in Austria
Sonnenstein „ often called die Sonne „ near Dresden in Saxony
Hadamar, in Hesse, north of Frankfurt

Throughout the life of the program „ whether death came by pill, starvation, or carbon monoxide shower „ it came at the hand of a physician. It was Brack•s firm and oft-stated belief that •the syringe belongs in the hand of a physicianŽ (Lifton, 1986, p. 71).

Bouhler was insistent that a way of death be found that would be not only painless, but also imperceptible to the patient. He did not want to frighten the patients, nor make them uncomfortable. These things must be •done according to his orders, and in a dignified and not a brutal fashionŽ (Trials of War Criminals, 1946…1947, 877).

The original regulations envisioned a •conservativeŽ program with careful review procedures. In operation, the program became a matter of killing in wholesale lots. The psychological reasons physicians were willing to participate in these killings are no doubt complex. There is, however, an aspect of the structure of the program that made it easier: There was no single point of responsibility „ no place in the procedure at which it was possible to say, here is where the patients receive their death warrant; no point where it could be said, this physician is responsible for this patient•s death.

The local practicing physicians simply filled out the questionnaires as they were required to do. The members of the assessing committee simply

gave their individual opinion on each case. Nothing more would happen unless the members were in substantial agreement. The senior review physician simply went along with the committee or else expressed an objection. He was expressing a medical opinion, nothing more. Neither the assessors nor the review physicians ever saw the patient. The transportation staff was involved in transporting patients „ but it was no business of theirs as to where or why the patients were being moved. The staff that ran the centers were simply doing their jobs. Even the physician whose job it was to operate the gas chamber was not responsible for the death of the patients „ after all, he played no part in their selection; he knew nothing of their cases. He was only following the procedures laid down by his superiors, and carrying out the policy of his government as advised by the most eminent members of the medical profession.

Disposal of the bodies of the dead patients presented a fairly sizable logistic problem. The German nation was in an all-out war posture, and it was simply not practical to clutter up the transportation system by shipping corpses all over the landscape. It was this reason, as much as public health reasons, that caused Bouhler to insist upon immediate cremation at the major centers. Permanent furnaces were constructed at some of the sites, but other hospitals relied upon an ingenious device, a portable furnace on wheels.

Some of the centers were so mechanized as to have a conveyer belt system installed to carry the corpses from the gas chamber to the oven. As a contemporary witness wrote, • The corpses enter the furnace on a conveyer belt, and the smoke from the crematorium chimney is visible for miles Ž (Sereny, 1974, p. 39).

The ash remains of the deceased were gathered from the oven and placed in ceremonial urns and delivered to their families along with a letter of condolence. No effort was made to distinguish the ashes of one victim from another. The family receiving an urn assumed they were receiving the remains of their own loved one „ t he letters surely indicated as much „ but they were not.

A guide was prepared, probably by one of the T-4 physicians • committees, for the use of the doctors as they were preparing the fake certificates. This helped to ensure that the cause of death assigned and the medical history of the patient were internally consistent with each other and medically sound. For example, in discussing septicemia as a cause of death in the mentally ill, it was explained that these patients frequently have boils that they scratch and, • It is most expedient to figure four days for the basic illness and five days for the resultant sepsis Ž (Lifton, 1986, p. 74) Doctors were warned that this diagnosis • should not be used with patients who are meticulously clean Ž; instead, it is • preferable for young strong patients who smear readily Ž (Lifton, 1986, p. 74). However, the guide warned, if

septicemia is used as a cause of death for the young, it should be noted that "seven to eight days have to be allowed for the illness to take effect, since their circulation is relatively more resistant" (Lifton, 1986, p. 74).

The official, centralized euthanasia program lasted from 1939 through the summer of 1941. After two years of operation, the program's existence was widely known. The churches had raised strong and vocal objections. There had been public demonstrations in opposition to the killings. The German army was deep in the Russian campaign, and Hitler had no wish for public unrest at home. Accordingly, the Führer, in a conversation with Brandt, without ceremony or discussion, verbally ordered a halt to the euthanasia program.

This did not, however, bring an end to the killing of the disabled and the insane. Physicians across Germany continued to administer "final medical treatment" to patients they considered as having "lives not worth living." The killings continued, but the decision making and the criteria used in these decisions became those of the immediate doctor, rather than the assessor committees and the review professors. The "children's campaign," by which retarded and deformed infants were put to death, proceeded unabated. The killing continued even after the war, as U.S. Army occupation forces discovered at Kaufbeuren and Eglfing-Haar (Gallagher, 1990, p. 250).

As the bombing of German cities increased, Brandt undertook to evacuate institutionalized patients to the countryside. Many of those evacuated also were killed by their physicians. On the eastern ramparts of Germany „ in Danzig, Pomerania, and West Prussia „ as well as in Poland, mentally ill patients were simply shot by the local SS and police forces. Operation 14 f 13 practiced wanton killing of the sick and disabled in the camps and elsewhere. What the Germans at the time referred to as "wild euthanasia" led to additional widespread, unorganized, and indiscriminate killing. As Dörner has said, "Unplanned groups and individuals were murdered: welfare wards, asocials, wayward children, healthy Jewish children, or those of mixed blood, homosexuals, political offenders, elderly wards of nursing homes, sick and healthy Eastern workers" (Dörner, 1967, p. 151).

It is not possible to tell with any accuracy how many disabled German citizens were put to death during the Nazi years. No reliable figures exist for the spontaneous killings. Figures survive for the official centralized T-4 killings (see Table 6.1).

In the summer of 1991 unexpected verification of these figures was unearthed in the cellar of the headquarters of the Stasis, the former East German secret police. The medical files of these 70,000 patients, filed alphabetically, were discovered by Michael Burleigh, a Holocaust scholar from England (Horner, 1991, p. 25).

Table 6.1

Anstalt	1940	1941	Sa
A (Graf.)	9,839	„	9,839
B (Brand.)	9,772	„	9,772
Be (Bernb.)	„	8,60 l	8,601
C (Linz)	9,670	8,599	18,269
D (Sonnes.)	5,943	7,777	13,720
E (Hadamar)	„	10,072	10,072
	35,224	35,049	70,273

Klee, 1983.

In some of the trial documents, the figure 120,000 is given as the overall number of inmates killed in public institutions. According to Aly and Roth (1984), this number is on the low side and does not include those who died in such separate programs as the children•s operation, random euthanasia, and the so-called •Brandt campaignŽ whereby 20,000 lost their lives (p. 162). Dr. Leo Alexander, who served with the Office of the Chief of Counsel for War Crimes at Nuremberg and who performed the major study of the euthanasia program for the court, has estimated that 275,000 persons were killed (Breggin, 1979, p. 81).

Fredric Wertham, a psychiatrist, examined hospital records and found, for example, that the Province of Brandenberg, in 1938, had 16,295 mental patients from Berlin. By 1945, there remained but 2,379 patients. In an institution called Berlin-Buch, out of 2,500 patients, 500 survived. Kaufbeuren in Bavaria had 2,000 patients at the beginning of the war, and 200 remaining at the war•s end. Many mental institutions simply closed their doors because of a lack of patients. In 1939, throughout all of Germany there were some 300,000 mental patients. In 1946, there were 40,000. This is not to say that all these persons were destroyed by the German State in the course of its euthanasia operation. After all, the general German war losses were colossal (Muller-Hill, 1988). Nevertheless, it cannot be doubted that the euthanasia program swept out entire wards, cleaned out entire hospitals. It decimated the entire German population of the severely disabled and the chronically insane.

Aktion T-4 Euthanasie Origins in History and Thought

The Euthanasie killing program was no Nazi aberration. Rather it was the efficient application through public policy of the theories of leading scientists and philosophers in Western society.

Darwin•s theories of evolution, combined with the rediscovery of Mendelian law, encouraged Victorians in the belief that the biological

world could be as knowable, as predictable as Newton•s physical world. Social Darwinism and the •scienceŽ of eugenics sought to apply evolutionary and genetic principles, as understood, to human society and breeding. Eugenicists believed most human characteristics to be inherited. In W. Duncan McKim•s book Heredity in Human Progress, which was published in 1900, heredity is blamed for, among other things, •insanity, idiocy, imbecility, eccentricity, hysteria, epilepsy, the alcohol habit, the morphine habit, neuralgias, •nervousness,• Saint Vitus•s dance, infantile convulsions, stammering, squint, gout, articular rheumatism, diabetes, tuberculosis, cancer, deafness, blindness, deaf-mutism, color blindnessŽ (Haller, 1963, p. 42). It is, he said, •the fundamental cause of human wretchednessŽ (Haller, 1963, p. 42).

U.S. President Theodore Roosevelt spoke for many forward-thinking people when he said, •Someday we will realize that the prime duty, the inescapable duty, of the good citizen of the right type is to leave his or her blood behind him in the world; and that we have no business to permit the perpetuation of citizens of the wrong typeŽ (emphasis added) (Haller, 1963, p. 79).

The impact of Darwinian theory upon German thought was no less than it had been in Britain and America. Darwin cast a long shadow over the development of national socialism and the Third Reich. Perhaps most influential was the 1920 book The Destruction of Life Devoid of Value, written by psychiatrist Alfred Hoche and lawyer Karl Binding. These men were professors of reputation and importance. They argued that the medical profession should participate not only in health giving, but under certain circumstances, in death making as well. With a carefully reasoned argument, defining their terms precisely, their analysis concluded that certain people should be exterminated for racial •hygienicŽ purposes. They argued that the retarded, the deformed, the terminally ill, and those who were mentally sound but who were severely damaged by disease or accident should be put to death. They believed that the death should be painless and expertly administered „ t hat is, by a physician. According to their reasoning, the right to •grant deathŽ was a natural extension of the responsibilities of the attending physician.

Hoche and Binding were widely read and vigorously discussed. One of their readers was the young Adolf Hitler, who had read a good deal on eugenics and Monism prior to his writing of Mein Kampf. Upon one occasion, Hitler even allowed his name to be used in advertisements for Hoche•s books (Breggin, 1979, p. 81).

There were other books and articles on the subject. The romantic philosopher Ernst Haeckel•s book The Riddle of the Universe sold well for many years. His disciple Heinrich Ziegler was a popular writer on such issues and won the important Krupp literary award. The 1920 book Moral

der Kraft by Ernst Mann advocated that disabled war veterans kill themselves to reduce welfare costs.

An exceedingly popular movie in the Germany of the mid-30s dealt entirely with the issue of euthanasia for the disabled. I Accuse was the story of a young woman suffering from multiple sclerosis. In the last reel, her husband, a doctor, after lengthy soul searching, kills his wife, as a fellow physician in the next room plays softly and funereally on the piano.

Another film (title unknown) of the Nazi years illustrated the unbearable life of the insane with particularly grisly shots of defective dystonias. This was made for the use of the medical societies. The film was widely shown to physician gatherings and was shown to the Nazi Party meeting of 1935 by Dr. Gerhardt Wagner, leader of the medical delegation.

Although long lost, unedited footage of the original film was found in the basement of Stasi's secret police headquarters in the summer of 1991 by Michael Burleigh. In the film, a "professor" posits that the "incurably mentally ill" have a right to die": "Is it not the duty of those concerned," he asks, reasonably enough given his premise, "to help the incapable — and that means to t he idiots and incurable mental patients — to t heir right?" (Horner, 1991, p. 25)

The general devaluation of disabled lives can be seen even in Nazi schoolroom textbooks. A mathematics text, Mathematics in the Service of National Political Education, set the following problem: "If the building of a lunatic asylum costs 6 million marks and it costs 15,000 marks to build each dwelling on a housing estate, how many of the latter could be built for the price of one asylum?" Another asked how many marriage allowance loans could be given to young couples for the amount of money it costs the state to care for "the crippled, criminal, and insane" (Mitscherlich, 1962, p. 234; Alexander, 1949, p. 39).

When the German physicians and medical professors set up T-4 Euthanasie, they were instituting a program whose principles had been widely and thoroughly discussed.

Aktion T-4 Euthanasie—Impact and Response

After the war, Brandt, director of the Euthanasie program, and Brack, administrator of the program, were hanged at Nuremberg for war crimes and crimes committed against humanity. Many of the principal T-4 physicians fled or disappeared. Occasionally, one surfaced and faced trial. Such trials were long, drawn out, unsatisfactory affairs, largely because of the unwillingness of one physician to testify against another.

Other principal physicians simply resumed their practice under assumed names. Their presence was known to their peers in the medical community, but was not reported. The rank and file of the German physicians, those who had been active in the program, and the rest who

had raised no objection to it, continued the practice of medicine, albeit no longer killing their patients.

Over more than a half century since the T-4 program, the German medical establishment has never acknowledged, examined, or apologized for the killings. A book summarizing accurately the T-4 Euthanasia evidence accumulated in the Nuremberg trials, written by a young psychiatrist, Alexander Mitscherlich, was published in 1949. It was suppressed and denounced as •irresponsible, ƒ lacking documentation.Ž The book was seen as an attack upon the •inviolable honor of German medicine.Ž One reviewer said that only a •pervertŽ would read such a book and called its author a •traitor to his countryŽ (Hanauske-Able, 1986, p. 272).

In 1977, the courageous Margarete and Alexander Mitscherlich wrote in the foreword to their book Die Unfahigkeit zu trauern (The Inability to Grieve), •Today in many minds, there is a reluctance to accept the facts of history ƒ . What happened in the Third Reich remains alive in our subconscious, dangerously so. It will be fatal for us to lose touch with the truth of what happened then. We must struggle to seek out the truth of that era rather than search for improved defenses to hide us from this truth.Ž

Encouragingly, in the 1980s a new, younger generation of historians has

his daughter, a schizophrenic patient, survived, thanks to his efforts and those of sympathetic doctors. These doctors were taking great risks by trying to save their patients from T-4.

The two other Austrian accounts are those of parents whose infants were killed „ one of the victims was a 4-year-old with speech difficulties and weak leg muscles; the other, a 2-year-old, also had speech difficulties. These children were not severely disabled; they were not in pain, nor were they dying. Killing them had nothing to do with euthanasia; it had a lot to do with murder.

Leo Alexander was a physician in the U.S. Army of Occupation in Germany at the end of World War II. He was one of the very first to investigate the Aktion T-4 killing program. Included here is a verbatim statement made to him on August 5, 1945, by Amalie Widmann, a nurse who went looking for her patients who had been transferred to a killing center. Nurse Widmann•s concern for her patients nearly cost her her life.

The activity at the killing centers was supposed to be secret. Soon, however, the neighborhoods surrounding the hospitals figured out what was going on. The impact of the killings on the community is vividly described in a courageous letter to the Ministry of Justice written by the Bishop of Limburg. The letter, printed here, is now in the U.S. Archives. It was a part of the evidence gathered for the •Doctors Trial,Ž one of the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials of 1946.

The killing program, complained Heinrich Himmler, head of the SS, •is a secret and yet is no longer oneŽ (Gallagher, 1990, p. 144). It had, in fact, become something of an embarrassment. Local law officials were alarmed by the unrest and fears stirred in the community by the killing, as demonstrated in the extract printed here of an unsigned report from a provincial court to the Ministry of Justice in Berlin.

One man became the symbol of the resistance to the so-called euthanasia program. He was the Bishop of Münster, Graf von Galen, the •Lion of Münster.Ž A man of commanding presence and unquestioned moral authority, von Galen risked his life by giving a powerful sermon decrying the killing. •Woe to humanity,Ž he thundered from his pulpit. •Woe to the German people if God•s holy command •Thou shalt not kill• is not only transgressed but if this transgression is tolerated and carried out without punishment.Ž Copies of the sermon were distributed under cover all over Germany „ to the fury of Hitler „ and had much to do with the public outcry against T-4 Euthanasie. The text of von Galen•s sermon is included in the following collection of accounts.

Testimony of Leopold Widerhofer

This testimony was presented before the Vienna District Court (Landesgericht) in the proceedings against Dr. Ernst Illing, Dr. Marianne Türk, and Dr. Erwin Jekelius, Vienna, February 27, 1946.

A facsimile of this document is reprinted in Elisabeth Klamper (Ed.) Dokumentationsarchiv des Österreichischen Widerstandes, Vienna, Volume 19 of the series Archives of the Holocaust (New York and London: Garland, 1991), pp. 114…16.

The Defendants

Dr. Ernst Illing (b. 1904, Leipzig) was a physician who joined the Nazi party on May 1, 1933; he was the director of the Vienna City Psychiatric-Neurological Clinic for Children Am Spiegelgrund, 1942…1945, where he killed about 200 children. He was sentenced to death by the Vienna District Court on July 18, 1946.

Dr. Erwin Jekelius (b. 1905) was a physician and member of the Nazi party. He was director of the Vienna City Psychiatric-Neurological Clinic for Children Am Spiegelgrund, 1940…1942.

Dr. Marianne Türk (b. 1914, Vienna) was appointed physician at the Vienna City Psychiatric-Neurological Clinic for Children Am Spiegelgrund in August 1940. Together with Dr. Ernst Illing, she killed a total of 200 children (ca. 7 to 10 per week) under the so-called euthanasia program. She was sentenced to 10 years prison by the Vienna District Court, July 18, 1946.

The clinic Am Spiegelgrund, officially known as the Vienna City Psychiatric-Neurological Clinic for Children, was located on the grounds of Am Steinhof and was used as a children•s ward for the children•s euthanasia program.

Am Steinhof was the popular name for the Wagner von Jauregg Mental Hospital and Nursing Home of the City of Vienna. About 4000 patients were sent from Am Steinhof to the Hartheim euthanasia killing center.

Witness Interogation
Hall in County Court
District Court I for Criminal Cases, Vienna II

On February 27, 1946
Beginning at 11.30 A.M.

Present:
Judge: Dr. Sandri
Secretary: Dr. Vavrovsky

Criminal Case:
Against Dr. Ernst Illing, Dr. Marianne Türk, and Dr. Erwin Jekelius regarding paragraph 134 of the Penal Code.

The witness is warned to answer the questions addressed to him truthfully to the best of his knowledge and conscience, to conceal nothing and to give testimony, in such a way that, if necessary, he can affirm it under oath.

He stipulates the following personal data:

1. First and last name: Leopold Widerhofer
2. Age: 76 years old
3. Place of birth: Waya-on-the-Enns, Upper Austria
4. Religion: Roman Catholic
5. Marital status: married
6. Occupation: retired grammar school headmaster
7. Place of residence: Vienna I, Bräunerstr. 4, currently Hall in No. 278.
8. Relationship to the defendant or to other individuals involved in the investigation: none.

My daughter, Gerta Widerhofer, was brought to the sanatorium Am Steinhof in 1933 because of schizophrenia. She remained in treatment as a psychiatric patient there.

At the beginning of August 1940, my wife and I heard a rumor during a visit to the Steinhof institution that patients at this institution were being transferred to Germany secretly at night and that they would continue to be taken away in the future. Out of concern for our daughter's life, in mid-August 1940, I personally went to see Dr. Erwin Jekelius, who was then director of the Viennese Health Office, Vienna I, Schottenring 28, in order to inquire about this. After considerable discussion, I attempted to discover whether my daughter was on the list of patients to be transferred. He denied this. I was satisfied with this.

Soon thereafter, I heard in the waiting room of the director's office of the institution Am Steinhof, that my daughter actually was on the list, and Dr. Wilhelm Podhaisky, Vienna 109, XV Baumgartnerhöhe, showed me my daughter's file, which he had already removed to his custody in order to try to save her life. This file was taken out of the records of those individuals who were to be prepared for transport; thus Dr. Podhaisky kept her file.

Dr. Podhaisky later arranged a meeting for me with the Director, Dr. Jekelius, in the waiting room of the executive offices of Am Steinhof; this would have been at the beginning of October 1940. During the nearly one hour discussion between me and the Director, Dr. Jekelius, which Dr. Podhaisky attended on behalf of the patients, Dr. Jekelius said to me twice in the presence of Dr. Podhaisky: • Your daughter must die Ž He tried to justify this because her disease was incurable. To my excited demand that my daughter, if she must die, would wish to die here at Am Steinhof, rather than be carried off, Dr. Jekelius replied: • Herr Direktor, you probably understand that we cannot allow our staff doctors to be implicated Ž I replied: • I only know that the patients will really be killed Ž Dr. Jekelius never responded to this.

The transports with mentally ill patients from Am Steinhof to unknown destinations continued throughout the next weeks. During this time, the two physicians from Steinhof, Dr. Unlauf and Dr. Podhaisky, routinely tried to delay the transports and they rescued my daughter by relocating her to ward 24. When this ward was evacuated at night, they moved my daughter to convalescent ward 20.

The deportations from Steinhof stopped at the end of December 1940. My daughter is still in Am Steinhof today and her condition has improved substantially.

I would also like to add, that acquaintances of mine who likewise had dependents at Am Steinhof, had already received notifications written between September and November 1940 that stated that their sick dependents, who had been transferred from Am Steinhof, had suddenly died of some disease, such as infected tonsils or pneumonia.

I would also like to state that during the subsequent months, children that were difficult to handle arrived in the vacant women•s wards and that Dr. Jekelius was named director of the children•s department created here.

My wife, Marie Widerhofer, never observed these matters directly, but learned of them only from my comments. She never spoke with Dr. Jekelius, nor with Dr. Podhaisky nor Dr. Umlauf. She therefore cannot testify in these proceedings based on her own observations.

Testimony of Anny Wödl

This testimony was presented before the Vienna District Court in the proceedings against Dr. Ernst Illing, Dr. Marianne Türk, and Dr. Erwin Jekelius, Vienna, March 1, 1946 [mistyped in document as 1945].

Source: DÖW E 18282/2 (photocopy of file Landesgericht Wien Vg 4d Vr 5442/46). A facsimile of this document is reprinted in Elisabeth Klamper (Ed.) Dokumentationsarchiv des Österreichischen Widerstandes, Vienna,

Volume 19 of the series Archives of the Holocaust (New York and London: Garland, 1991), pp. 117…119.

Gugging

Provincial Mental Hospital and Nursing Home in Lower Austria. In 1940, more than 500 of the over 1,000 patients at Gugging were deported to the Hartheim euthanasia killing center, many of them via the Niedernhart hospital.

Witness Interrogation
Vienna District Court for Criminal Offenses
District Court I for Criminal Cases, Vienna II

On 1 March 1945 [sic, actually 1946]
Beginning at

Present:
Judge: Agr. Dr. Zips
Secretary: Bürgert

Criminal Case:
Against Dr. Ernst Illing et al.

The witness is warned to answer the questions addressed to him truthfully to the best of his knowledge and conscience, to conceal nothing and to give testimony, in such a way that, if necessary, he can affirm it under oath.

He stipulates the following personal data:

1. First and last name: Anny Wödl
2. Age: 43 years old
3. Place of birth: Gutenstein
4. Religion: Roman Catholic
5. Marital status: single
6. Occupation: nurse
7. Place of residence: Vienna 9, Thurngasse No. 5/11
8. Relationship to the defendant or to other individuals involved in the investigation: none.

I refer to my petition on page/lines 179 through 187 of the record, which I fully uphold and add to my testimony.

I am appending the following:

I bore a handicapped child on 24 November 1934 who had difficulties walking and talking and did not develop as she should. It turned out that

he understood everything, but that he couldn•t speak. Also his legs were obviously too weak to carry him, so that in essence he could not walk. The doctors couldn•t really determine if he actually suffered, nor could they decide the cause for his condition. I put him in the institution at Gugging when he was four years old.

I was very concerned about my child when the operation against the •incurably ill, mentally ill, and elderly Ž began, especially since I knew the Nazi state•s position in principle about these matters. When the •operations Ž were carried out in Vienna, there was anxiety in the population. I was determined to appeal to Berlin in order to save my child or to stop the mechanism. I have described in detail in my petition [illegible]

Excerpt from Public Mental Health Practices in Germany: Sterilization and Execution of Patients Suffering from Nervous or Mental Disease

Reported by Leo Alexander, Major, M.C., AUS. CIOS Item 24, Medical. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, G-2 Division, SHAEF (Rear) APO 413, p. 35, August 19, 1945.

Miss Widmann stated that the first transport of patients to a killing center left Wiesloch on 19 February 1940. Among the patients were a good many who had become endeared and attached to Miss Widmann. After they had been taken to the killing center, Miss Widmann became unable to take her mind off the sad fate of these patients, and she became unable to rest day or night. She had to think about them all the time. She finally felt that it might give her ease of mind if she could actually see what happened, and she decided to visit the killing center in Grafeneck herself. So she asked for a furlough, not telling anybody what she planned to do, and she went to Grafeneck on 22 July 1940. When she got off the train at Marbach a.d. Lauter bei Munzingen, which is the railhead for Grafeneck, the people whom she asked for directions to Grafeneck looked at her in a peculiar way as if there was something strange or funny about her. When she finally arrived in front of the institution in Grafeneck, she found a sign reading: "Entry strictly prohibited because of danger of infection." There were heavily armed men in green uniforms, obviously police about the area. Suddenly Miss Widmann felt gripped by an overwhelming feeling of anxiety and she ran away over an open field crying bitterly. She sat down and cried for a while. She then saw that she was on the premises of a stud farm. The farmer came and asked her whether he could do anything for her, and she told him that she wanted to go and see the institution in Grafeneck. The farmer then told her: "Do not go there. One must not say anything." Shortly afterwards, an SS man appeared, accompanied by other SS men, with hounds. They took her into the building, where she was brought before an official who asked her what she wanted. She said that she wanted to see some of her old patients and find out how they were. The official then stated that the patients liked it so much there that they would never want to leave again. He then interrogated her sharply about her antecedents and her connections with any group, if any. He then called up Dr. Möckel. Miss Widmann added that she felt she owed her life to Dr. Möckel because if he had not talked for her they would have killed her. The reason why she went there was because of her deep feeling of close relationship with her patients.

Excerpt from U.S. Nuremberg War Crimes Trials, November 21, 1946 … August 20, 1947. National Archives Microfilm Publications, M887, Doc. 615„ PS

In August 1941 the Bishop of Limburg wrote, inter alia:

About 8 kilometres from Limburg, in the little town of Hadamar, on a hill overlooking the town, there is an institution which had formerly served various purposes and of late had been used as a nursing home. This institution was renovated and furnished as a place in which, by consensus of opinion, the above-mentioned euthanasia has been systematically practised for months „ approximately since February 1941. The fact is, of course, known beyond the administrative district of Wiesbaden because death certificates from the Hadamar-Moenchberg Registry are sent to the home communities. (Moenchberg is the name of this institution because it was a Franciscan monastery prior to its secularization in 1903.)

Several times a week buses arrive in Hadamar with a considerable number of such victims. School children of the vicinity know this vehicle and say: • There comes the murder-box again.Ž After the arrival of the vehicle the citizens of Hadamar watch the smoke rise out of the chimney and are tortured with the ever-present thought of the poor sufferers, especially when the nauseating odours carried by the wind offend their nostrils.

The effect of the principles at work here is that children call each other names and say, • You're crazy; you'll be sent to the baking oven in Hadamar.Ž Those who do not want to marry, or find no opportunity, say • Marry, never! Bring children into the world so they can be put into the bottling machine!Ž You hear old folks say, • Don't send me to a State hospital! When the feeble-minded have been finished off, the next useless eaters whose turn will come are the old people.Ž

Excerpt from U.S. Nuremberg War Crimes Trials, November 21, 1946 … August 20, 1947. National Archives Microfilm Publications, M887, Doc. 844

The following is an extact of a letter from the Frankfurt am Main Provincial Court of Appeal to the Ministry of Justice in December of 1939.

People living near sanatoria and convalescent homes, as well as in adjoining regions, sometimes quite distant, for example throughout the Rhineland, are continually discussing the question whether the lives of incurable invalids should be brought to an end. The vans which take patients from the institutions they occupy to transit stations and thence to liquidation establishments are well-known to the population. I am told that whenever they pass the children call out: • There they go again for gassing.Ž I hear that from one to three big omnibuses with blinds down go

through Limburg every day on their way from Weilmünster to Hadamar, taking inmates to the Hadamar liquidation centre. The story goes that as soon as they arrive they are stripped naked, given a paper shirt and immediately taken to a gas-chamber, where they are poisoned with prussic acid and an auxiliary narcotic. The corpses are said to be transferred on a conveyor belt to an incineration chamber, where six are put into one furnace and the ashes then packed into six urns and sent to the relatives. The thick smoke of the incinerators is supposed to be visible every day over Hadamar. It is also common talk that in some cases the heads or other parts of the body are detached for anatomical investigation. The staff employed on the work of liquidation at these institutions is obtained from other parts of the county and the local inhabitants will have nothing to do with them. These employees spend their evenings in the taverns, drinking pretty heavily. Apart from the stories told by the people about these "foreigners," there is much anxiety over the question whether certain elderly persons who have worked hard all their lives and may now in their old age be somewhat feeble-minded are possibly being liquidated with the rest. It is being suggested that even old people's homes will soon be cleared. There is a general feeling here, apparently, that proper legal measures should be taken to ensure that, above all, persons of advanced age and enfeebled mentality are not included in these proceedings.

Sermon of Clemens August Graf von Galen, Bishop of Münster, August 3, 1941

Source: Dokumente zur Euthanasie, Ernst Klee (Ed.) Frankfurt: Fisher Tagebuch Verlag, 1985 (reprinted with permission).

Devout Christians! A pastoral message of the German bishops of June 26, 1941, which was read in all Catholic churches on July 6, says: "According to the Catholic moral code there are some commandments which need not be kept if their observance would involve great difficulties. But there are others, holy obligations of our moral consciousness which we have to fulfill even at the cost of our lives. Never, under any circumstances, may a human being kill an innocent person outside of war or in just self-defense." On July 6 I already had occasion to add to the words of this universal pastoral message the following explanation: For the past months we have heard reports from care and residential institutions for mental patients that patients who had been ill for a long time and who appear to be incurable have been removed forcibly on orders from Berlin. Relatives are being notified a short time afterwards that the corpse has been cremated and that they can claim the ashes. There is a suspicion bordering on definite knowledge that these numerous unexpected deaths among psychiatric patients are not due to natural causes but have been

intentionally brought about. The philosophy behind this is the assumption that so-called unworthy lives can be terminated, innocent human beings killed if their lives have no value for the nation and the state. This is a terrible doctrine that seeks to justify the murder of innocent people and allows the killing of invalids who can no longer work, cripples, incurable patients, and the feeble elderly.

We have heard from reliable sources that lists have been made of such patients who will be removed from the care and residential institutions in the province of Westphalia and shortly afterwards killed. The first transport left the Marienthal institution near Münster in the course of the past week.

German men and women! Paragraph 211 of the criminal code is still in force. It states: „Whosoever intentionally kills a person will be punished for murder by death if he has done it with premeditation.Ž

To protect those who intentionally kill those poor people, members of our families, from legal punishment, patients who have been designated to die are being removed from their home institutions to far-away facilities. Some illness is given as a cause of death. Since the corpse is immediately cremated neither relatives nor the criminal police can ascertain what the cause of death was. But I have been assured that neither the Ministry of the Interior nor the agency of Dr. Conti, the surgeon general, denies that a large number of psychiatric patients have been intentionally killed in Germany and will be killed in the future.

Paragraph 139 of the criminal code states: „Whosoever becomes aware of the plan for a capital offense and does not bring it to the attention of the authorities or the threatened person will be punished.Ž When I heard of the plan to remove patients from Marienthal and to kill them, I filed the following charges by letter with the prosecutor of the court in Münster and the president of police in Münster: •According to reports a large number of patients, so-called unproductive citizens, of the provincial care institution of Marienthal near Münster have been transferred in the course of this week to the Eichberg institution to be intentionally killed as has happened in other institutions according to general belief. Since such a procedure is not only contrary to the divine and natural moral code but has to be punished by death according to paragraph 211, I herewith dutifully raise charges according to paragraph 139 of the criminal code and ask that the threatened citizens be immediately protected through prosecution of the agencies which organize the transport and the murder and that I be notified of whatever has been done.Ž I have not received any information on intervention by the state prosecutor or the police.

I had previously lodged a protest on July 26 with the provincial administration of Westphalia which is responsible for the institutions to which patients have been entrusted for care and cure. It was in vain. I have

heard that 300 persons have been removed from the residential care Wartstein institution.

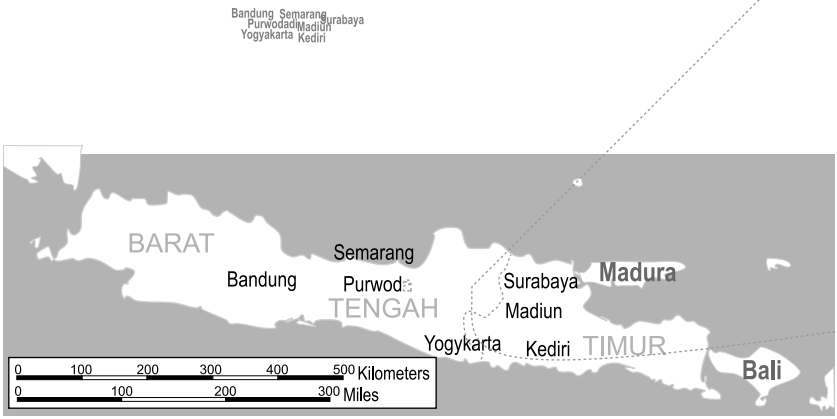
Now we have to expect that these poor defenseless patients will be murdered in due time. Why? Not because they have committed a heinous crime, not because they attacked the caregiver in a way which would have forced him to defend his own life in justified self-defense. Are these cases in which killing is allowed and even necessary, besides killing of the enemy in a just war? No, these hapless patients have to die not for any of these reasons but because they have become unworthy to live „ according to these opinions they are •unproductive citizens.Ž The judgment holds that they cannot produce any goods; they are like an old machine which does not run anymore, they are like an old horse which has become lame and cannot be cured, they are like a cow which has ceased to give milk. What does one do with such an old machine? One wrecks it. What does one do with a lame horse, with unproductive cattle? No, I do not want to labor the comparison, justified and illuminating as it would be. We are not dealing with machines, or horses, or cows, whose only destiny is to serve people, to produce goods for human beings. They can be wrecked, they can be slaughtered when they can no longer serve their purpose. No, these are human beings, our fellow citizens, our brothers and sisters. Poor people, sick people, unproductive people, so what. But have they forfeited their right to live? Do you, do I have a right to live only as long as we are productive, as long as others recognize us as being productive? If the principle is established and applied that •unproductive fellow citizens.Ž can be killed, woe to all of us when we get old and feeble. If it becomes permissible to kill unproductive people, woe to the invalids who invested and sacrificed and lost their energies and sound bones during their working careers. If unproductive fellow citizens can be eliminated by force, woe to our brave soldiers who return to their homeland severely injured, as cripples, as invalids. Once it becomes legal for people to kill •unproductive.Ž fellow citizens „ even if at present only our poor defenseless mentally ill are concerned „ t hen the basis is laid for murder of all unproductive people, the incurable, the invalids of war and work, of all of us when we become old and feeble.

All that is necessary is another secret decree that the procedure tested with mental patients is to include other •unproductive persons.Ž is to be applied to patients with incurable lung disease, to the feeble elderly, the disabled workers, to severely injured veterans. Nobody would be safe anymore. Some commission can put him on the list of the •unproductive.Ž And no police will protect him and no court prosecute his murder and punish the murderer. Who could still trust his physician? Maybe he would report the patient as •unproductive.Ž and would be ordered to kill him? It is inconceivable what depraved conduct, what suspicion will enter family

life if this terrible doctrine is tolerated, adopted and carried out. Woe to humanity, woe to the German people if God•s holy command • Thou shalt not killŽ is not only transgressed but if this transgression is both tolerated and carried out without punishment.

I will give you an example of what happened today. In Marienthal there was a man about 55 years old, a farmer in a village in the area of Münster „ I know his name „ who had been suffering from episodes of mental derangement for some years and wh[illegible]

Klee, Ernst (1983). "Euthanasie" im NS-Staat, Die "Vernichtung lebensunwerten Lebens." Frankfurt: S. Fisher.
Lifton, Robert Jay (1986). The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide. New York: Basic Books, Inc.
Mitscherlich, Alexander (1962). The Death Doctors. (Translated by James Cleugh; Originally published in 1949.) London: Elek Books.
Muller-Hill, Benno (1988). Murderous Science. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
New York Daily News (1988). "Pope Condemns World War II Treatment of Handicapped." June 27, p. 2.
Sereny, Gitta (1974). Into That Darkness: From Mercy Killing to Mass Murder. New York: McGraw-Hill.
Trials of War Criminals Before the Nuremberg Military Tribunals Under Control Council Law No. 10, Nuremberg, October 1946 - April 1947. Volumes I and II. Washington: U.S. Government Printing Office.
U.S. Nuremberg War Crimes Trials, November 21, 1946 - August 20, 1947. National Archives Microfilm Publications, M887.
Wertham, Fredric (1968). A Sign for Cain: An Exploration of Human Violence. London: Robert Hale, Ltd.


Bandung
Semarang
Purwodadi
Madiun
Surabaya
Yogyakarta
Kediri
BARAT
Semarang
Bandung
Purwod
TENGAH
Surabaya
Madura
Madiun
Yogykarta
Kediri
TIMUR
Bali
0 100 200 300 400 500 Kilometers
0 100 200 300 Miles

Indonesia

military positions resented both Party influence in the junior ranks and the independent Communist units that challenged their monopoly of armed force. Resentment had become alarm when the crypto-Communist Defense Minister Amir Syarifuddin attempted to introduce political commissars into army units in 1946. With bitter disgust, moreover, senior officers recalled the so-called Madiun Affair of 1948, when Communist army units had declared a Soviet Republic in the East Java town of Madiun. At that time, the Indonesian Republic had been reduced by Dutch offensives to a constricted area in Central and East Java and was girding itself to resist an expected final onslaught. The uprising had been a complex affair, the product, at least in part, of anti-Communist provocation of the Communist troops, but the incident lived on in the memories of the army leadership as proof of Communist treachery (Sundhaussen, 1982).

Religious opposition to the PKI came mainly from orthodox Islam. Although Islam was statistically the religion of just under 90 percent of the population, approximately half the Muslim population belonged to a distinctive Javanese form of the religion, often called Kejawen, which was strongly mystical and blended with pre-Islamic beliefs. Whereas the followers of Kejawen often saw little to fear in Communism, pious orthodox Muslims feared that the Communists would install an atheist state, anathema to Islam, if they came to power. The Indonesian Republic had adopted belief in God, but not Islam, as one of its guiding principles in 1945, and for many Muslims even this was a barely tolerable compromise. This religious antagonism was compounded by memories of the Madiun affair, when Communist forces, briefly in control of parts of East Java, had massacred several hundred Muslims who resisted them. Among Indonesia•s Christian communities, attitudes toward the PKI were more divided: Some Christians shared the Muslim anathemization of Communist atheism, while others were sympathetic to the Party•s goals of social justice and indeed backed the Party•s campaigns on land and other issues in some regions.

A third pole of opposition to the PKI came from the conservative wing of the secular Indonesian Nationalist Party (PNI). Although sections of the PNI were sympathetic to the left, the Party establishment was generally conservative, representing the interests of the entrenched bureaucratic elite. The PNI•s electoral support had depended especially on the traditional loyalty of peasants to this elite, and the Party was threatened more than any other by the rise of PKI support in the countryside. It, thus, provided a rallying point for civilians who were opposed to the PKI but suspicious of organized Islam.

Hostility between the army and organized Islam had been strong during the years after independence, with the army taking 15 years to

suppress a fundamentalist Muslim uprising called Darul Islam. The two, however, found themselves gradually drawn closer by their shared hostility to the prospect of the PKI coming to power. In Indonesia•s first fully free elections in 1955, the Communist Party had won 16.4 percent of the national vote, making it the fourth largest party, but its influence was growing rapidly and it maintained by far the best disciplined and organized party structure in the county. Sukarno drew it into his orbit as he consolidated his political power in a system he called Guided Democracy (1959…1965), declaring communism to be part of the state ideology and sponsoring a gradual penetration of state institutions by the Party (Mortimer, 1974). In early 1965 it appeared likely that workers and peasants would be armed and trained to make up a •Fifth Force• alongside the army, navy, air force, and police, thus creating a militia that would give the PKI direct access to armed force for the first time since the revolution.

The anti-Communist coalition was broadened by a widespread and more general hostility to the PKI. This hostility stemmed partly from the Party•s energetic efforts to recruit support throughout society that saw it take sides on a wide variety of issues. From each issue that won it allies, it acquired a set of enemies, and on some issues, such as the redistribution of farm land in East Java, social violence had reached high levels even before the massacres began (Wakin, 1969). In East Java, the PKI supported Hindu revivalists against the local Muslim establishment; in Hindu Bali, however, the Party vigorously denounced Hinduism and disrupted religious practice (Hefner, 1990, pp. 193…215; Robinson, 1990, pp. 241…48). The immediate reason for hatred between Communists and non-Communists, therefore, varied enormously over the breadth of the Indonesian archipelago and for many years formed one of the important obstacles to a better understanding of the massacres as a whole.

Hostility to the Party also stemmed from what were widely believed to be the circumstances of the 1965 attempted coup in Jakarta. The coup itself was an ambiguous affair that may never be fully understood. Army units from the presidential palace guard, headed by Lieutenant-Colonel Untung, abducted six senior anti-Communist generals from their homes early on the morning of October 1. This action was ostensibly an attempt to thwart a rumored right-wing coup d•etat by the generals. The generals were probably to be kidnapped, intimidated, and humiliated into abandoning their alleged coup plans. A clandestine bureau of the PKI was probably involved with the kidnappers, though the rest of the Party, except for a few leaders, was certainly unaware of the plot. The targeted generals, however, were killed, and the kidnappers announced, from Halim air force base near Jakarta, that a new Revolutionary Council had seized power. It is probable that the announcement was a panicked response to the botched kidnappings, but it was widely perceived in Indonesia, including by PKI

members themselves, as the Party•s attempt to seize power (Crouch, 1978, pp. 97…134).

The coup appeared to be a cynical grab for power, upsetting the uneasy balance of Guided Democracy. The killings of the generals, moreover, were the first significant political assassinations since the chaos of the war of independence; the young daughter of another general was fatally injured in crossfire. Rumors then emerged that a number of the generals had been tortured and mutilated before death by frenzied Communist women who celebrated their achievement with an orgy involving Party cadres and left-wing air force officers. (For definitive disproof of these rumors, see Anderson, 1987.) Word quickly spread, too, that Communists throughout the country had planned a similar fate for their other enemies and that holes had been dug in every district to accommodate the bodies of their victims. The stories of torture and mutilation, and those of the preparation of holes, have now been shown to be false, but they contributed greatly to the anti-Communist determination to kill.

How Was the Genocide Committed?

Although the motives driving the killers varied greatly, there was a common pattern to much of the killing itself. In each region, typically, news of the attempted coup in Jakarta was followed by a period of tense relative calm in which both sides attempted to assess what had happened. In most cases, the killings did not begin until the arrival of anti-Communist troops from outside, though there were some exceptions to this. In strongly Muslim Aceh, in northern Sumatra, and in parts of East Java, local Muslim leaders took the initiative to kill Communists within days of the coup attempt. Knowledge that the killing of Communists was sanctioned by the armed forces was enough to set the massacres off in some areas, but the army often intervened to give weapons and rudimentary training to anti-Communist vigilantes. In a few regions, the army itself conducted most of the killings, while here and there it felt obliged to dragoon unwilling local communities to help in the slaughter.

The actual killing followed two distinct patterns. In some places, the army and vigilantes organized raids on houses or villages suspected of harboring Communists. The killing was carried out mostly at night and commonly with bayonet or parang, the single-bladed machete of the Indonesian peasant. In some cases, entire communities loosely associated with the PKI were killed, but more commonly the army and vigilantes took with them blacklists of intended victims who were taken from their villages and killed nearby. The bodies were generally dumped in rivers or caves or were buried in shallow graves. The sites of some of these graves are still known locally and avoided. Often, however, victims were first detained for weeks or months in prisons, barracks, or detention camps

before being taken some distance from their homes and killed more or less secretly. At times, the bodies of the victims were mutilated. Some killers may have wished to avenge the alleged mutilation of the generals or to conceal the identity of the victims, but in some cases they had a more spiritual motive: In local belief, influenced by Islamic practice, to damage a body immediately before or after death is also to damage the soul, condemning it to lesser existence in the hereafter and limiting its capacity to return to earth to afflict its tormentors (Gittings, 1990).

Few of the victims offered significant resistance. The vast majority of Party members were as unprepared for violent conflict as their anti-Communist enemies. Indeed, some of the victims were strikingly passive. In North Sumatra victims were reported to have formed long, compliant lines at the river bank as they waited for methodical executioners to behead them and tumble the head and body into the water. There are reports from Bali that Party members went calmly to their deaths wearing white funeral clothes (Hughes, 1967, pp. 160, 181). One reason for this passivity seems to have been that Party members hoped initially that not resisting would show that they had not been involved in the Jakarta coup and they remained committed to seeking a legal path to power. In parts of Central Java, where the PKI had been strongest, there was some attempt to set up stockades in defense of Communist villages, but this was largely futile against the army. After most of the killings were over, remnants of the PKI attempted to establish a guerrilla base in the countryside of southern East Java, but this too was soon suppressed.

Why Was the Genocide Committed?

Discussion of the reasons for the Indonesian massacres, aside from considering the motives mentioned above, has focused on the unexpected ferocity of the killings in a country whose people had something of a reputation for gentleness. Most authors have argued that the killings involved something more than the political elimination of the PKI. Because it is likely that the destruction of the Party as a political force could have been achieved with many fewer deaths than actually occurred, observers have sought additional explanations for the scale of the massacre.

This issue raises questions of national psychology that are both difficult and delicate, and most attempts to explicate the event have not been convincing. Some scholars have suggested that the massacre represented a kind of collective running amok (amok being, after all, an Indonesian word). Amok, however, almost invariably takes place in response to projected imminent defeat and humiliation. It normally ends in the death of the amokker and has many of the hallmarks of an indirect form of suicide (Spores, 1988). Others have suggested that the Javanese shadow puppet play, or wayang, portrays the characters on the left of the puppeteer

as both wrong and doomed to violent destruction, and, so, inclined Indonesians to expect the PKI to perish in a welter of blood, but this theory fails to do justice to the complexity of wayang philosophy (see Anderson, 1965). Other scholars have emphasized the atmosphere of fear and uncertainty that gripped Indonesia at the time, arguing that the killings were a product of panic in an environment of intense political conflict. There is evidence, too, that many of the vigilantes were drawn from the criminal underworld. They were men of violence in any case and were given the freedom to exercise violence on a massive scale during the killings. Nonetheless, it is also worth remembering that the military forces around General Suharto felt entirely uncertain of success when they launched the massacres. Communist influence had deeply pervaded Indonesian society and politics. It was so unclear who was to be trusted that the Suharto group seems to have relied on lists prepared by the United States Central Intelligence Agency to identify the senior leftists who were to be removed. In these circumstances, the scale of the killing may partly reflect the army's determination to make sure that it would prevail.

More promising is our growing knowledge of the role of the men of violence (rural and urban gangsters, enforcers, and the like) in the

This sense of mass responsibility was also deliberately encouraged by the army, which aimed to ensure that it did not carry the burden of blood alone. Until the massacres were well advanced, many observers inside and outside Indonesia were uncertain whether the PKI could be effectively eliminated as a political force. The army was, therefore, keen to recruit irrevocably to its side as many groups as possible, knowing that those who had joined in the bloodshed could never change sides. As the killing proceeded, participation became something of a test of anti-Communist credentials. Those who had made compromises with the leftist elements in Guided Democracy often felt that they could prove themselves only by joining with especial enthusiasm in the ant-Communist witch-hunt. This was especially so on the island of Bali (Soe, 1990).

Historical Forces and Trends

The massacres of 1965…1966 played a key role in the long-term destruction of political parties as a significant force in Indonesian public life. The nationalist movement during the closing decades of Dutch rule in the first half of the 20th century had formed itself into a series of political parties, and at independence it had seemed natural that one or more political parties should take the lead in determining the county•s future. The resilience of local Party organizations was strengthened by the self-reliance they developed during the war of independence when central control was at a minimum. At a national level, however, the parties were for the most part fragile and even coincidental alliances of politicians whose power bases lay in regional, social, ethnic, or religious groups. Only in the PKI did the Party organization have a powerful base in its own right. Independent Indonesia adopted a parliamentary system in which governments were created by coalition on the floor of parliament, but this political form proved to be profoundly disappointing to many Indonesians. Coalitions were unstable, few lasting longer than a year, and politicians in general appeared to be obsessed with peddling influence and favors, rather than with determining policy in the national interest.

Sukarno•s suspension of the parliamentary system and declaration of martial law in 1957, therefore, were greeted favorably by many Indonesians in the hope that an authoritarian government less beholden to sectional political interests would rule the county better. Guided Democracy•s economic performance was dismal, but most observers attributed this to Sukarno•s concentration on ideology and foreign affairs and to the growing influence of the PKI rather than to his authoritarian political structures. The forces who marshaled against the PKI in 1965, therefore, included many who were determined to prevent parties from ever again exercising a decisive role in Indonesian politics.

In this perspective, the massacres were less important for their elimination of one particular party than for the curse they cast on party politics in general. While believing firmly that the PKI had to be exterminated, many conservatives deeply regretted that Indonesian politics had reached such a point and they blamed the hatreds that underlay the killings not simply on the PKI but on the freedom that all parties had used to pursue their own sectional interests. In Suharto•s Indonesia, therefore, the killings became a horrible warning of what might happen if populist politics were permitted. At each carefully managed national election, when the government electoral organization, called Golkar, won handsomely against the two permitted alternative parties, the specter of the violence of 1965…1966 was one of the forces that shepherded voters into support for the government.

Long-Range Impact

The killings eliminated the PKI as a significant political force in Indonesia. The Party has been formally illegal since March 1966, and aside from two or three attempts during the late 1960s to establish rural guerrilla bases on a Maoist model, there has been no clear sign of any PKI activity within Indonesia since that time. The Indonesian Suharto government regularly warned the public against the •latent danger• of the Party, and from time to time unexplained incidents, such as fires in public buildings, were blamed on a putative PKI underground, but it is most probable that the PKI was simply being used as a convenient scapegoat in these cases. A somewhat factionalized Party-in-exile continues to exist, based originally on Party members who happened to be abroad in October 1965 or who subsequently escaped the killings, and drawing more recently on exiled Indonesian dissidents, but it appears to have little impact in Indonesia itself.

The psychological impact of the killings on both survivors and perpetrators is difficult to assess. As mentioned above, Indonesian autobiographical writing about the killings is exceptionally sparse. In the late 1960s, a number of short stories appeared in which authors tackled various aspects of the killings (Aveling, 1975), but the topic failed to develop even as a genre in Indonesian literature. One or two anecdotes exist that describe killers who suffered horribly in later life as a consequence of their participation, but these are balanced by accounts of killers who live easily with their memories (Young, 1990, p. 80).

The memory of the killings, moreover, appears to have relatively little significance for those one might regard as survivors. This is partly because the killings appear to have been remarkably effective in eliminating those whom they targeted; that is, the active cadre of the PKI. More important, however, the relative disregard of the killings is a consequence of the fact

that an even larger number of leftists were punished by detention during the years after the coup. The Indonesian government itself has put the number of detainees at one and a half million. Not all these people were held at once, and some were released after a few months, but many were kept for years, and large numbers were exiled to the isolated prison island of Buru in eastern Indonesia. Virtually all shared the experience of hunger, humiliation, and mistreatment during their detention, and they suffered from harassment and discrimination for decades after their release. It appears that this experience of suffering has overshadowed „ for most of them „ the briefer and more distant terror of the killing months.

The impact of the killings is perhaps seen most strongly today in the changed religious geography of parts of Java, Timor, and North Sumatra, where an estimated 2.8 million people converted to Christianity in the years immediately after 1965. These conversions were partly a consequence of the military government•s insistence that all Indonesians should profess a religion. Although some Christian vigilantes were as brutal in the killings as their Muslim counterparts, the Christian churches in general took a much more active pastoral role among the families of victims and were rewarded with many converts. Conversion was also perhaps a consequence of a general spiritual crisis that the appalling level of violence presented to Indonesian society.

Responses

News of the killings reached the international press soon after they began, and, although the obstacles to effective reporting were formidable, a thin stream of news and feature articles (Kirk, 1966; King, 1966; Palmos, 1966; Turner, 1966) made available to the world community the fact that a massacre of enormous proportions was under way in Indonesia. The international response was muted „ partly because attention focused on the growing power of the military in Jakarta, and partly because the non-Communist world had no wish to make an issue of events it regarded favorably. Without specifically commending the Indonesian army for its actions, the world preferred not to know the details of what was happening, though Time came close to commendation when it described the PKI•s suppression as •The West•s best news for years in Asia• (•Vengeance•, 1966, p. 26).

Leftists outside Indonesia for their part were reluctant for many years to investigate the details of the killing. This was probably true for two reasons. First, leftist critics of the Suharto government, as well as other organizations such as churches and human rights organizations, generally focused on what they saw as its shortcomings „ restrictions on political activity, corruption, regressive development policies, and the like „ rather than on what they would regard as historical crimes. Second, the left was

aware that the PKI created many enemies in Indonesian society by its vigorous espousal of contentous issues such as land reform. PKI activists were, according to circumstance, unyielding, unreasonable, and even inconsistent. Their enemies had many grudges one might regard as legitimate, even if the response was unnecessarily violent. The left, therefore, has found its analysis of the killings to be most effective when they were simply interpreted as a general •white terrorŽ or violent conservative reaction to Communism, and the precise details of each killing were not explored.

Scholarly Interpretation

No significant observer had predicted the extent of the violence in Indonesia in 1965…1966 or the basis of a scholarly understanding of Indonesian society. For many years afterwards, scholars did not treat the massacres as a major event in Indonesian history. This was partly a consequence of the lack of information, but it reflected also a broader historiographical difficulty in blending the separate courses of local and national history into a single coherent narrative. Because the national significance of the killings cannot be explained without reference to local conditions, any more than the local significance could be discussed without reference to national events, the killings had an elusive character that has militated against close analysis.

The circumstances of Suharto•s fall, however, increased the willingness of scholars to pay attention to the massacres of 1965…1966 himself. Throughout the long years of Suharto•s New Order, scholars had debated whether the spectacular economic achievements for the government „ Indonesia went from being one of the poorest countries in the world to being one of the celebrated Asian economic •tigersŽ „ just ified the high levels of corruption and the continuing political repression of the military-dominated government. In 1997, however, the Indonesian economy collapsed as part of a more general Southeast Asian economic crisis, and the severity of the collapse was widely attributed to shortcomings in Suharto•s policies. With the old president•s economic credentials in tatters, scholars became more inclined to examine his political shortcomings and to identify the 1965…1966 massacres as the beginning of the New Order „ t hat is, the first act in a long story of political repression „ rather than as the end of Sukarno•s Guided Democracy „ t hat is, the working out of tensions generated in the struggle for independence and in the attempt to shape a workable democratic system for Indonesia.

Disregard for the killings may also be related to the character of the scholarly community that studies Indonesia. At least until recently, this community tended to be dominated by scholars who had made the study of Indonesia their life•s work and who brought to their studies a deep

familiarity with Indonesia and an affection for its people. Perhaps because it is hard to reconcile such widespread killings with affection for Indonesians, scholars with the experience that would enable them to examine the killings in detail have tended to look for other research topics and to focus their discussion of the events of 1965 on the attempted coup of September 30, 1965. The circumstances of the coup are themselves shrouded in uncertainty, but they at least permit scholars to identify innocent parties in a way in which the killings do not.

Insofar as historical debate exists, it focuses on the relative responsibility of the armed forces and of the vigilantes in initiating and sustaining the killings. The left on the whole gives greater emphasis to the role of the military, the right to the vigilantes, but this disagreement has never reached the level of controversy.

Current Attitudes

Interest in the Indonesian massacres revived in the late 1980s and early 1990s after two decades of neglect. A small number of previously little-known personal accounts appeared (see "Eyewitness Accounts"), and a collection of essays on the killings attempted to restore the topic to the scholarly agenda (Cribb, 1990). An important reason for this interest seemed to be a growing awareness that the survivors on both sides of the massacres were reaching old age and within a short span of time might not be around to add their testimony to the record. President Suharto, moreover, had his 70th birthday in 1991, and it was widely accepted that his period of dominance in Indonesian politics was coming to an end. Furthermore, four important local studies of the killings (Hefner, 1990; Sudjatmiko, 1992; Robinson, 1995; Sulistyo, 1997) made it possible to analyze the killings in a way that was less dependent on scattered anecdotes.

Many observers expected an upsurge of Indonesian interest in the killings after the fall of President Suharto in 1998. Indeed a number of groups did begin to investigate the killings „ collecting testimonies and even excavating mass graves. The activities of these groups, however

and others only because he happened to be hiding near the secluded abattoir where the killings took place. The killers whom he watched took some care to conceal the identity of their victims but none at all to conceal the bodies, which were simply flung into the river. Pipit Rochijat, too, describes the way in which victims were often taken away to some secluded spot to be killed, yet bodies and parts of bodies were widely displayed. This phenomenon (contrasting with the public executions and the secret disposal of bodies employed by some repressive regimes) highlights the extent to which the killings were intended to create terror, as well as eliminating political opponents. Uncertainty about who had been killed and where and why kept the Communists and the left in general off balance, encouraging rumor and uncertainty. Unable to be sure just what the scope of the killings would be, the Communists could not judge whether it was best to fight, to flee, or to confess.

This uncertainty also emerges powerfully in the final testimony. This account is the work of an Indonesian journalist sent by his newspaper to investigate one of the last outbreaks of killing associated with the suppression of the PKI. The poverty-stricken Purwodadi region of Central Java was one of a small number of rural areas where the PKI began to develop a guerilla strategy, and the suppression of the Party•s incipient military campaign was reportedly accompanied in late 1966 and early 1969 by a wave of killings of civilians by army and home guard forces. Maskun Iskandar visited the region in early 1969 at the invitation of the Indonesian army, which denied the killings had taken place. His report was published serially in the independent newspaper Indonesia Raya.

Iskandar•s testimony is in many ways unsatisfactory. He saw no bodies, heard little testimony except from official sources, and draws no conclusions. His account leaves the reader hanging and the fact that he visited the region as a guest of the Indonesian army would seem to cast further doubt on his credibility and on the figures he cites. To a Western reader, his report seems almost inconsequential; to an Indonesian reader, however, aware of the constraints of official censorship and unofficial controls on journalism, his report leaves little doubt that a significant massacre took place. His diffident reference to the •camps of death Ž at Kuwu and the •left-overs Ž in the camps elsewhere, for instance, would give the censor little to object to, but draw the reader•s attention to ominous nomenclature. He dismisses as •useless Ž his questions to children about their missing parents, but reports faithfully that their eyes brim with tears. He describes the sergeant known as •007 Ž (licensed to kill) as if he disbelieves the story, but his readers will draw their own conclusions from the nickname. When he talks casually about the risk of •losing Ž his notes, his Indonesian readers know immediately that he is referring to the risk of confiscation by the authorities.

Maskun•s report does not tell us what happened in Purwodadi, but his writing reminds us powerfully that not all victims of genocide are able to leave oral or written testimony as their memorial. There are times in human history when neither victims, nor survivors, nor perpetrators, have preserved more than a fragmentary record of genocide. The victims at Purwodadi, whose fate is faintly recorded in Iskandar•s account, stand for a much larger group, not only in Indonesia, whose destruction remains largely unrecorded.

Account 1

•By the Banks of the Brantas.Ž was first published in *Injustice, Persecution, Eviction: A Human Rights Update on Indonesia and East Timor* (New York: Asia Watch, 1990), pp. 87…90. Reprinted by permission of Asia Watch.

Some people spoke of Pak[1] Mataim, the bicycle repairman, one of whose eyes was white. His house had been used as the local PKI secretariat, and they said he was the first person in the village to be arrested. He had been frightened out of his wits. He was taken to the police station and later detained in Mlaten.

Mlaten? Where was there a prison in Mlaten? There wasn•t. That night I went to Mlaten to see for myself. In fact it was a warehouse that had become a detention centre. Now the building was surrounded with a thick fence of woven bamboo, so that you couldn•t see it from the outside. The police station I passed seemed empty. I kept going south, past the subdistrict military headquarters. It was guarded not just by the army but by members of the Banser.[2] Banser was also guarding the subdistrict government offices „ they were everywhere.

Now every night, raids took place. Four members of my organization were arrested. They were all able to escape or perhaps they were deliberately let go. They were asked about me, and it was clear I was already on the list of those to be arrested. After that I no longer slept at home at night. More often I became a wanderer on the banks of the Brantas. I didn•t have to exhaust myself finding a place to hide because there was an abattoir, surrounded by high grasses, which was completely deserted. My younger brothers knew about my hiding place, and one day brought a schoolmate to see me and warn me to get out of the city. She said I didn•t need to go back to school, especially since the school was being searched and one of the people they were looking for was me.

Politics forced my transformation from student to fisherman. There were many others on the Brantas, fishing with nets or rods. Unfortunately for me, the fish I caught didn•t bring in any money; I couldn•t sell one.

In November, the rains began to come. The river ran muddy and fast with weeds, leaves, human limbs, and headless corpses. Fishermen

vanished from the banks. I was the only one left, not to fish but to save my life. At night it was the same as before, only now I was on my own. One night I heard a rustling coming from the abattoir. I got closer and lay prone in the bushes like a snake. When I heard voices, I got frightened, but I still wanted to know what was going on. A few seconds later, I heard the engine of a car. Several Banser members got down from a Willis jeep. Some of them wore black and carried a piece of rattan about half a metre long in their left hands, while in the right they carried machetes. Then came a truck which I recognized as belonging to Pak Abu, the owner of a textile mill in Jatisongo *f* .

Among those wearing black were several people I knew. Pak Harun wore glasses, had a paunch, and always wore a black fez when he went out. He had a small moustache and dark skin. He was the number one man in Nahdatul Ulama [the national Islamic organization] in the Karangpilang subdistrict. Rejo, still young, was a member of Ansor, the Nahdatul Ulama youth wing, in Wiyung, a village to the west of Kedurus. He was large and tall, also mustached, and wore a seaweed bracelet around his right wrist. He often frequented bars.

•Is the sake ready?Ž Harun asked. The others said everything was ready. An oil lamp flickered over my head and forced me to lie flat, hoping that the tall grasses would obstruct their view. I didn•t dare move, ignoring the ants and mosquitoes.

A man was hauled off the truck, his feet and hands bound. A plump man, he was dragged around like a banana stalk. It took three people to do it. They were only ten metres in front of me when, reaching the abattoir, they untied his feet. He was wearing a white cotton shirt with brown stripes. He looked dishevelled, as though he hadn•t changed clothes in days. He seemed weak „ maybe he hadn•t been getting enough to eat. The Petromax lamp suddenly illuminated his face, and I got a shock. It was Pak Mukdar, the elementary school principal in Kedurus. His head was bare (usually he wore a fez), and his eyeglasses were gone. Weak as he was, he was forced to stand. There were a few uniformed army sergeants and other military men, but it wasn•t clear what rank the others held or what unit they were from. They asked Pak Mukdar questions, and I strained my ears to hear. I just heard murmurs; it wasn•t clear whether he had answered.

•If you don•t answer what we ask,Ž said one of the military, •say your last prayers. We•re going to send you to meet your maker.Ž

The old man didn•t say anything. Instead, he began to sing the song so frequently sung by PKI members, the Internationale. Before he could finish, he was shoved from behind by a man in black and fell flat. Maybe he fainted. With his hands still tied, his neck was hacked by Rejo, the youth from Wiyung. He finished off the unconscious, weak old man, whose hands were still tied. My teacher „ such a meaningless death, in an

abattoir meant for slaughtering cattle. His head was removed and put in the sack. Then they dragged his body to the river and tossed it in. It washed away slowly in front of me *f* .

Another body was also thrown in, also headless. I couldn•t count how many headless corpses passed by me. Every time, the head was put in the gunny sack. Then I heard a shout from a voice I recognized and froze; it was Pak Mataim, our bicycle repairman who I think was illiterate. He seemed very thin, and he too was dragged along like a banana stalk. He moaned, begging for mercy, for his life to be spared. They laughed, mocking him. He was terrified. The rope around his feet was taken off, leaving his hands still tied. He cried, and because he couldn•t keep quiet, they plugged up his mouth with a clump of earth.

Rejo went into action, and like lightning, his machete cut through the neck of his victim, the one-eyed, powerless, bicycle repairman. His head went into the sack. Then his hands were untied, so that it looked as though he died without first being bound. At first, his headless body disappeared beneath the surface of the water, then eventually it floated up. The next person killed was a woman; I don•t know who she was.

At midday when my brother came, he told of seeing a corpse caught against a tree on the edge of the river. From the clothes and certain features of his body, they discovered it was Pak Muktar. I didn•t say a word of what I•d seen. The news caused my mother to fall ill, but such news came every day from the Brantas. Our house was finally raided but I managed to slip away. Following the suggestion of a friend from school, I left the Surabaya area for Lawang, but there too the murderers were roaming around. Suheri, a young killer from the village of Bambangan, invited me to join in helping herd a young man he wanted to kill to the Purwasari forest. He was one of Suheri•s own group, not a member of any organization. But Suheri wanted his wife, then a beautiful woman. He didn•t get his way, though. When he went to claim his victim•s spouse, the woman concerned had disappeared.

Forgive me if I don•t include pictures of the places I have described here. At the very least, I hope this little account of the last moments of the many victims can become a kind of explanation for their children, wives,

on f

into the Brantas, but were disposed of in mass graves. The prepared holes were dug pretty big, and were thus capable of handling dozens of Communists at a time.

Furthermore, at one time the road leading up to Mount Klotok (to the west of Kediri city) was decorated with PKI heads.

About 1 kilometer to the north of the Ngadirejo sugar factory, you'd find a lot of houses of prostitution. Once the purge of Communist elements got under way, clients stopped coming for sexual satisfaction. The reason: Most clients „ and prostitutes „ were too frightened, for, hanging up in front of the houses, there were a lot of male Communist genitals „ like bananas hung out for sale.

Naturally, such mass killings were welcomed by the Nationalist and Religious groups. Indeed [they felt,] the target of 100,000 Communist lives for one general's had to be achieved. It was the same for Kartawidjaja's Son No. 2 and his family. Specially when they got the word that for the Kartawidjaja family a Crocodile Hole[9] had been prepared, for use if the PKI were victorious.

This atmosphere of vengeance spread everywhere. Not merely in the outside world, but even into the schools, for example State High School No. 1. There the atmosphere was all the more ripe in that for all practical purposes the school broke down, and classes did not continue as usual. Many students did not come to school at all „ like Syom, for example, a friend of Kartawidjaja's Son No. 2, who had to spend most of his time going round helping purge the Kediri region of Communist elements. Kartawidjaja's Son No. 2 saw many cases where teachers and student members of IPPI at State High School No. 1 were held up at knife point by their Nationalist and Religious comrades. With the knives at their throats they were threatened with death. They wept, begging forgiveness and expressing regret for what they had done while members of the IPPI. In the end, all the secrets came out (or maybe false confessions). Each person tried to save himself at another's expense. After all, they were human beings too, and thm0 j /F6 1 Tf 0.4522 sTj /F3(J /F6 -0.0015 Tc 0(TDj /F6 1 Tf

My hair, clothes, my bag were all dusty. It was a bad road from Purwodadi to Kuwu. In a few places the asphalt could still be seen, but for the rest the road was paved only with brittle stones which crushed easily. •Hard river stones are like gold in this area,Ž[10] said the military man who escorted us in the jeep. We proceeded slowly, seldom meeting another vehicle. I had been told that the only public transport available was an old train which ran the 62 kilometres from Semarang to Purwodadi. So here was one piece of Princen•s[11] information confirmed: communications were difficult. But was the rest true? Had there been mass killings? Were conditions in the Kuwu area tense? Now that I was on my way to the area, I had to find answers to these riddles.

Before we left Purwodadi for the Kuwu area, which had been identified in press reports as the centre of the killing, the KODIM commander gave us a briefing. PKI membership in Purwodadi was estimated at 200,000, out of a population of 700,000 in 18 kecamatan.[12] Two hundred of the 285 lurah [village heads] were PKI, he told us. Out of this number, only about a thousand had been •finished off,Ž and those were only the leaders. •If we arrested everyone who was PKI,Ž the commander told us, •we would not know what to do with them. We do not have space to detain them and we could not simply release them because the rest of the population would not have them back.Ž The commander of KODAM VII[13] plans to transmigrate them.

On the afternoon of March 5, I visited 4 of the 14 prison camps in Purwodadi kabupaten.[14] I saw 987 prisoners and it would be dishonest if I were to say that they were either fat or the reverse. The camps themselves, I was told, included former store houses which the military had borrowed from local people. So there were no terrifying iron bars, but they were only wood

Someone walked past my room. I quickly hid the papers under the mattress and switched off the light. Then everything fell quiet again, except for the constant short cough of the night watchman. It reminded me of an incident before I had met the KODIM commander in Purwodadi the previous night, but I might come back to that. I still had not finished transcribing my notes on the arrests and killings.

According to the earliest information from Princen, two to three thousand people had been killed. This seemed very high, out of a total population of 8000 in Purwodadi kabupaten.[15] So I began to count. Seventy-five people at night for, say, two months, how much would that be? Now, there are 285 desa in Purwodadi. There cannot have been killing in all of them, so let us assume just ten, and that the killings took place once a week, not every night. This would make 8 (weeks) * 10 (desa) * 75 people = 6000 people. Impossible! What if I make it just one desa? That is still hundreds, still mass killings. I folded up my notes. I would return them in due course to the authorities in the form of questons.

I saw no beggars in Purwodadi. They say the kabupaten was once full of them, but there was now no sign of them. I asked my escort. They had been pulled in during the searches, he said; there were 43 in the camps now. Were they PKI people hiding as beggars, I wondered, or just ordinary non-Communist beggars? Another thing drew my attenton. There were said to be five mad people in the camp, and none had been sent to a mental hospital. Even one mad person is a lot for a small kabupaten, but five? Perhaps Purwodadi is an exception. It was not clear whether these people were mad when they went into the camp or whether they became mad there. I do not know.

There are 14 women among the prisoners, perhaps Gerwani, perhaps not. I did not get a chance to ask them. But let me give details of the prison camps as I know them. There are 14 camps in Purwodadi. In the town itself, there are 411 prisoners, in Toroh 51, in Gundik 40. Ah yes, and before I forget, the total includes 127 prisoners left over from the arrests in 1965. In Godong there are 9 prisoners; in Kradenan two camps, the first with 55, the second with 67. Fifty in Sulur, seventy-two in Grobogan. The total number of prisoners, including beggars, lunatics, and women, is 987 in 14 camps. In Wirosari there are 79 prisoners, in Ngaringan 64, in Tawangharjo 36, in Pulokulon 47, in Grubug 5, in Tewoganu 33, in Kedungjati 1. In January there were four cases of illness, in February two. Some people said these were all recent arrivals, others called them "left-overs" (sisa). It was not altogether clear to me what the term sisa meant, so I did not pay much attenton to it.

I put all my notes and the materials I had not yet transcribed back in my bag and closed it with a large queston mark. I hope that an investga-ton team dedicated to upholding the law will open it.

Notes

1. Pak: an honorific meaning •father,Ž used to address older men.
2. One of the Muslim vigilante groups active in East Java.
3. General A. H. Nasution was at the time Chief of Staff of the Armed Forces and Minister of Defense. When the Untung group attacked his home on the morning of October 1, the general•s daughter was killed by a stray bullet.
4. The League for Indonesian High School Students, affiliated with the PKI.
5. Nahdatul Ulama, the main Muslim political party.
6. The Indonesian Peasants•Front, affiliated with the PKI.
7. The Indonesian Women•s Front, affiliated with the PKI.
8. The word •WantedŽ is in English in the original text.
9. Lubang Buaya (Crocodile Hole) was the name for the area, within the Halim Perdanakusumah Air Base perimeter, where the bodies of the assassinated generals were disposed of (down a disused well).
10. The collection of river stones for the paving of roads was one of the traditional obligations laid on the rural population in Java.
11. H. J. Princen, an Indonesian of Dutch descent, was and is a major human rights activist who pursued humanitarian issues both under Sukarno•s Guided Democracy and under Suharto•s New Order. It was he who broke news of the alleged massacres in Purwodadi.
12. District; an administrative division.
13. The regional military command for Central Java.
14. Regency; the administrative division above kecamatan.
15. Eight thousand is, of course, far too low. Earlier Iskandar gives the kabupaten population as 700,000.

References

Anderson, Ben (1965). Mythology and the Tolerance of the Javanese. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Modern Indonesia Project.

Anderson, Ben (1987). •How Did the Generals Die?Ž Indonesia, 43: 109…34.

Asia Watch (1990). Injustice, Persecution, Eviction: A Human Rights Update on Indonesia and East Timor. New York: author.

Aveling, Harry (1975). Gestapu: Indonesian Short Stories on the Abortive Communist Coup of 30th September 1965. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Southeast Asian Studies Working Paper, no. 6.

Cribb, Robert (1990). The Indonesian Killings of 1965…1966: Studies from Java and Bali. Clayton, Victoria, Australia: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies.

Cribb, Robert (1991). Gangsters and Revolutionaries: The Jakarta People•s Militia and the Indonesian Revolution, 1945…49. Sydney: Allen & Unwin.

Cribb, Robert (2002). •Unresolved Problems in the Indonesian Killings of 1965…66.Ž Asian Survey, July/August, 42(4): 550…63.

Crouch, Harold (1978). The Army and Politics in Indonesia. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Gittings, John (1990). •The Black Hole of Bali.Ž Guardian Weekly, September 23, p. 22.

Hefner, Robert W. (1990). The Political Economy of Mountain Java. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Hughes, John (1967). Indonesian Upheaval. New York: McKay.

King, Seth (1966). •The Great Purge in Indonesia.Ž New York Times Magazine, May 8, p. 89.

Kirk, Donald (1966). •The Struggle for Power in Indonesia.Ž The Reporter, February 25, p. 38.

Mortimer, Rex (1974). Indonesian Communism Under Sukarno: Ideology and Politics, 1959…65. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Palmos, Frank (1966). •One Million Dead?Ž The Economist, August 20: pp. 727…28.

Robinson, Geoffrey (1995). The Dark Side of Paradise: Political Violence in Bali. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Rochijat, Pipit (1985). •Am I PKI or Non-PKI?Ž Indonesia, 40: 37…56.

Soe Hok Gie (1990). "The Mass Killing in Bali". pp. 252–58. In Robert Cribb (Ed.) The Indonesian Killings of 1965–1966: Studies from Java and Bali. Clayton, Victoria, Australia: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies.

Spores, John (1988). Running Amok: An Historical Inquiry. Athens Ohio University Centre for International Studies.

Sudjatmiko, Iwan Gardono (1992). "The Destruction of the Indonesian Communist Party (PKI) (A Comparative Analysis of East Java and Bali)". Ph.D. thesis, Harvard University.

Sulistyo, Hermawan (1997). "The Forgotten Years: The Missing History of Indonesia's Mass Slaughter (Jombang-Kediri 1965–66)". Ph.D. thesis, Arizona State University.

Sundhaussen, Ulf (1982). The Road to Power: Indonesian Military Politics 1965–67. Kuala Lumpur: Oxford University Press.

Time (1966). "Vengeance". Time Magazine, p.26.

Turner, Nicholas (1966). "Indonesian Killings May Exceed 300,000". The Guardian, April 7.

Walkin, Jacob (1969). "The Moslem-Communist Confrontation in East Java, 1964–1965". Asia, 13(3):822–47.

Young, Kenneth R. (1990). "Local and National Influences in the Violence of 1965". pp. 63–99. In Robert Cribb (Ed.) The Indonesian Killings of 1965–66: Studies from Java and Bali. Clayton, Victoria, Australia: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies.

East Timor

CHAPTER 8
Genocide in East Timor

JAMES DUNN

Introduction

In 1975 Indonesian forces invaded the Portuguese colony of East Timor, which was then in the process of decolonization. The invasion provoked a spirited armed resistance, and during the subsequent five-year perio19 0 TD (d

international community, President Habibie responded to the demands of the Security Council, and the intervention of President Clinton, and ordered the withdrawal of Indonesian troops and agreed to the transfer of the former Portuguese colony to the United Nations Transitional Administration in East Timor (UNTAET), with the task of preparing the devastated country for full independence.

The Setting

The island of Timor lies at the southeastern extremity of the Indonesian Nusatenggara island group, which was named the Lesser Sundas in Dutch colonial times. It is located at the opposite end to the island of Bali, one of Asia•s best-known tourist attractions. Following a long period of rivalry and conflict, Timor came to be divided into two almost equal parts by the Dutch and Portuguese colonial administrations. The partition began to take shape about the middle of the 17th century, as Portugal•s colonial power in the East Indies began to weaken in the face of the more vigorous Dutch intrusion. Boundary disputes between the two colonial powers persisted until the late 19th century; that is, until the Lisbon Convention of 1893 and the subsequent signing of the Sentenca Arbitral in April 1913, which demarcated the borders as they exist today. The Portuguese colony of East Timor comprised the eastern half of the island, the tiny enclave of Oecussi on the north coast of West Timor, and the small island of Ataur north of Dili.

East Timor is a small country, but it is not insignificant by the standards of smallness among today•s membership of the United Nations. The territory has an area of about 7300 square miles, comparable in size as well as population with Fiji and only slightly smaller in area than Israel or the state of New Jersey. On the eve of the Indonesian invasion, the Timorese population of the territory was estimated at about 680,000 people, with an annual growth rate of near 2 percent.

Portuguese navigators first reached Timor about 20 years after Columbus embarked on his epic trans-Atlantic crossing half a millennium ago. About 50 years later, their colonial rule of the area began in earnest. Therefore, for more than four centuries Portugal had been the dominant, almost exclusive, external influence in East Timor „ except for a brief Japanese interregnum, from February 1942 until they surrendered to Allied forces in August 1945.

Within five years, the Dutch colony of the Netherlands East Indies was formally to become the Republic of Indonesia. Portuguese colonial rule over East Timor was restored, however, and until 1974 its colonial status was virtually ignored by the nationalist leaders of the new republic. This lack of interest persisted during the last seven years of Sukarno•s presidency, when Indonesia embarked on an aggressive anti-colonial policy,

with Jakarta vigorously asserting its own claim for the "return" of West Irian. After that objective was secured, Indonesia launched, in 1962, a costly and futile confrontation of Malaysia, which Sukarno perceived as a British neocolonial creation.

At no stage during this period did Indonesia seek to bring any real pressure to bear on the Portuguese administration in East Timor, although the Salazar regime had by that time become the chief target of the mounting campaign for decolonization. Portugal had become the only colonial power that refused to declare its colonies non-self-governing. While Dutch colonialism in West New Guinea was denounced in vitriolic terms, the more traditional form of colonial rule then being conducted by the Portuguese in neighboring East Timor scarcely rated a mention in Jakarta.

From the early 1960s until 1965 there were occasional remarks by a few leading Indonesian political and military figures, hinting that East Timor's future lay with its big neighbor, but these statements were not taken further by the government of the time, and certainly never evolved into a formal claim or political campaign.[1] After 1965, the Suharto regime, which was keen to develop closer relations

polit

at its very inception, that a subversive operation had been put in place with the aim of bringing about integration.[6] Before the end of 1974 this operation was set up by a group of Indonesian generals, among them Lieutenant-General Ali Murtopo, Major-General Benny Murdani (a senior intelligence officer close to the president), and Lieutenant-General Yoga Sugama, then head of the intelligence services. The existence of this operation, code-named "Operasi Komodo,"[7] became known to U.S. and Australian intelligence agencies before the year was out. Its aim was to bring about the integration of East Timor at any cost, though preferably by nonmilitary means. Its first activities, which included a stream of clumsy propaganda vilifying the independence movement, the open backing of Apodeti, and some thinly disguised covert intelligence actions, had the effect not of dividing the two major parties, but of bringing them together.

Thus it was partly in reaction to this heavy-handed meddling that, early in January 1975, Fretilin[8] and UDT[9] formed a common front for independence. There is little doubt that Australia's accommodating stance, at the official level, strengthened the hands of the generals bent on the annexation of East Timor. Indeed, it is probable that the viability of this operation was predicated on the assumption that Australia would accept it. By the end of 1974, Indonesia was waging a strident propaganda campaign against Fretilin, in particular, and all Timorese in favor of independence in general. Fretilin was a party of the left, and the Indonesian military chiefs were quite paranoid about its activities. The Fretilin leaders were accused of being Communist and anti-Indonesian, and falsified accounts of links between them, Peking, and Hanoi were circulated. In reaction to the provocative propaganda outpourings from Jakarta, the Timorese themselves became increasingly hostile towards Indonesia.

In the first couple of months after April 1974, the Portuguese were rather indifferent towards the idea of independence for East Timor, with some military officers believing that joining with Indonesia made sense for such a small and undeveloped country. One senior official believed he had a responsibility to promote the idea of integration.[10] However, the apparent popular support for independence eventually convinced Lisbon and the colonial authorities that the Timorese were simply not disposed to merge with Indonesia. They saw themselves as being different, in terms of their culture, their languages, their political traditions, and their religions.[11] The aggressive approach of the Indonesians after August 1974 merely served to strengthen the East Timorese national consciousness, impelling the two major parties to form a coalition for independence. In the event, the Portuguese authorities commenced a decolonization program late in 1974, presenting the Timorese political elite with three

options „ full independence, continuing with Portugal under some new and more democratic arrangement, or integration with Indonesia.

The year 1975 proved to be a turbulent one for East Timor. As a result of political instability in Portugal, and the demoralization of the overseas administration, the decolonization program for Timor soon ran into difficulties. Political turmoil in Lisbon weakened the colonial power•s administrative control, and the Indonesian generals heading Operasi Komodo exploited the deteriorating situation subtly and subversively. By mid-autumn of that year political differences had surfaced between the two major parties, and in an Operasi Komodo operation, guided by Lt. General Murtopo himself, the Indonesians sought to divide the independence movement. Their propaganda offensive against Fretilin was intensified, while the UDT leaders were invited to Jakarta, where they pro

Outraged by these atrocities, the small but determined Timorese army bitterly contested the advance of the invading forces, and in terrain ideal for guerrilla warfare they were able to inflict heavy losses on the attackers, until the early 1980s, denying the ABRI[19] effective control outside the main towns and administrative centres. The retaliation of the invading force to this stiff challenge to integration was the imposition of a harsh and oppressive occupation. In the areas under Indonesian control, serious human rights violations were a daily occurrence, forcing tens of thousands of Timorese to seek refuge behind Fretilin lines.

The invasion force, which was soon to amount to more than 30,000 troops, entered the Portuguese colony from the west, where East Timor adjoins Indonesia, and in landings at major towns on the north coast, such as Baucau and Maubara. Thousands of Timorese were killed in the first weeks of the invasion when, from all accounts, troops went on the rampage, no doubt in response to the unexpectedly determined Timorese resistance to the invasion. In Dili there were a number of public executions „ including along the wharf area where more than 100 were reportedly shot, at Santa Cruz, at the Military Police barracks, and at Taistolo, near the airport. Also, in the small towns of Maubara and Liquica and at other villages in the interior, Indonesian military units carried out public executions, numbering from 20 to more than 100 persons.

While conditions in the occupied areas were harsh and oppressive, indiscriminate killing, raping, and torture were even more widespread in the disputed areas. In their advance into the mountainous interior, especially where the advance was being hotly contested, the Indonesian forces killed many of the Timorese they encountered. The biggest single killing reported to the author by the Timorese driver of one of the Indonesian trucks occurred in 1975 at Lakmanan, near the western border, where invading troops returning from a stiff encounter with Fretilin turned their guns on a large temporary encampment of Timorese. One of these witnesses estimated that as many as 2000 were killed over a period of several hours.[20]

As Indonesia sought to overpower the armed resistance and to suppress opposition to integration in occupied areas, tens of thousands of Timorese were to perish up to the end of 1979. During this period, East Timor was virtually sealed off from the outside world. The International Red Cross, which had been present in strength until just before the invasion, did not regain access to the territory until the second half of 1979, almost four years after the invasion.[21]

Although initially it was the intention of most townsfolk to remain in their homes and communities, the widespread killing, the torture, and the raping committed by the invading troops resulted in the flight of a large proportion of the population into the interior, to the comparative safety of

the mountain districts under the control of Fretilin. However, it was in the mountainous interior of the island that the greatest loss of life was to occur in the following three years. Most of the deaths were from famine and related diseases, but it was the harsh treatment meted out by the Indonesians that prompted the Timorese to flee to the mountains.

Because of the absence of demographic records, whether kept by the invaders or by other authorities, no precise account of the human cost of the invasion and its aftermath exists. However, recent Indonesian census statistics provide evidence that it attained genocidal proportions. Before the invasion East Timor•s population was about 690,000, and growing at about 2 percent. It follows that by, for example, 1991, there should have been more than 950,000 people; but based on Indonesian statistics, in East Timor, which had been designated the 27th province of Indonesia, there were only about 740,000 people.[22] Of this number, though, as many as 140,000 were non-Timorese who had, in recent years, moved into the territory from elsewhere in Indonesia, some of them transmigrants and others opportunistic drifters. The upshot is that, in effect, the Timorese population, some 16 years after the invasion, was 12 percent less than what it was in 1975.

The annexation of East Timor had a drastic effect on all aspects of life in the community. Before the invasion, the ethnic and cultural patterns in the territory were exceedingly complex but, aside from some special characteristics, they resembled the patterns in the nearby islands of Eastern Nusatenggara.[23] The population was essentially Austronesian in character, but with a noticeable Melanesian influence. It reflected a long procession of migrations from west, north, and the east. But it would be an oversimplification to describe the territory as culturally part of Indonesia, if only because of the great ethnic and cultural diversity within this sprawling archipelagic nation. To call a Timorese •Indonesian• is rather like calling a Kurd an Iraqi or a Tibetan Chinese, labels that are imprecise and attract resentment. The Timorese were not, however, antagonistic towards people from other parts of the archipelago, at least before Indonesia began to meddle in the affairs of the island.[24] But in the past they had regarded the occasional visiting Indonesia fishing vessels with some suspicion. Perhaps this was because, unlike the Javanese or Buginese, the Timorese were not themselves a seafaring people and felt threatened by outsiders with these skills.

The rugged mountainous interior of East Timor provided excellent conditions for Fretilin•s guerilla campaign, but the resistance forces were not in a position to provide the basic needs of the tens of thousands of people who sought refuge within this territory. Food and medical supplies were inadequate, and the Timorese were subjected to constant air attacks (including, for a short period, the use of napalm). The Timorese were

bombed and strafed, and once the Indonesian air force acquired Bronco anti-insurgency aircraft from the United States, these attacks intensified. In the two years following the invasion, the Timorese leaders did manage to feed the people within their lines by developing the agricultural resources available to them in the rich valleys, but according to reports from Fretilin, in 1978 these farms were subject to air attacks by AURI[25] aircraft. According to one report, chemical substances were dropped on the crops, causing the plants to die. By 1978, the food situation behind Fretilin lines was desperate, and the Timorese leaders began encouraging their people to return to Indonesian-occupied areas; the resistance forces were no longer able to feed them, nor to provide even the most basic of medical treatment.

Initially, when these "refugees" moved into occupied territory, their reception was anything but humane. Some suspected Fretilin supporters were summarily executed, while many others were beaten or tortured at the slightest provocation.[26] The refugees were forced into resettlement camps, where food and medical facilities were grossly inadequate. In 1979, the first international aid workers to enter the territory reported that the basic needs of the Timorese in these centres were being seriously neglected and that thousands were dying needlessly from famine and disease.

Reports on the grim situation in East Timor began to come out of the territory as early as the end of 1976. In that year a confidential report from Catholic Church sources depicted a scene of oppression and wanton killing. Its authors suggested that in the year since the invasion as many as 60,000 Timorese might have lost their lives.[27] Was the international community aware of this very heavy loss of life and, if so, how did it react? In fact, these early reports aroused very little international attention. East Timor was remote, little known, and without any strategic or economic importance, even to the colonial power. While the UN itself promptly condemned the invasion and called on Indonesia to withdraw its forces, its pronouncements were mostly vague and irresolute.[28]

There is a more sinister aspect to this dismal situation. When the gravity of the humanitarian situation in this territory began to unfold, East Timor could easily have been made an issue of international concern by nations like the United States or Australia if their governments had chosen to do so.[29] In the 1970s, however, Indonesia had begun to assume a new importance in the eyes of the major Western powers. It was large, Muslim, and oil-producing, and the archipelago straddled the division between the strategically important Pacific and Indian Oceans. And the Suharto regime, despite its undemocratic character, fulfilled important political conditions „ it was anti-Communist, it was development-oriented, and it had created a facade of stability and harmony.

Under those circumstances, the Western governments with the greatest interest in Indonesia „ that were also best placed to monitor events in East Timor „ chose to play down the reports, most of them emanating from Church sources in Dili, that Indonesian military operations were inflicting heavy loss of life on the general population. In the Australian parliament, for example, these reports were repeatedly alluded to by official sources as being unproven, or ill-founded and exaggerated.

If the foreign missions in Jakarta were aware of just how serious was the humanitarian situation, they were careful not to disclose it in their public statements. In the case of the missions representing Australia, Canada, and the United States, the extent to which their diplomats were able to report on this situation was, in the experience of this writer, diminished by the tacit support that their governments had given to integration. According credibility to the reports from organizations such as the Catholic Church in East Timor would have been tantamount to admitting by implication a measure of responsibility.

Some of the reports made public could not have been honestly arrived at. For example, early in 1977 one U.S. State Department official told members of the U.S. Congress that only 2000 Timorese had died as a result of the invasion. A few weeks later another U.S. official, Robert Oakley, came up with a revised figure of 10,000, which yet another official source later qualified with the comment that many of these deaths had occurred in the fighting between Fretilin and UDT.[30] Australian official responses were delivered in a similar vein. Their statements appeared to be designed to minimize the seriousness of the situation on the ground in East Timor and, in so doing, to discredit reports that Indonesian troops were responsible for widespread death and destruction. It was a blatant attempt to deflect international criticism of Indonesian actions. Thus, in 1978, when conditions in the territory were being described as nightmarish, the Australian government led by Prime Minister Fraser felt able to take the extraordinary step of recognizing de facto the annexation.[31]

By the end of 1979, however, the devastating consequences of Indonesia•s military annexation of East Timor could no longer be concealed. And so, some four years after the invasion, when Indonesian authorities finally allowed a small number of international aid workers to conduct a survey of the humanitarian needs of the province, the dimensions of the tragedy began to emerge. The human misery they encountered shocked even some officials with experience in Africa and Southeast Asia. Their estimates suggested that in the preceding four years, Timor had lost between a tenth and a third of its population and that 200,000 of the remainder were in appalling conditions in •resettlement camps,Ž which one official, who had previously served in Cambodia, described as among the worst he had seen.[32]

These revelations should have shocked the world into demanding that Indonesia withdraw from the former Portuguese colony, but that did not happen. Not one of the major powers was prepared to press Indonesia to
rn7 Tc [(ec)17.3(ons)]TJ /F6 1 Tf 2.239 0 TD 0.0004 Tc (id)Tj /F3 1 Tf 0.7868

increase in East Timorese demands for self-determination and the right to the choice of independence, and on the other, a strong reaction on the part of the Indonesian military command. These developments were of particular concern to the politically powerful Special Forces Command (Kopassus), which had played a leading role in the illegal seizure of the former Portuguese province, and in the subsequent administration of the territory. In the years of military operations against the Timorese resistance, many thousands of Indonesian troops had lost their lives, and the idea of giving up the territory was therefore anathema to the commanders.

In the event, senior Kopassus generals organized the establishment of a militia force, recruited from among the East Timorese minority who favored continuation of Indonesian rule. The structure of the militia was designed by Kopassus, while arms, military training, and other funding were provided from various government sources. Under these arrangements, each of the 13 districts had a militia unit. These troops were exhorted to wage a campaign of violence and intimidation against East Timorese who favored independence.

Early in 1999, President Habibie announced his readiness to agree to a plebiscite on his offer of autonomy, assuring the Timorese that the right to independence would be accepted should the offer be rejected. The militia campaign of violence was stepped up with TNI officers, who called on the paramilitary forces to attack and kill pro-independence supporters „ in some cases, the militia were exhorted to kill supporters• families. What transpired was, in effect, a conspiracy by senior TNI generals aimed at preventing the loss of East Timor and at sabotaging UN efforts in support of what was regarded internationally as a much-delayed act of self-determination. These commanders may have operated independently, but clearly their operations were known to the Indonesian defense force commander, General Wiranto.

The presence of United Nations Mission in East Timor (UNAMET) after June 1999 hampered this campaign of violence but by the time the plebiscite was held in August of that year dozens of East Timorese had been killed in attacks organized or aided by the Indonesian military, and thousands more had been dislocated by the militia terror. As the plebiscite approached, the military commanders realized that, regardless of the militia operations, they were going to lose the vote. It was then that the military command devised a campaign of killing and destruction, as a punishment of the East Timorese for their disloyalty and their humiliation of the Indonesian military. The operation, designated •Operasi GunturŽ (Operation Thunder), was launched within hours of the announcement of the results of the plebiscite (78.5 percent voted against acceptance of the autonomy). TNI troops, aided by their militia, swarmed over the province

in a campaign of destruction. In less than three weeks 72 percent of all buildings and houses were destroyed or damaged, and hundreds of East Timorese were killed, many of them in massacres at Suai, at Maliana, and in the Oecussi enclave. More than 250,000 people were deported to West Timor. The casualty rate would have been much higher had not hundreds of thousands of Timorese fled to the mountains where they faced severe food shortages „ a crisis, though, that was soon eased by UN and Australian emergency airdrops.

Unlike in 1975, this genocidal crime attracted an immediate global response, with the UN Security Council calling on Indonesia to end the rampage and allow for the implementation of the outcome of the plebiscite. A force composed of a coalition of the willing, led by Australia, was instructed by the UN to enter the territory immediately after its authorization by President Habibie. The nightmare of the previous weeks ended, but East Timor was left in a totally devastated state, and without the basic elements of a community infrastructure. The loss of life from this military operation is still not fully known (some of the bodies were disposed of in the deep-sea channel north of the island), but the author believes that it could exceed 2000.

The following November a UN mission with a comprehensive mandate to prepare the county for independence began its mission, ending a quarter of a century of harsh occupation. Reconstruction of the nation•s destroyed towns and villages began, and after considerable delay the return of those who had been enforced to go to the Indonesian part of the island was negotiated by UN authorities. The UN has been less successful in its quest to bring to justice those ultimately responsible for these atrocities. According to the findings of the International Commission of Enquiry established by CHR Resolution 1999/S-4/1, • ultimately the Indonesian Army was responsible for the intimidation, terror, killings, and other acts of violence experienced by the people of East Timor before and after the popular consultations [plebiscite]Ž A more damning report came from Indonesia•s Human Rights Commission•s special committee, implicating the military, including General Wiranto, as being responsible for these heinous actions.

The obvious answer would have been an ad hoc international tribunal but enthusiasm for such an outcome soon wilted. That was due to several reasons. First, Indonesia came under the leadership of President Wahid, a leading reformer, who insisted that Indonesia would itself establish a tribunal and bring to justice the military commanders responsible for the crimes committed. Second, Wahid encountered great difficulty in implementing his reforms, and one of the casualties was the proposed tribunal. Third, though it finally came into being some months after Megawati Sukarnoputri took office, it was a pale shadow of the intended

tribunal, its terms of reference offering an escape for the generals responsible for setting up the militia. Indeed, its outcome has been a farce. The senior officer, who gave orders at the Suai massacre, has been acquitted. Other killers have not even been charged. More seriously, not one of the conspirators who planned the campaign of terror and killing has even appeared before the court „ except to witness its proceedings! One senior officer was given a brief sentence, but his case is subject to an appeal.

In East Timor itself, a number of militia were captured, and after a considerable delay several were sentenced to lengthy prison terms. Unfortunately, for several months the efforts of UNTAET•s prosecutors suffered from poor direction. Then, under the new management for the prosecutor-general•s office, the process was expedited, but with the office no longer being a direct UN responsibility it encountered political criticism from the leaders of the newly independent state, who were anxious to avoid a confrontation with Jakarta in the first difficult years of independence. The recent indictment of a number of Indonesian military commanders attracted an angry rejection from Jakarta and a cool response from Dili.

Responsibility for the Genocide

There can be little doubt that direct responsibility for the killing in East Timor rests with the Indonesian military forces. From the outset, the invading forces had an opportunity to extend maximum protection to the noncombatant population, in accordance with the Geneva Conventions. These basic rights the invaders almost totally ignored, at huge cost to Indonesia, as it turned out.[38] A humane and disciplined occupation would have moderated the attitudes of the Timorese themselves, and the character of the resistance would have been radically different. As it turned out, the senseless killing and harsh occupation policies in general, especially under General Dading Kalbuardi, stiffened the courage, determination, and endurance of the Falintil, the military arm of Fretilin. Indeed, because the armed resistance was effectively isolated, and was able to attract little international support, their will to resist may have collapsed much earlier had it not been for the harsh nature of Indonesian military rule in East Timor.

From time to time it has been alleged that many of the Timorese casualties were caused by the civil war, or later internecine conflicts. In fact, between 1500 and 2000 were killed in the brief civil war of August 1975;[39] but there is no evidence that tribal conflicts occurred after Indonesia•s invasion. On the other hand, it is known that the resistance forces killed several hundred collaborators over a period of ten years.

It has been argued, especially by some apologists for the Suharto regime, that none of this killing was ordered from Jakarta and that most of

the blame rests with undisciplined or impulsive troops. Following the killings at Santa Cruz cemetery, for example, officials in Washington, Canberra, and certain other Western capitals responded along these lines. Yet, governments cannot be absolved of responsibility so conveniently. Even if these killings were not ordered by the government of Indonesia, it remains the final responsible authority. Moreover, the government can hardly claim ignorance of human rights abuses of this nature, because they were so frequently reported and the focus of regular protests by organizations like Amnesty International and Asia Watch.

The Suharto government's line of defense was especially facile if we consider the Santa Cruz tragedy. The Indonesian decision to set up a commission of investigation was clearly a response to international outrage, and not a spontaneous reaction to the news of the killing. In the immediate aftermath of the massacre, the reaction from Jakarta was defensive, while the military's response was dismissive, even defiant.[40] There can be little doubt that the Indonesian authorities would have reacted differently had foreign observers not been present. It may well be that no order to kill indiscriminately has ever been issued by Jakarta „ even at the highest military levels. Nevertheless, it is inconceivable that the military command had been unaware of the indiscriminate killing and summary executions perpetrated by the military during those 16 years. Yet there is no evidence that, until the Santa Cruz incident, any of the perpetrators were ever placed on trial or disciplined.

It is impossible not to conclude, therefore, that such gross violations of fundamental human rights had been tolerated by the government of Indonesia. Certainly, within the military itself such killings had become acceptable behavior. In Indonesia, military and political leadership tends to merge at the top, and therefore it follows that the top-ranking responsible authorities in Indonesia had long been aware that the behavior of the military forces in East Timor had resulted in the decimation of the indigenous population.

Clearly, genocide, in the form of the destruction of a significant part of a group, can occur as the result of inhumane and irresponsible actions, without a formal intention being identified. Troops can be indoctrinated with hatred in what many might accept as the normal preparation for combat; that is, the strengthening of the soldier's will to fi

On the whole, in its seizure of East Timor, Indonesia was able to exploit the prevailing Cold War context. Indeed, the Suharto regime•s Western friends to an extent encouraged the annexation by accepting as credible Jakarta•s alleged fears of Communist insurgency in the post-Vietnam years. Perhaps the most disturbing aspect of this case is that these crimes against humanity went virtually unchallenged at a time when acts of aggression and oppression were being challenged in almost every other part of the world.

Third, the annexation of East Timor could in fact have been averted, had Indonesia•s Western friends acted responsibly in the 1974…1975 period. The Suharto regime•s moves to annex the colony were carefully devised against the anticipated reactions of countries like Australia and the United States, whose intelligence agencies were familiar with the unfolding conspiracy. It is in this context that the genocide dimensions of the problem are profoundly disturbing. Most Western governments, especially those members of Indonesia•s aid consortium, were aware, more than a decade before the Santa Cruz killing, of the genocidal impact of Jakarta•s military operations in East Timor, that is, in the terms of Article II(c) of the Convention. The failure of the IGGI (Inter-Governmental Group on Indonesia) members, in particular, to take up the issue at a time when the Suharto regime was heavily dependent of Western aid was at best shameful. Ever since the anti-Communist Suharto regime came to power it had been sensitive to the concerns of major Western powers like the United States. Despite this fact, even when the extent of loss of life in East Timor became evident in the early 1980s, the continued acceptability of Indonesia rule of the former Portuguese colony was never seriously questioned.

Fourth, although the Timor case was for more than two decades before the United Nations, the problem was not effectively addressed until after the fall of President Suharto, the collapse of his regime brought about by causes unrelated to the Timor problem. East Timor is arguably the only remnant of the once-extensive European empires to have been annexed by its neighbor, with the virtual collusion of many of those nations who today regard themselves as being at the forefront of the international movement to promote universal respect for human rights, including the right to self-determination.

The Timor Case as a Contributor to Genocide Studies

The case for East Timor is significant one, particularly as a definitive case of genocide within the terms of Article II of the UN Convention on the Prevention and Punishment of the Crime of Genocide. Although the question of the denial of the right to self-determination has now been resolved, the commission of the serious crimes committed have yet to be appropriately dealt with by the international community. The violation

against the people of East Timor has some classical characteristics, in the sense that it resulted from an act of aggression by the large power next door. However, it occurred within a contemporary historical framework; that is, an extensive body of human rights principles and laws had set down protective parameters for the international community. It also occurred at a time when acts of aggression of this kind were no longer tolerated by the UN system, as the cases of the Falklands (1982) and Kuwait (1990) dramatically demonstrated.

On the other hand, the lesson of East Timor is that some things have not changed, despite the growing intolerance of the international community toward gross human rights violations involving mass killing. The East Timorese suffered from their country•s remoteness, from its lack of economic and strategic importance, and conversely, from the perceived importance of the violator, today the world•s largest Islamic nation, which forms a strategically and economically important division between the Indian and Pacific Oceans. However, one of the most disturbing aspects of the case is that the perpetrators of those atocities were in practice shielded from international scrutiny by countries like Australia and the United States, which pride themselves on their commitment to human rights.

Perhaps the most disturbing aspect of the experience of East Timor is that it highlights just how difficult it is to invoke the Genocide Convention, even in circumstances where the evidence that grave violations have

defense counsel informed the court that he was having difficulty in persuading witnesses to appear on behalf of the accused. The situation changed after the UN intervention in 1999, but the massive upheaval caused by the TNI•s final destructive campaign of revenge, and UN and Timorese rehabilitation priorities, led to considerable delay in addressing the atrocities perpetrated during the 24 years of Indonesian occupation. Only at the time of writing (late 2003) are these incidents being investigated.

As for the TNI perpetrators, although several of the commanders have been brought before an Indonesian tribunal in response to internal pressures, most have been acquitted. Only one officer received a light sentence, and he remains free while the case is the subject of appeal. The UN-led prosecutor-general•s office in East Timor has issued a number of indictments against Indonesian officers, as well as militia members, but so far these have been ignored by the government of Indonesia. It remains a matter of grave concern that most of the indicted commanders have been rewarded with promotions, with several of them subsequently occupying responsible operations roles in TNI military actions in West Papua and Aceh.

The following are selections of accounts that were brought to the direct attention of the author in the aftermath of the invasion. Although much new material now being assembled is available, these testimonies are typical in character.

Account 1

The Invasion of Dili. Etelvina Correia was interviewed by the author some months after the invasion. She was chosen because of her clear and unhesitating account, and because she was one of the few witnesses at the scene of the killing. Following is an abbreviated version of her account.

The attack on Dili began at about 4 A.M. on December 7. Etelvina Correia was in the church, which is located in the waterfront area. Some time later paratroops began to land (some of them dropped into the water). At 7 A.M. she saw paratroops shoot a woman in the parish garage and later three women in front of the church, although their hands were raised. The Indonesian soldiers then ordered all of the people in the vicinity of the church to go inside. Next day, Etelvina and the others were ordered by troops to go to the wharf area. There 20 women „ Chinese and Timorese „ were taken out in front. Some of them had children who were weeping. The soldiers tore the children from the women who were then shot one by one, with the crowd being ordered to count after each execution. At 2 P.M. on the same day, 59 men, including Chinese and Timorese, were taken to the wharf and executed in the same way. Again the witnesses were ordered at gunpoint to count. They were told that these

killings were in reprisal for the killing of a paratrooper near the Toko Lay shop in Dili.

Account 2

The following consists of extracts from a letter written in November 1977 by a Catholic priest in East Timor and sent to two Dominican nuns, Sister Natalia Granada Moreira and Sister Maria Auxiliadora Hernandez. Its importance is that it was written during what was probably the worst period following the invasion. At the time, East Timor was secretly closed off to the outside world, and communications even to other parts of Indonesia were heavily censored. This letter was smuggled out by a person who carried it to Jakarta.

The War. It continues with the same fury as it had started. Fretilin continues the struggle, in spite of famine, lack of clothing, death, and a crisis in understanding and objectives which has surfaced lately. The invaders have intensified their attacks in the three classic ways „ from land, sea and air.

Between 7 and 31 December 1975, and up to February 1976, in Dili harbour there were at anchor up to 23 warships which vomited intense fire towards Dili 24 hours a day. Daily eight to twelve helicopters and four bombers flew reconnaissance and bombing runs near Dili. Numerous tanks and armoured vehicles roamed about the territory. The Indonesian armed forces in one

engaged in fighting usually cited as being over 40,000 must now be more than 50,000 *f* . The increase in military operations has once more turned Timor into a place of arms and warfare. At the present time, with the beginning of the rainy season, land operations should have diminished but the constant air raids and the launching of incendiary bombs which have been systematically punishing the rural populations continue.

Account 4

Extract from a Letter from Timor also in 1977 continuous, increasingly violent war rages in Timor. The group of villages in which I lived have been completely destroyed. There is not one so-called house there. I myself am in Dili and I have gone many days without eating. These are the effects of war. But there are people who are much worse off than I. I have been sick several times and at death•s door for want of medication. The cost of living in Dili is very high and the salaries are very low. One sees no one else but Indonesian soldiers and Chinese on the streets of Dili. There are very few Timorese for the majority are either in the forest, dead or in jail. The luck of Timor is to be born in tears, to live in tears and to die in tears. It would, perhaps, be more appropriate to say that one does not cry for one has no more tears to shed, for Timor is no longer Timor: it is nothing but an oppressed worm *f* .

Account 5

The following account was conducted by Michele Turner, a well-known Australian oral historian. The subject is a former Timorese guerilla fighter, named Laurenco, who spent much of the early years of the occupation in the eastern sector of the island. He describes conditions in a mountain area, where many Timorese lost their lives, largely through air attacks, and the consequences of famine. (Note Both Accounts 5 and 6 are extracts from Michele Turner•s Telling: East Timor Personal Testimonies, 1942…1992 (Sydney, Australia: University of New South Wales, 1992). Reprinted with permission.)

Our section in the east was the last to be attacked. In 1978 they started to come against us. At first we didn•t resist, just watched the enemy, let them feel confident. Matebian Mountain is a big area and there were 160,000 of us, fighters and civilians, divided into small groups.

On 17 October 1978 some Indonesians got right to the bottom of Matebian Mountain and that•s when we started to fight back. For those first two months, October and November, we were very successful and about 3000 Indonesians died. Then they got angry and started to come close and started to bomb us from the air. They bombed twice a day, in the

morning and in the afternoon with four black planes. Their name I know now is Broncos, but we called them scorpions because they had a tail that curves up at the back like that insect. Their bombs left a big hole about two metres deep. Then they got new supersonic planes. Our people were very frightened of those because you didn•t ever hear they were there until they were gone. Those supersonics would zoom along the valley so fast we couldn•t shoot them.

The bombing became constant, in rotation. Three supersonics came to bomb for about forty-five minutes and then went back to reload. Half an hour later the black scorpions came, and this could go on all day. In Matebian there are a lot of caves and we hid there and only moved at night.

We knew by radio from the south zone that the Indonesi 0 TD 0 Tc0 Tr

2. In June 1974, in contrast to most of his colleagues, who studiously avoided uttering the word "independence", Foreign Minister Adam Malik generously assured the Timorese of Indonesia's support for East Timor's independence. In a letter to Jose Ramos Horta, a Fretilin leader, Malik wrote, inter alia: "The independence of every country is the right of every nation, with no exception for the people in Timor".
3. In 1957, for example, Indonesia told the UN First Committee, in a reference to Timor: "Indonesia has no claim to any territories which had not been part of the former Netherlands East Indies. No one should suggest otherwise or advance dangerous theories in that respect".
4. Within weeks of Pearl Harbor, Australian and some Dutch forces, ignoring the protests of the Portuguese „ at that time neutral „ had landed in East Timor, bringing in large Japanese forces. The Timorese gave the Australians extraordinary support until their withdrawal a year later. The Japanese then imposed a harsh occupation on the local population, which cost perhaps as many as 70,000 Timorese lives.
5. Under a special agreement (UKUSA) this intelligence surveillance was shared with the United States and formed the basis of key DIA (Defense Intelligence Agency) briefings prepared for the administration in Washington.
6. The Australian relationship was not as important to Indonesia as were its links with the United States, Japan, or the Netherlands, but a firm Australian stand on the decolonization rights of the Timorese would certainly have influenced the policies of the other states and reinforced Suharto's misgivings about military intervention.
7. Named after the dragon, or giant lizard on the near-by island of Alor.
8. Frente Revolutionaria de Timor-Leste Independente „ the Revolutionary Front for an Independent East Timor.
9. Uniao Democratade Timor „ the Timorese Democratic Union.
10. Based on remarks made to the writer by Major Metello, a senior representative of the Armed Forces Movement.
11. East Timor is predominantly Roman Catholic.
12. Based on talks in 1975 with two of those present at the meeting, Mousinho and Martins.
13. An example of the provocative disinformation role of Bakin at this point was the deliberate circulating of a story by Operasi Komodo agents, that a number of Vietnamese officers had been smuggled in to Timor and were training a Fretilin military force.
14. In fact, at the time, most Fretilin leaders were out of the county, so it was an unlikely eventuality.
15. The humanitarian consequences of this civil war were assessed by the International Red Cross and an Australian Council for Overseas Activ

Bangladesh

CHAPTER 9
Genocide in Bangladesh

ROUNAQ JAHAN

Introduction

The birth of Bangladesh in 1971 was a unique phenomenon in that it was the first nation-state to emerge after waging a successful liberation war against a postcolonial state. The nine-month-long liberation war in Bangladesh drew world attention because of the genocide committed by Pakistan, which resulted in the murder of approximately 3 million people and the rape of nearly a quarter-million girls and women. Ten million Bengalis reportedly took refuge in India to avoid the massacre of the Pakistan army, and thirty million people were displaced within the country (Loshak, 1971; Mascarenhas, 1971; Payne, 1973; Yoob and Subrahmanyan, 1972; O'Donnell, 1984).

Written three decades after the genocide, this chapter addresses the following: the historical forces that led to the genocide; the nature of the genocide (why, how, and who committed the genocide); the world response; the long-range impact of the genocide on the victims; the way the genocide is remembered today; and some lessons that can be drawn from the 1971 Bangladesh genocide.

Background to the Genocide

Though the liberation war in Bangladesh lasted only nine months, the nationalist movement that preceded the war spanned the previous two

decades. Indeed, the seeds of the Bangladesh nationalist movement were planted very soon after the creation of Pakistan in 1947.

When India was partitioned on the basis of religion and the new state of Pakistan was established comprising the Muslim-majority areas of India, Bengali Muslims voluntarily became a part of Pakistan. But very soon it became apparent to the Bengali Muslims that e56 T[3/E6995 T12.3546e 0 Tw (c

March 1, 1971, General Yahya postponed indefinitely the scheduled March 3 session of parliament. This, in turn, threw the country into a constitutional crisis. The Awami League responded by launching an unprecedented nonviolent, noncooperation movement, which resulted in the entire administration of then East Pakistan coming to a virtual standstill. Even the Bengali civil and military officials complied with the noncooperation movement. The movement demonstrated that the Bengali nationalists had total allegiance and support of the Bengali population.

The Yahya regime initiated political negotiations with the Bengali nationalists but at the same time flew thousands of armed forces in from West to East Pakistan, thus consolidating preparations for a military action. On March 25, 1971, General Yahya abruptly broke off the negotiations and unleashed a massive armed strike against the population of Dhaka, the capital city. In two days of uninterrupted military operations, hundreds of ordinary citizens were killed, houses and property were destroyed, and the leader of the Awami League, Sheikh Mujibur Rahman, was arrested. The army also launched armed attacks in Chittagong, Comilla, Khulna, and other garrison cities. Simon Dring, a reporter with the Daily Telegraph London, and Michel Laurent, an Associated Press photographer, escaped the Pakistani dragnet and roamed Dhaka and the countryside. On March 28 they reported that the loss of life had reached 15,000 in the countyside. On the Dhaka University campus, 17 professors and some 200 students were killed in cold blood (Loshak, 1971, pp. 88…126).

The news of the Dhaka massacre immediately spread to the rest of the country. Instead of cowing the unarmed Bengalis into submission, which was ostensibly the intention of the Pakistani army in initiating the brutal killings, it only inflamed nationalist sentiments. Within 24 hours of the armed crackdown in Dhaka, on March 26, 1971, the independence of Bangladesh was declared from the city of Chittagong. It was announced over the radio, which was controlled by the Bengali nationalists, on the behalf of the Awami League and its leader, Rahman. The upshot of this is that a new nation was born out of what was a premeditated genocide (Jahan, 1972; Yoob and Subhrahmanyan, 1972).

Bangladesh Genocide 1971

The genocide in Bangladesh, which started with the Pakistani military operation against unarmed citizens on the night of March 25, continued unabated for nearly nine months until the Bengali nationalists, with the help of the Indian army, succeeded in liberating the country from Pakistani occupation forces on December 16, 1971.

The atrocities committed by the Pakistan army were widely reported by the international press during 1971 (Loshak, 1971; Mascarenhas, 1971; Schanberg, 1971; Jenkins et al., 1971; Coggin et al., 1971).

From the eyewitness accounts documented during and immediately after the genocide in 1971 and 1972, as well as those published over the last 20 years, it is possible to analyze the major features of the Bangladesh genocide „ how and why it was committed „ as well as those who were involved (both the perpetrators and the victims).

Why Was the Genocide Committed?

The genocide in Bangladesh caught the outside observers as well as the Bengali nationalists by surprise. After all, the Bengali nationalists were not involved in any armed struggle prior to March 25, 1971. They were essentially waging a peaceful constitutional movement for

the liberation war was, however, amateurish and uncoordinated and only lasted approximately six weeks. By the middle of May, the Pakistani army was successful in bringing the cities and towns under their control, though the villages remained largely "liberated" areas.

In occupying one city after another, the Pakistani army used the superiority of its fire and air power to its advantage. These operations also involved massive killings of civilians and wanton lootings and destruction of property. The leadership of the resistance generally left the scene prior to the Pakistani army's arrival. They took refuge either in India or in the villages. But, in any case, the Pakistani army engaged in killings and burnings in order to terrorize the population. Again, Awami Leaguers, students and intellectuals, civilian and army officers, and Hindus were selected as targets of attack (Malik, 1972). The army's campaign against the cities and towns not only led to massive civilian casualties, it also resulted in a large-scale dislocation of people. In fact, nearly 10 million people „ Hindus as well as Muslims „ migrated to India, and approximately 30 million people from the cities took refuge in the villages. Government offices, educational institutions, and factories were virtually closed.

The second phase of the liberation war (from mid-May to September) was a period of long-term planning for both the Bengali nationalists and the Pakistani government. The Bengali nationalists established a government-in-exile and undertook external publicity campaigns in support of their cause. They also recruited nearly 100,000 young men as freedom fighters who underwent military training and undertook guerrilla operations inside Bangladesh.

The Pakistan army essentially dug in their own strongholds during this period with periodic operations to rural areas to punish the villagers for harboring freedom fighters. The army also engaged in large-scale looting and raping of girls and women.

In fact, systematic and organized rape was the special weapon of war used by the Pakistan army during the second phase of the liberation struggle. While during the first phase, young able-bodied males were targeted for death, during the second phase, girls and women became the special targets of Pakistani aggression. During army operations, girls and women were raped in front of close family members in order to terrorize and inflict racial slander. Girls and women were also abducted and repeatedly raped and gang-raped in special camps run by the army near army barracks. Many of the rape victims either were killed or committed suicide. Altogether, it is estimated that approximately 200,000 girls and women were raped during the 1971 genocide (Brownmiller, 1981). (An eyewitness account of the mass rape camps organized by the Pakistani army is included in this chapter.)

All through the liberation war, able-bodied young men were suspected of being actual or potential freedom fighters. Thousands were arrested, tortured, and killed. Eventually, cities and towns became bereft of young males who either took refuge in India or joined the liberation war.

During the second phase, another group of Bengali men in the rural areas (those who were coerced or bribed to collaborate with the Pakistanis) fell victim to the attacks of Bengali freedom fighters.

The third phase of the liberation struggle (from October till mid-December) saw intensified guerrilla action and finally a brief conventional war between Pakistan and the combined Indian and Bangladeshi forces, which ended with the surrender of the Pakistani army on December 16, 1971 (Palit, 1972; Ayoob and Subrahmanyan, 1972). As guerrilla action increased, the Pakistani army also intensified its search-and-des69812 04si

The World•s Response to the Genocide

World response to the genocide can be analyzed at dual levels „ official and nonofficial. Prior to the discussion of the latter, it first must be noted that Pakistan immediately launched a propaganda campaign to deny the existence of genocide (Government of Pakistan, 1971; Bhutto, 1971).

At the official level, world response was determined by geopolitical interests and major power alignments. Officially, India was sympathetic and supportive of the Bangladesh cause from the beginning. The USSR, India•s major superpower ally at the time, supported the Indian-backed cause. As a result of the USSR•s support, all the Eastern Bloc countries naturally were also supportive of Bangladesh (Jackson, 1975).

Pakistan•s allies were predictably opposed to Bangladesh. Islamic countries were generally supportive of Pakistan. So was China. The official policy of the United States was to •tilt in favor of Pakistan Ž because Pakistan was used as an intermediary to open the door to China (Jackson, 1975).

At the nonofficial level, however, there was a great outpouring of sympathy for the Bangladesh cause worldwide because of the genocide. The Western media „ particularly the United States, British, French, and Australian „ kept Bangladesh on the global agenda all through 1971. Well-known Western artists and intellectuals also came out in support of Bangladesh. George Harrison, the former Beatle, and Ravi Shankar, master of the sitar, held a Bangladesh concert. André Malraux, the noted French author, volunteered to go and fight with the Bengali freedom fighters. In the United States, citizen groups and individuals lobbied Congress successfully to halt military aid to Pakistan. Despite the Nixon administration•s official support of the Pakistani government, influential senators and congressmen (such as Frank Church and Edward Kennedy) spoke out strongly against the genocide. Members of parliament in the United Kingdom and other Western countries were also highly critical of the Bangladesh genocide.

Both officially and unofficially, India played a critical role in mobilizing support for Bangladesh. The genocide and the resultant influx of 10 million refugees in West Bengal and neighboring states created spontaneous unofficial sympathy. The press, political parties, and voluntary organizations in India pressed Indian Prime Minister Indira Gandhi to immediately intervene in Bangladesh when the Pakistani army cracked down in March 1971. The Indian government initially refused to intervene but gave moral and financial support to the Bangladesh government-in-exile as well as the freedom fighters. It also sponsored a systematic international campaign in favor of Bangladesh. And finally, in December 1971, when the ground was well prepared, Bangladesh was liberated as a result of direct Indian army intervention (Jackson, 1975).

The world•s sympathy for the Bangladesh people in the aftermath of the 1971 genocide was also demonstrated by the tremendous relief and rehabilitation efforts mounted by the United Nations and private voluntary organizations in Bangladesh. Even before the liberation of Bangladesh, large-scale relief efforts were undertaken by the world community to feed the refugees in the India-based camps. And during the first two years of the new nation•s existence, as many as 72 foreign relief groups, including UN agencies, contributed to what observers considered the largest single and most successful emergency relief endeavor of our times‚ (O•Donnell, 1984, p. 112). More specifically, near access

overthrow of the Awami League regime, many of the collaborators who had been opposed to the Awami League joined the political parties floated by the two military leaders, Ziaur Rahman (1975…1981) and Ershad (1982…1990). The two military leaders tilted the country toward Islamic ideology, allowed religious-based parties to function, and appointed a few well-known collaborators to their cabinet. The gradual ascendance of the Islamic forces in the country became even more evident when, after the 1991 election, the Bangladesh Nationalist Party (BNP) succeeded in forming the government with the support of the fundamentalist party, Jamaat-e-Islami.

The control of state power by the collaborators of the 1971 genocide finally enraged the victims of genocide to take direct political action. They launched a mass movement to eliminate the "Killers and Collaborators of 1971." A citizens' committee was convened in 1991. It was headed by Jahanara Imam, a well-known author whose son was killed by the Pakistani army in 1971. It demanded a trial of Golam Azam, the head of the Jamaat-e-Islami party for complicity in the 1971 killings. The nonpartisan civic organization galvanized the support of the intellectuals and youth. The major opposition party, the Awami League, also threw in its support. The citizens' committee organized major nonviolent protests, nationwide strikes were organized, and a public trial was held where children, wives, and other relatives of victims of genocide gave testimony against the Jamaat-e-Islami party and Azam. The genocide and the collaborators' issue, which had gradually been side-stepped since 1975, were also brought back to the center stage of the political arena.

Lessons from this Genocide

What lessons can be drawn from the 1971 Bangladesh genocide? First, once a state adopts a systematic policy of genocide against any nationality group, the nationality group, threatened with genocide, will feel stronger in the legitimacy of its claim to form its own separate state.

Second, once a policy of genocide is initiated, it is difficult to settle conflict through peaceful negotiations. The Bengalis gave up the path of constitutional struggle and political negotiations and chose the course of armed struggle after the Pakistani intention of killing several million people to arrive at a "Final Solution" became evident to the Bengalis.

Third, genocide creates a deep trauma in the national psyche. It creates fear, suspicion, and mistrust. The Bengalis are suspicious of all foreign powers including India, which helped to liberate the country. Resentment against the Indian army emerged in the weeks following the liberation of the country, and the Indian army was withdrawn within 90 days. There is not only constant fear of foreign aggression, there is also distrust about foreign agents and collaborators. The deep animosity between the freedom

fighters and collaborators makes national consensus-building efforts almost impossible. Creating a civil society in Bangladesh continues to be difficult since the issue of genocide divides the nation so deeply.

Postscript (Spring 2002)

The issues of genocide and collaboration have continued to play an important role in Bangladesh politics. After the 1991 election, Jamaat-e-Islami (a fundamentalist party) gained legitimacy and strength, as the Bangladesh Nationalist Party was able to form the government with Jamaat•s support. During the 1996 election campaign, the Awami League pursued a two-pronged strategy. Jamaat•s ability to tilt the election outcome was not lost on the Awami League. Therefore, on the one hand, it kept Jamaat away from forming an electoral alliance with the BNP; on the a

through all the floors of the dormitory. During this time I was not able to see them as I left the restroom by climbing up the open window and took shelter on the sunshed of the third floor. But I could hear the cracking sounds of bullets, the students pleading for mercy and the sound of the soldiers rummaging and throwing things about in search of valuables. The soldiers did not see me on the sunshed.

f After they left, I again took refuge in the washroom. I peeked through the window and saw that the other students• dormitory, Salimullah Hall, was on fire. The northern and the eastern parts of the city were on fire too as the north and east horizon had turned red. The whole night, the Pakistani soldiers continued their massacre and destruction *f*. Finally I heard the call for the morning prayer.

f The curfew was announced at dawn and I thought that this merciless killing would stop. But it continued. The soldiers started killing those who had escaped their notice during the night before.

f It was morning and I heard the voices of some students. I came out of the washroom, and saw that the students were carrying a body downstairs while soldiers with machine guns were accompanying them. It was the dead body of Priyanath. I was ordered to help the students and I complied. We carried bodies from the dormitory rooms and piled them up in the field outside. There were a few of us there „ students, gardeners, two sons of the gatekeeper and the rest were janitors. The janitors requested the Pakistanis to let them go since they were not Bengalis. After a while the army separated the janitors from us.

f All the time the soldiers were cursing and swearing at us. The soldiers said, •We will see how you get free Bangladesh! Why don•t you shout •Joy Bangla [Victory to Bengal]!•Ž The soldiers also kicked us around. After we had finished carrying the bodies, we were divided into groups. They then took my group to one of the university quarters and searched almost every room on the fourth floor and looted the valuables. Downstairs we saw dead bodies piled up, obviously victims from the night before. They also brought down the flag of Bangladesh.

f After we came back, we were again ordered to carry the dead bodies to the Shahid Minar. The soldiers had already piled up the bodies of their victims and we added other bodies to the piles. If we felt tired and slowed down, the soldiers threatened to kill us.

f As my companion and I were carrying the body of Sunil (our dormitory guard), we heard screams in female voices. We found that the women from the nearby slums were screaming as the soldiers were shooting at the janitors (the husbands of the women). I realized that our turn would come too as the Pakistanis started lining up those students who were before us, and were firing at them. My companion and I barely carried the dead body of Sunil toward a pile where I saw the dead body of Dr. Dev [professor of

philosophy]. I cannot explain why I did what I did next. Maybe from pure fatigue or maybe from a desperate hope to survive!

I lay down beside the dead body of Dr. Dev while still holding onto the corpse of Sunil. I kept waiting for the soldiers to shoot me. I even thought that I had died. After a long time, I heard women and children crying. I opened my eyes and saw that the army had left and the dead bodies were still lying about and women were crying. Some of the people were still alive but wounded. All I wanted to do was to get away from the field and survive.

I crawled towards the slums. First I went to the house of the electrician. I asked for water but when I asked for shelter, his wife started crying aloud and I then left and took refuge in a restroom *f*. Suddenly I heard the voice of Idu who used to sell old books. He said, •Don•t be afraid. I heard you are alive. I shall escort you to safety.Ž I went to old Dhaka city. Then I961 /F6 1

at the University of Engineering in Dacca. I found him to be a quiet, scholarly, soft-spoken, and surprisingly young man with a charming wife. He is normally engrossed in his teaching and students. But he happened to be the proud possessor of a video tape recorder which he bought in Japan on his way back from a year at an American university. He is perhaps the only man alive who saw the massacre on the lawns of Dacca University on the first day of the Pakistani army crack-down.

It was fascinating to sit down in Professor Nurul Ullah's sitting room and see the film twice with him, the second time after he had shown me the bedroom window at the back of his flat which overlooked both the street along which the soldiers drove to the university and the university campus. When he realized what was happening, he slipped his microphone outside [through] the window to record the sounds of firing. The film was shot from a long distance and under impossible conditions. Professor Nurul Ullah's description of how he shot the film was as dramatic and stirring as the film itself:

> • On March 25, 1971, the day of the Pakistani crack-down, although I knew nothing about it at the time, my wife and I had just had breakfast and I was looking out of my back windows in the professors' block of flats in which I and my colleagues from the Engineering University live with our families. Our back windows overlook a street across which are the grounds of Jagannath Hall, one of the most famous halls of Dacca University. I saw an unusual sight, soldiers driving past my flat and going along the street which overlooks it, towards the entrance to the University. As curfew was on, they made announcements on loudspeakers from a jeep that people coming out on the streets would be shot. After a few minutes, I saw some people carrying out what were obviously dead bodies from Jagannath Hall. I immediately took out my loaded video tape recorder and decided to shoot a film through the glass of the window. It was not an ideal way to do it, but I was not sure what it was all about, and what with the curfew and all the tension, we were all being very cautious. As I started shooting the film, the people carrying out the dead bodies laid them down on the grass under the supervision of Pakistani soldiers who are distinguishable in the film, because of their dark clothes, the weapons they are carrying and the way they are strutting about contrasted with the civilians in lighter clothes who are equally obviously drooping with fright.
>
> • As soon as firing started, I carefully opened the bedroom window wide enough for me to slip my small microphone just outside the

window so that I could record the sound aswell. But it was not very satisfactorily done, asit was very risky. My wife now tells me that she warned me at the time: •Are you mad, do you want to get shot too? Oneflash from your camera and they will kill us too.• But I don•t remember her telling me, I musthavebeen very absorbed in my shooting, and she says I took no notice of what she said.

• It so happened that afew days earlier, from the samewindow I had shot somefootage of student demonstrators on their way to the university. I little thought it would end this way.

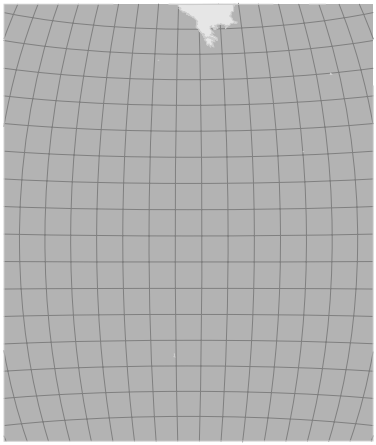
•Anyway, this macabre procession of students carrying outbodies and laying them down on the ground was repeated until we realized with horror that the same studentswere themselvesbeing lined up to be shot. After recording this dreadful sight on my video tape recorder, I shut it off thinking it was all over „ only to realize that afresh batch of university people were again carrying out bo i

looked at the mud on his legs and hands and let him go. Khan Sahib, the Sheikh•s uncle, had a boy servant called Ershad. They asked me about him. I said he was a servant. But a Razakar maulvi, who had come with them from another village, said he was the Sheikh•s relative, which was a lie. The boy Ershad was taken to the line up. He asked for water but it was refused.

Another young boy had come from Dacca, where he was employed in a mill, to enquire about his father. He produced his identity card, but they shot him all the same. They shot Ershad right in front of his mother. Ershad moved a little after falling down so they shot him again. Finally, the boy who had carried the boxes to the launch was shot. With the three shot earlier, a total of six innocent boys were shot by the Pakistani army without any provocation. They were all good-looking and therefore suspected to be relatives of the Sheikh.

After this, the Sheikh•s father and mother were brought out of the house. Amma was almost fainting. And the house was set on fire and burnt down in front of our eyes until all that remained was the frame of the doorway which you can still see. Antonissa, the lady with the blood stained clothes of her son, is the mother of Tomb Yad Ali who was shot. They did not allow her to remove her son•s body for burial, because they wanted the bodies to be exposed to public view to terrorize the villagers. They also shot Mithu, the 10-year-old son of this wid r

Jackson, Robert (1975). South Asia Crisis: India, Pakistan and Bangladesh. London: Chatto and Windus.
Jahan, Rounaq (1972). Pakistan: Failure in National Integration. New York: Columbia University Press.
Jahan, Rounaq (1973a). "Elite in Crisis: The Failure of Mujib-Yahya-Bhutto Negotations." Orbis, Summer, 17(21): 575-597.
Jahan, Rounaq (1973b). "Women in Bangladesh." pp. 5–30. In Ruby Rohrlich-Leavitt (Ed.) Women Cross Culturally: Change and Challenge. The Hague: Mouton Publishers.
Jahan, Rounaq (1980). "Reflections on the National Liberation Movement." pp. 34–64. In Rounaq Jahan (Ed.) Bangladesh Politics: Problems and Issues. Dhaka: University Press.
Jenkins, Loren, Clifton, Tony, and Steele, Richard (1971). "Bengal: The Murder of a People." Newsweek, August 2 pp. 26–30.
Khan, Ayoob (1967). Friends not Masters. London: Oxford University Press.
Loshak, David (1971). Pakistan Crisis. New York: McGraw-Hill.
Malik, Amita (1972). The Year of the Vulture. New Delhi: Orient Longman.
Marshall, Charles B. (1959). "Reflections on a Revolution in Pakistan." Foreign Affairs, 37(2): 247–56.
Mascarenhas, Anthony (1971). The Rape of Bangladesh. New Delhi: Vikas Publication.
O'Donnell, Charles Peter (1984). Bangladesh. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.
Palit, Major-General D. K. Palit (1972). The Lightening Campaign: Indo-Pakistan War. New York: Compton Press.
Payne, Robert P. (1973). Massacre. New York: Macmillan.
Rahman, Anisur (1968). East and West Pakistan: A Problem in the Political Economy of Regional Planning. Cambridge, MA: Center for International Affairs, Harvard University.
Sayeed, Sk. B. (1967). The Political System of Pakistan. Boston: Houghton Mifflin.
Sayeed, Sk. B. (1968). Pakistan: The Formative Phase. London: Oxford University Press.
Schanberg, Sidney (October 1971). "Pakistan Divided." Foreign Affairs, 50(1) 125–35.
(n.a.) (1971). "Pakistan's Agony." Time, August 9 pp. 24–29.
Umar, Badruddin (1966). Sampradaikata [Communalism]. Dhaka: Janamiari Publications.
Umar, Badruddin (1967). Sanskiti Sanka [Crisis in Culture]. Dhaka: Granthana.
Umar, Badruddin (1969). Sanskritite Sampradaikata [Communalism in Culture]. Dhaka: Granthana.



Burundi

common in terms of size, social structure, traditional political systems, and ethnic configurations. Minute in size, deeply stratified, held together by popular allegiance to monarchical symbols, they also share strikingly similar ethnic maps. In each state the socially dominant ethnic minority, the Tutsi, held sway over the Hutu majority, representing about 80 percent of the total population (estimated at roughly 7 million in each state in 1994).

These commonalities can be easily overdrawn, however, and unless the contrasting elements are taken into account, the essential difference between the two genocides „ the victimization of Hutu in one case and of Tutsi in the other „ will remain obscure. Reduced to its simplest expression, where Burundi differed from Rwanda most markedly is in the greater complexity of its social hierarchies. Unlike Rwanda, where power was highly centralized and the line of cleavage between Hutu and Tutsi straightforward, in Burundi the real holders of power were a distinct category, namely the princes of the blood (ganwa), with the king (mwami) reduced to a primus inter pares.

Furthermore, the Tutsi were themselves divided into two groups, the lowly Tutsi-Hima, concentrated in the south of the country, and the more prestigious and status-conscious Tutsi-Banyaruguru, found predominantly in the north „ again, the kingship was never identified with Tutsi rule to the extent that it was in Rwanda. Because of its greater pluralism and social complexity, Burundi was spared the agonies of a Hutu revolution before the advent of independence. Unlike what happened in Rwanda, where a revolutionary conflict pitted Hutu versus Tutsi, in Burundi preindependence politics revolved around princely factions, each drawing support from a mixed following of Hutu and Tutsi. The country crossed the threshold of independence not as a Hutu-dominated republic but as a constitutional monarchy, with a government consisting of a mixed assemblage of ganwa, Tutsi, and Hutu elements (Lemarchand, 1970).

Not until after independence (1962), and largely as a consequence of the demonstration effect of the Rwanda revolution, did a significant hardening of Hutu…Tutsi tensions emerge on the political horizon. The proclamation of a Hutu republic in Rwanda served as a powerful source of inspiration for many aspiring Hutu politicians; indeed, for many, Rwanda became the model polity that helped shape their vision of the future. For most Tutsi, on the other hand, republican Rwanda evoked a nightmarish scenario, to be avoided at all cost. With tens of thousands of Tutsi asylum seekers from Rwanda entering the country, each with tales of horror to tell, the message was driven home loud and clear.

A turning point in the escalation of the Hutu…Tutsi conflict came in May 1965, with the first postindependence elections to the national assembly, in which Hutu candidates scored a landslide victory, capturing 23 seats out of a total of 33. Their victory quickly proved illusory. Instead of

appointing a Hutu asprime minister, the king turned to aprincely figure and longtime protege of the Court (Leopold Bihumugani). Robbed of their victory at the polls, the Hutu elitesreacted angrily to what they perceived as an intolerable interference. On October 18, 1965, Hutu angerbroke outin an abortive coup directed at the king•spalace,followed by sporadic attacks against Tutsi elementsin the interior. Panic-stricken, the king fled the country, never to return. In reprisal, Tutsi units of the army and gendarmerie arrested and shot 86leading Hutu politicians and army officers. After the discovery of an alleged Hutu plot in 1969, 70 Hutupersonalities, civilian and military, were arrested on the grounds of conspiring against the state; 25were meted out adeath sentence, ofh19 of themwere immediately executed.

In the minds of thosefew Hutu politicianswho survived the repr

uprising, the aim was toprovoke the Hutuinto staging an uprising so as to justify a devastating repression and cleanse the county once and for all of the Hutu peril. There is, in fact, little evidence of any such provocation; nor is it at all clear that any such plan existed prior to the Hutu uprising. What is beyond question, however, is that Simbananiye used the •clear and present dangerŽ posed by the Hutu insurgency as a pretext to go far beyond the immediate exigency of restoring peace and order. As the social profile of the victims clearly shows, the ultimate objective was to systematically kill all educated Hutu elements, including civil servants, university students, and schoolchildren and, in so doing, eliminate for the foreseeable future any serious threat of Hutu rebellion. It is in this sense that one can indeed speak of a •Simbananiye planŽ (Lemarchand, 1995).

The systematic targeting of educated Hutu elements is a point on which most observers agree. As Jeremy Greenland (1976) reported, •The government radio broadcasts encouraged the population to •hunt down the python in the grass,• an order which was interpreted by Tutsi in the interior as license to exterminate all educated Hutu, down to the level of secondary, and, in some cases, even primary schoolchildren. Army units commandeered merchants •lorries and mission vehicles, and drove up to schools removing whole batches of children at a time. Tutsi pupils prepared lists of their Hutu classmates to make identification by officials more straightforwardŽ (p. 120). In Bujumbura, Gitega, and Ngozi, all •cadresŽ of Hutu origins „ not only local civil servants but chauffeurs, clerks, and semi-skilled workers „ were rounded up, taken to the nearest jail, and either shot or beaten to death with rifle butts and clubs. In Bujumbura alone, an estimated 4000 Hutu were loaded up on trucks and taken to their graves.

Some of the most gruesome scenes took place on the premises of the university in Bujumbura, and in secondary and technical schools. Scores of Hutu students were physically assaulted by their Tutsi classmates, and many beaten to death. In a scenario that would repeat itself again and again, groups of soldiers and members of the Uprona youth wing, the so-called Jeunesses Révolutionnaires Rwagasore (JRR), would suddenly appear in classrooms, call the Hutu students by name and take them away. Few ever returned. Approximately one third (120) of the Hutu students enrolled at the university disappeared in such circumstances. The few Tutsi who urged restraint did so at their own peril. As Michael Hoyt (1972), then acting Deputy Chief of Mission at the U.S. Embassy, stated on May 27th, •We have reliable reports that some Tutsi urging restraint in Bujumbura on the basis that the situation has gone too far are being arrested and immediately executedŽ (p. 1).

Nor was the Church spared. Reporting from Bujumbura in early June, Marvine Howe (1972) noted that •12 Hutu priests are said to have been killed, and thousands of Protestant pastors, school directors and teachersŽ

(p. 4). No sector of society was left untouched, least of all the military. This is how Hoyt (1972) describes the extent of the purges within the army:

> The death toll in the army resulting from the execution of Hutu has risen. Recent Belgian estimates point to more than 500. About 150 Hutu were executed on the night of May 22. Forty-one on the night of May 27. Definition of Hutu has altered, however. Now one grandparent is enough to result in classifying soldiers as Hutu. Using this standard some 100 Hutu were believ

diplomatic corps who refused to sign the letter, presumably objecting to its offensive wording, was the French ambassador.

Hardly more edifying was the response of the UN Secretary-General, Kurt Waldheim, to the carnage. Following the visit of a UN Special Mission to Burundi from June 22 through 28, headed by I.S. Djermakoye, Special Advisor on African Affairs, Waldheim expressed his "fervent hopes that peace, harmony, and stability can be brought about successfully and speedily, that Burundi will thereby achieve the goals of social progress, better standards of living and other ideals and principles set forth in the UN Charter" (quoted in Tetsch, 1972, p. 1). The cynicism behind such pious hopes is a devastating commentary on the role of the UN during the genocide. In 1972, as in 1994, the UN sat on its hands as hundreds of thousands of innocent Africans were being slaughtered.

Scarcely more edifying was the response of the U.S. government. In the words of a report of the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, the official stance of the United States revealed an extraordinary combination of "indifference, inertia, and irresponsibility" (Brown et al., 1973, p. 4). The remarkably detailed reports by the U.S. Deputy Chief of Mission in Bujumbura, Michael Hoyt, sent to the State Department failed to elicit as much as a minimal expression of concern from the Secretary of State. "On May 25, 1972", according to Roger Morris, "[U.S. Ambassador] Thomas Melady routinely left the county for a new assignment. He departed with a decoration from the Burundi government, he and his home office in Foggy Bottom maintaining total silence about the horror" (Morris, 1977, p. 267). Perceptions of Burundi as an "autistic and suspicious society," to quote from a 1972 State Department policy paper (Morris, 1977, p. 267), seem de entirely consistent with the kind of benign neglect displayed by U.S. policy makers in the face of irrefutable evidence of genocide.

The Aftermath

Although the killings were intended first and foremost to crush the insurrection, there was a great deal more at stake. The underlying objectives of the Micombero government in orchestrating the huge bloodletting were: (1) to insure the long-term stability of the state by the wholesale elimination of all educated Hutu elites and potential elites (e.g., schoolchildren); (2) to transform the instruments of force „ t he army, the police, and the gendarmerie„ into a Tutsi monopoly; (3) to rule out the possibility of a restoration of the monarchy (hence the killing of young King Ntare in Gitega on May 1); and (4) to create a new basis of legitimacy for the Hima-dominated state by projecting an image of the state as the benevolent protector of all Barundi against their domestic and external enemies.

On each of these counts, the Micombero government met with considerable success „ at least in the short run. For the next 16 years „

until the Ntega and Marangara riots of 1988 „ Burundi experienced a period of unprecedented peace. The county was virtually bereft of educated Hutu elites; the ever-present threat of another slaughter was enough to discourage all forms of protest; and the army wao.0281 Tw (ao.028o58G5106 0 TD

If there is little doubt that Ndadaye•s assassination played a critical role in the sequence of events leading to the extermination of some 600,000 Tutsi in Rwanda, it is no less important to remind ourselves of the contribution of the mythologies spawned by the 1972 genocide to the scurrilous propaganda distilled through the airwaves of Radio Mille Collines (Chrétien, 1995). As the work of Liisa Malkki (1995) convincingly demonstrates, many of the same themes were already apparent in the accounts that the Hutu refugees in Tanzania gave of their own martyrdom.

As in Rwanda, where neither time nor forgiveness will dim the memories of the 1994 slaughter, for years to come Burundi•s genocidal past will continue to haunt its future, shaping its destinies in ways that are as yet impossible to predict.

Eyewitness Accounts: The Burundi Genocide

Note: Oral witness accounts of the events surrounding the 1972 genocide are extremely scarce, in part because of the restrictions placed by the Burundi authorities on unaccompanied travel through the countryside „ especially when the aim is to interview survivors of the genocide „ and in part because of the logistical, administrative, and political difficulties involved in gaining access to refugee camps in neighboring states. Malkki is one of the very few trained anthropologists to have conducted extensive interviews with refugees in Tanzania (in Mishamo, Kigoma, and Ujiji). The following three accounts are reproduced from her doctoral dissertation, Purity and Exile: Transformations in Historical-National Consciousness Among Hutu Refugees in Tanzania (1995). All were recorded in 1987, in Mishamo, Tanzania.

What is particularly noteworthy about these oral •mythico-histories,Ž as Malkki described them, is the manner in which they intersperse myth and history, thereby providing the basis for a fundamental redefinition of collective identities. As Malkki (1995) points out, •If •history• could ever be defined as a faithful recording of facts in an absolute reality, the Hutu constitution of history would be •realistic.• The Hutu history, however, went far beyond accurate recording. It represents not only a description of the past, nor even merely an evaluation of the past, but a subversive recasting and reinterpreting of it in fundamentally moral termsŽ (pp. 124…25) In short, the implication is not that every word is pure fiction, only that reality has been filtered through the prism of an exceptionally traumatic experience. The result is a set of collective representations that have become part and parcel of the vision that the refugees have of themselves and of their recent history.

It should be noted that the names of Malkki•s interviewees are not available. The key reason is that their discourse carries significant political implications which could conceivably be held against them.

three months in the rocks, from April until June. We put the children under the rocks, and then we looked around. If the soldiers were far, we went into the fields to find cassava, sugarcane, like that, to give to our children *f*. Then, in the night, around 8 o•clock, we began the voyage [toward Tanzania] having prayed to God that he would protect us. That was the 9th of June 1972. We walked for one day and two nights. We arrived in Tanzania *f* with meat from our horses, with knives and three radios, with money in our pocket [Burundi francs]. When we arrived at the frontier they said to us •Approach, approach, dear friends!Ž We were fearful. We asked each other: •What? The soldiers have reached here already?Ž They said, •We are the soldiers of Tanzania.Ž We did not know where the boundary was. We just walked like sheep, truly like animals. We were very tired. Our children, their feet were swollen. The Tanzanian soldiers asked, •So, what do you have?Ž We said, •Knives and radios *f*.Ž Concerning the money we said nothing. The soldiers said: •Yes, approach.Ž They said, •Sleep here on the sand first, near the lake.Ž We slept perhaps two hours. Then they said, •Now we will take you to Kigoma.Ž While we were going towards Kigoma, on the way, we thought it was just us who had come here, but we ended up being 150. But then the others said, •No, no, no, we want to return to Burundi. Here in Tanzania we will starve. We want to go home.Ž So, 35 of us remained in Tanzania. But „ sa d to say „ a ll those who returned were killed. When we arrived in Kigoma, oh, oh, oh! *f* we met many, many, many men, women, from all the provinces of Burundi. We even saw people from different provinces whom we had met in the Church conferences in Burundi. All of them, they were all there! We asked them, •Where is your wife?Ž They said, •My wife is already killed; I ran away alone.Ž And then, •Where is the pastor of your commune?Ž They responded, •He, he was killed.Ž Like this we learned the news. One said: •Many, many were killed in the area where we lived *f*.Ž The majority of the people came from Bururi, near the frontier. The first thing they did was talk, talk about what had happened *f*. We stayed in Kigoma for eight weeks, then the trucks came to take us to the camp (Malkki, 1995, p. 209).

Account 4

This last account is from Hanne Christensen•s excellent study of a Burundi refugee settlement in Tanzania, Refugees and Pioneers: History and Field Study of a Burundian Settlement in Tanzania (1985). Described by the author as •extracts from interviews with refugees,Ž which were conducted in 1984, it is a composite picture of the personal traumas and sufferings many have experienced in Burundi and in exile, while at the same time conveying the sense of nostalgia felt by most refugees for their homeland.

Homeland was abeautiful place,full of gentle hills and peacefully grazing cattle. H 0 TD (w9F6 1 Tf 0.7417 0 TD 0.0356 Tc (hill)T(e. H

woman to get the baccalauréat. The couple chose Bastille Day for the day of their wedding back home in 1956.

Most of Pol Pot's Paris student friends — such as Khieu Samphan, Ieng Sary, and Son Sen — remained in his circle long after they were overthrown from power. He had early disagreements with Hou Yuon, later a popular Marxist intellectual, who was to be one of the first victims after the seizure of power by the Khmer Rouge in 1975. But Pol Pot stood out in his choice of a nom de plume: the "Original Cambodian" (khmae dam). Others preferred less racial, modernist code-names, like "Free Khmer" or "Khmer Worker." Pol Pot's scholarship ended after he failed his course three years in a row. His ship arrived home in January 1953 (Kiernan, 1985a pp. 30–32, 119–22).

The day prior to his arrival home, King Sihanouk had declared martial law to suppress Cambodia's independence movement, which was becoming radicalized by French colonial force. Pol Pot's closest brother, Saloth Chhay, joined the Cambodian and Vietnamese Communists, and took Pol Pot along. In this first contact, Vietnamese Communists began teaching him, as one of them later put it, how to "work with the masses at the base, to build up the independence committees at the village level, member by member." It seemed a patronizing slight, like his failure to quickly rise to the leadership, despite overseas experience. A former Cambodian comrade claims that Pol Pot "said that everything should be done on the basis of self-reliance, independence, and mastery. The Khmers should do everything on their own" (Kiernan, 1985a p. 123).

In the 1960s, a group of younger, mostly French-educated communists took over the leadership of the more orthodox (pro-Vietnamese) Workers' Party of Kampuchea, which had led the struggle against French colonialism in the 1950s. In 1966, the new leadership changed the party's name to the "Communist Party of Kampuchea" and set out on their path to power by staging an uprising against Prince Norodom Sihanouk's neutralist government. After victory over Sihanouk's successor regime, that of Marshal Lon Nol, in 1975, they proclaimed the state to be Democratic Kampuchea, which, as previously noted, lasted nearly four years before being overthrown by a Vietnamese invading army in 1979.

The ruling body in DK comprised the members of the Standing Committee of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of Kampuchea (CPK). The leaders with maximum national power and responsibility for the genocide about to be perpetrated were those based in Phnom Penh and not those specifically responsible for a particular geographic area of the county. The former were known as the "Party Center." The Party Center was comprised of the following individuals: Saloth Sar (alias Pol Pot), secretary-general of the CPK since 1962, and prime minister of DK; Nuon Chea, deputy secretary-general of the Party

since 1960, and president of the Representative Assembly of DK; Ieng Sary, who was ranked number 3 in the Party leadership since 1963 and was one of DK•s deputy prime ministers (responsible for foreign affairs); Son Sen, number 11 in the Party in 1963 and a deputy prime minister of DK;

The Ideology of Genocide

Along with Stalinist and Maoist models, an underlying theme of the political worldview of the Pol Pot group was a concern for national and racial grandiosity. Their disagreements with Vietnamese Communists in Paris in the early 1950s concerned the symbolic grandeur of the medieval Khmer temple of Angkor Wat and their sensitivities over the small size of Cambodia•s population. In their view, Cambodia did not need to learn or import anything from its neighbors. Rather, they would recover its pre-Buddhist glory by rebuilding the powerful economy of the medieval Angkor kingdom and regain •lost territory Ž from Vietnam and Thailand. Democratic Kampuchea treasured the Cambodian •race Ž, not individuals. National impurities included the foreign-educated (except for Pol Pot•s Paris-educated group) and •hereditary enemies Ž, especially Vietnamese. To return Cambodians to their imagined origins, the Pol Pot group saw the need for war, and for •secrecy as the basis Ž of the revolution (Boua et al., 1988, pp. 214, 220). Even of the grass-roots, pragmatic Cambodian Communists could be trusted to implement such plans, which Pol Pot kept secret from them, just as he never admitted to being Saloth Sar.

The Party Center, with its elite, urban background, French education, and a racial chauvinism little different from that of its predecessor (the Lon Nol regime), inhabited a different ideological world from that of the more moderate, Buddhist-educated, Vietnamese-trained peasant cadre who made up the mass of the Party•s membership. The acknowledged lack of a political base for its program meant that tactics of •secrecy Ž and violence were considered necessary. These tactics were used first against suspected Party dissidents, and then against the people of Cambodia as a whole. Given the sacrifices from the population that the nationalist revival required, the resistance it naturally provoked, and the regime•s preparedness to forge ahead •at all costs Ž, genocide was the result.

Who Were the Victims? Who Was Involved?

Genocide against a Religious Group

Pol Pot•s government tried to eradicate Buddhism from Cambodia. Eyewitnesses testify to the Khmer Rouge massacres of monks and the forcible disrobing and persecution of survivors. Out of a total of 2680 Buddhist monks from 8 of Cambodia•s 3000 monasteries, only 70 monks were found to have survived in 1979 (Boua, 1991, p. 239). There is no reason to believe these eight monasteries were atypical. If the same death toll applied to the monks from all the other monasteries, fewer than 2,000 of Cambodia•s 70,000 monks could be said to have survived.

A CPK Center document dated September 1975 proclaims:

> Monks have disappeared from 90 to 95 per cent of. Monasteries of are largely abandoned. The foundation pillars of Buddhism of have disintegrated. In the future they will dissolve further. The political base, the economic base, the cultural base must be uprooted (cited in Boua, 1991, p. 235).

This clear evidence of genocidal intent was carried out by the [illegible]

Genocide against a Part of the Majority National Group

Finally, of the majority Khmers, 15 percent of the rural population perished in 1975–1979, and 25 percent of the urban population. Democratic Kampuchea initially divided its population into the "old citizens" (those who had lived in Khmer Rouge Zones before the 1975 victory) and "new citizens" (those who had lived in the cities, and were the last holdouts of the Lon Nol regime). All cities were evacuated in April 1975. The next year, however, the "new citizens" were rebaptized "deportees," and most failed to even qualify for the next category, "candidates," let alone "full rights citizens," a group to which only favored peasant families were admitted. But not even they were spared the mass murders of the 1977–1978 countrywide purges.

The most horrific slaughter was perpetrated in the last six months of the regime, in the politically suspect Eastern Zone bordering Vietnam. The author interviewed 87 survivors in the Eastern Zone. In just 11 villages, the Khmer Rouge carried out 1663 killings in 1978. In another community of 350 people, there were 95 executions in 1978; 705 executions occurred in another subdistrict, 1950 in another, 400 in another. Tens of thousands of other villagers were deported to the northwest of the county. En route through Phnom Penh they were "marked" as easterners by being forced to wear a blue scarf, reminiscent of Hitler's yellow star for Jews (Kiernan, 1989b), and later eliminated en masse.

A total 1978 murder toll of over 100,000 (more than one-seventeenth of the eastern population) can safely be regarded as a minimum estimate (Kiernan, 1986a). The real figure is probably much higher (see Table 11.1).

The Historical Forces at Work

Rural conditions were better in prerevolutionary Cambodia than in neighboring countries like Vietnam or even Thailand. Land was more equitably distributed, and most peasant families owned some land. However, rural debt was common, and the number of landless tenants or share croppers increased from 4 percent of the farming population in 1950 to 20 percent in 1970 (Kiernan and Boua, 1982, p. 4). Thus, alongside a landowning middle peasant class, a new class of rootless, destitute rural dwellers emerged. Their position was desperate enough for them to have nothing to lose in any kind of social revolution.

The gap between town and countryside has been cited as a precondition for the Khmer Rouge's march to power. Unlike the countryside, the cities were not predominantly Khmer, but included large populations of ethnic Chinese and Vietnamese. Nor was the urban manufacturing sector very significant, producing few consumer goods for the countryside. Many peasants saw cities as seats of arbitrary, even foreign, political and

economic power. But none of this, of course, explains why the Pol Pot regime also turned against the peasantry in such large numbers.

Another factor was the rapid expansion of education in Cambodia in the 1960s, after long neglect of education under French colonial rule. A generation gap separated peasant parents from educated youth, who were often unable to find work after graduating from high school and drifted into political dissidence. The Khmer Rouge in the 1960s recruited disproportionately among schoolteachers and students.

Other historical forces at work included the increasing repression by the Sihanouk regime, which drove the grass-roots left into dissidence, enabling the French-ed

opportunities to report on what the UN•s Special Rapporteur on genocide, Benjamin Whitaker, described in 1985 as genocide, •even under the most restricted definitionŽ[1]

A few voluntary organizations around the world pressed on, unaided by major human rights groups. These included the US. Cambodia Genocide Project, which in 1980 proposed a World Court case (Stanton, 1993); the Australian section of the International Commission of Jurists, which in January 1990 called for •international trialsŽ of the Pol Pot leadership for genocide; the Minnesota Lawyers International Human Rights Committee, which in June 1990 organized a one-day mock trial of the Khmer Rouge following the procedures of the World Court, with testimony by a dozen victims of the genocide; the Washington-based Campaign to Oppose the Return of the Khmer Rouge, supported by 45 US. organizations, a former Cambodian prime minister, and survivors of the Khmer Rouge period; Yale University•s Cambodian Genocide Program; and the NGO Forum, an international body of private voluntary agencies working in Cambodia.

At the first Jakarta Informal Meeting of Southeast Asian diplomats, on July 28, 1988, the Indonesian chairman•s final communique noted a regional consensus on preventing a return to •the genocidal policies and practices of the Pol Pot regimeŽ (Vatikiotis, 1988 p. 29). But the November 3, 1989, United Nations General Assembly resolution watered this down to •the universally condemned policies and practices of the recent pastŽ A February 1990 Australian proposal referred only to •the human rights abuses of a recent pastŽ (Australian Department of Foreign Affairs and Trade, 1990 pp. v…7). The five permanent members of the Security Council (the United States, the UK, France, the USSR, and China) emasculated this formulation in August 1990, vaguely nodding at •the policies and practices of the pastŽ in the peace plan they drew up and imposed on Cambodia in late 1991.

In June 1991, jF3 1 Tf 0.528 Tc ((l)14(n)f 0.5545 0 TD 0.0275 Tc 24 0 T

Convention of 1948. In their view, the Khmer Rouge regime had •subjected the people of Cambodia to almost all of the acts enumerated in the Convention. The more difficult task is determining whether the Khmer Rouge carried out these acts with the requisite intent and against groups protected by the Convention.Ž The experts•response to this challenge was affirmative:

> In the view of the group of experts, the existing historical research justifies including genocide within the jurisdiction of a tribunal to prosecute Khmer Rouge leaders. In particular, evidence suggests the need for prosecutors to investigate the commission of genocide against the Cham, Vietnamese and other minority groups, and the Buddhist monkhood. The Khmer Rouge subjected these groups to an especially harsh and extensive measure of the acts enumerated in the Convention. The requisite intent has support in direct and indirect evidence, including Khmer Rouge statements, eyewitness accounts, and the nature and numbers of victims in each group, both in absolute terms and in proportion to each group•s total population. These groups qualify as protected groups under the Convention: the Muslim Cham as an ethnic and religious group; the Vietnamese communities as an ethnic and, perhaps, a racial group; and the Buddhist monkhood as a religious group.
>
> Specifically, in the case of the Buddhist monkhood, their intent is evidenced by the Khmer Rouge•s intensely hostile statements towards religion, and the monkhood in particular; the Khmer Rouge•s policies to eradicate the physical and ritualistic aspects of the Buddhist religion; the disrobing of monks and abolition of the((i)Tj /F33

Mommsen believes, for instance, that Hitler did not plan the extermination of the Jews early in his career, but that Nazi policy was formed on an ad hoc basis over time and under the pressure of developing circumstances. It was a case of cumulative radicalization. Mommsen's argument is that Hitler was not a freak aberration, and that German history and society more broadly are also implicated in the genocide of the Jews. Similarly, Vickery considers DK an illustration of what happens when a peasantry assumes power: "It now appears fortunate that those who predicted a predominance of agrarian nationalism over Marxism in China and Vietnam were mistaken" (Vickery, 1984, p. 290).

The Pol Pot regime, then, was made up of "middle-class intellectuals with such a romantic, idealized sympathy for the poor that they did not imagine rapid, radical restructuring of society in their favour would lead to such intolerable violence" (Vickery, 1988, p. 14). But, Vickery claims, these Khmer Rouge leaders simply discovered that "it would have been impossible to hold the support of their peasant army," unless political enemies were "punished" and a departure made from the 1917 Bolshevik model of maintaining a "normal administration" and urban "privilege" (Vickery, 1988, pp. 14, 20, 5). And when the urban populations were deported to the countryside, "the majority base peasantry" of Cambodia allegedly participated "with some glee" in the persecution of "their class enemies" (Vickery, 1989, p. 47). "The violence of DK was first of all „ because it was such a complete peasant revolution „ t he victorious revolutionaries doing what peasant rebels have always wanted to do to their urban enemies *ƒ*. [It] did not spring forth from the brains of Pol Pot or Khieu Samphan" (Vickery, 1984, p. 286; Vickery, 1988, p. 17).

A major pro

managed to flee to Thailand, Laos, or Vietnam were nevertheless the major source of information reaching the outside world. In 1979, after the Vietnamese destruction of the Khmer Rouge regime, Cambodia was opened to journalists and researchers, and many more refugees also found their way to foreign countries. Thousands of refugees and others who remained in Cambodia have now told their stories of the 1975…1979 years, and some literate Cambodians have published books on their experience. But relatively few have been published in English, and even fewer narrate the experiences of the Khmer peasant majority, of ethnic minorities, of women, or of children. The accounts that follow have been chosen to fill that gap.

These testimonies were collected by Ben Kiernan and Chanthou Boua in 1979 and 1980, in the immediate aftermath of the overthrow of the Khmer Rouge. Kiernan, then a graduate student in Southeast Asian History at Monash University, Melbourne, Australia, was conducting his dissertation field research on 20th century Cambodia. One of the interviews took place in a Cambodian village, one in a Lao refugee camp in Thailand, and two in a Buddhist monastery inside Thailand. The interviews were conducted in Khmer without an interpreter and in the absence of any person exercising authority over the interviewees. The conversations were tape-recorded and translated as accurately as possible by Kiernan and Boua. The details recounted are reasonably typical of hundreds of other interviews recorded by Kiernan in 1979…1980 and do not conflict with anything known from other sources about Cambodia in the 1970s, ht

The overthrow of Prince Norodom Sihanouk in 1970 was greeted with some disappointment by the villagers of Banteay Chey. I remember some of them traveling to Kompong Cham to take part in protest demonstrations. Soon after, fighting took place in the area between troops of the new Lon Nol Government and revolutionary Khmer Rouge claiming loyalty to the Prince. The Lon Nol troops retreated and were not seen in the area again.

As Banteay Chey itself was free of fighting, my relatives from Kompong Cham, a bus driver and his family, came to live in the village in 1970.

The war put an end to supplies of medicine to the village. Schools were closed, too, and I never got the opportunity of a secondary education. So from 1970, I made furniture and tilled the soil with my father.

Vietnamese Communist troops began making frequent visits to Banteay Chey. They paid for supplies that they needed and did not mistreat villagers. We first saw indigenous Khmer Rouge troops (who spoke like people from Kompong Cham) when they entered the village in 1972 and left again without causing upset. They lived in the forest and visited the village frequently over the next three years; life went on as before. The Khmer Rouge never stayed in or recruited from Banteay Chey and were busy fighting the Lon Nol troops all the time.

In 1973, the Vietnamese stopped coming; in the same year, the village had to withstand three months of intense bombardment by American B-52s. Bombs fell on Banteay Chrey three to six times a day, killing over 1000 people, or nearly a third of the village population. Several of my family were injured. After that, there were few people left to be seen around the village, and it was quiet. Food supplies remained adequate. Later, in 1973, the Khmer Rouge temporarily occupied most of Kompong Cham City and evacuated its population to the countryside. Seventy-four people from the tow

Although Khmer Rouge troops were thinned out because of the conflict with Vietnam, we were spotted by soldiers who fired immediately, killing two of my companions. Houath and I were separated but arrived safely in Laos, where we met up again in a local jail on the banks of the Mekong.

I noticed that the Lao soldiers behaved differently from the Khmer Rouge I knew. They asked questions first, before apprehending people they suspected, whereas the Khmer Rouge were much more inclined to shoot suspects on the spot. I also gained the impression that living conditions in Laos were considerably better than in Cambodia.

Houath and I spent a total of 37 days in two Lao jails. I was given rice to eat, much more than I had had for a long time in Banteay Chey. I was not ill-treated, but when I was told that Vientiane was being asked for instructions whether to send me back to Cambodia, I escaped with Houath, and we fled to Thailand on 8 September 1977.

I spent another ten months in a Thai jail, before being transferred to the Ubon refugee camp.

I

Account 3: Peasant Boys in Democratic Cambodia by Sat and Mien

These are accounts of the experiences of two teenage Cambodian peasant boys (Sat and Mien) during 1975…1977. Boua and Kiernan interviewed them in a Buddhist wat near where they were tending their new master•s horses, in Thailand•s Surin province, on March 7, 12, and 19, 1979. The text includes every detail recounted by the boys, translated and arranged in sequence by Boua and Kiernan. Occasional points added appear in brackets.

•They Were Killing People Every DayŽ (Sat) was born in 1966 in the village of Lbaeuk, Kralanh district, Siemreap province, Cambodia. The village is a long way from Siemreap

I crossed into Thailand. However, one group of boys came across some Thai tanks; never having seen such things, they ran frightened back into the jungle, where they were killed by Khmer Rouge soldiers.

> Now, I am not allowed to walk around or talk to people.
> When I become an adult, I want to live with other people.

•The Khmer Rouge Leader Was a Kind, Easygoing Person.Ž (Mivan) was born in 1965 in the village of Samlaeng, Roang sub-district, Preah Vihear province, Cambodia. My parents, who were rice farmers, called me Daung.

[In early 1970, troops of the new Lon Nol regime retreated from Preah Vihear and from that point the province was under undisputed Communist control.] During the next few years, Vietnamese Communist troops passed through Samlaeng, on one occasion, provoking a lot of interest but no hostility. They didn•t steal anything from or harm the villagers; after paying for what they wanted, they moved on.

Also during the war, Samlaeng was bombed •many times.Ž [by U.S. or allied aircraft] over a long period. I don•t know if any of the people were killed.

In 1975 [after the Khmer Rouge captured and evacuated Phnom Penh], a number of people arrived in Samlaeng on foot after walking from Phnom Penh. Some people had died along the way; the villagers helped the newcomers settle in to their new environment.

During 1975–76, life went on as before. My parents were happy during this period. Khmer Rouge troops lived in the village but did not cause any upset; I never heard any mention at all of any actual or suspected executions. Food supplies were adequate.

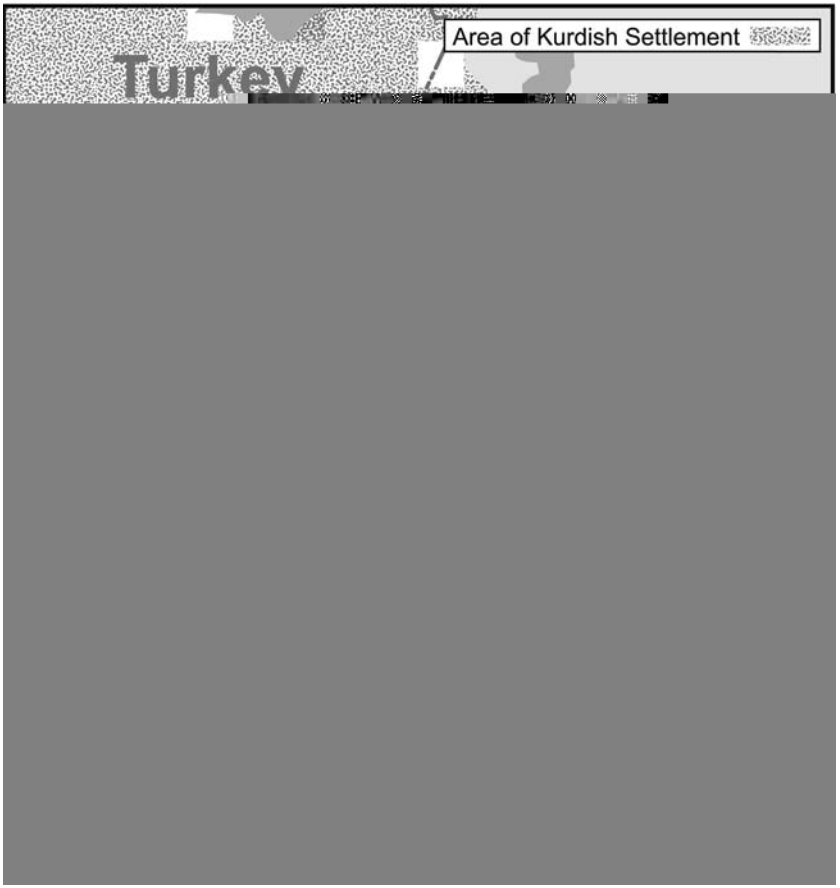
Then, in 1976, the revolution began. Its purpose was •to build up the country,Ž I was told. The entire village was now obliged to eat in a communal dining hall. Rations were tight – usually only rice porridge. In late 1976, I heard that a Phnom Penh evacuee had disappeared from the village and was thought to have been executed. This was the only such case I knew of while living in Saml

Kiernan, Ben (1992). "The Cambodian Crisis, 1990–1992: The UN Plan, the Khmer Rouge, and the State of Cambodia". Bulletin of Concerned Asian Scholars, 24(2):3–23.

Kiernan, Ben (Ed) (1993). Genocide and Democracy in Cambodia: The Khmer Rouge, the United Nations, and the International Community. New Haven, CT: Yale Council on Southeast Asia Studies.

Kiernan, Ben (1996). The Pol Pot Regime: Race, Power and Genocide in Cambodia under the Khmer Rouge, 1975–1979. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. (Second edition with new Preface, 2002.)

Kiernan, Ben (2002). The Pol Pot Regime: Race, Power and Genocide in Cambodia under



Iraqi Kurdistan

CHAPTER 12

The Anfal Operations in Iraqi Kurdistan

MICHIEL LEEZENBERG

Introduction

The 1988 Anfal ("Spoils") operations conducted by the Iraqi regime against part of its Kurdish population are among the best-documented cases of genocide. Ostensibly a counter-insurgency measure against Kurdish rebels, they in fact involved the deliberate killing of large numbers of non-combatants. Captured documents prove the regime's genocidal intent: They make abundantly clear that the government aimed at killing Kurdish civilians as such. Estimates of the number of civilian casualties vary from 50,000 to almost 200,000; the number of displac8(e(e)]TJ /F6 1 Tf 2)TD

loaded onto windowless trucks and taken to execution sites in central Iraq. Several people, however, survived these mass executions. All of them report having seen rows of trenches dug by bulldozers, each holding hundreds of corpses. It is more than likely that tens of thousands of Kurdish male civilians were massacred in this way, merely on account of their Kurdish ethnicity and of their living in an area declared out of bounds by the regime.

Unknown numbers of women, children, and elderly are also suspected to have been massacred. More typically, however, women were left alive and relocated. There also is credible testimony that many younger women were sold off as brides, or rather into virtual slavery, to rich men elsewhere in Iraq, but also in Kuwait and Saudi Arabia. These reports were corroborated by a December 1989 document, which the Kurds claimed to have captured from Kirkuk•s Directorate of Intelligence following the 2003 ousting of Hussein•s regime. The memorandum to the Baghdad General Directorate of Intelligence, marked •Top Secret,Ž states that a group of girls aged between 14 and 29 have been captured during the Anfal operations, and have been •sent to the harems and nightclubs of the Arab Republic of Egypt.Ž (Note: A copy of the document and a partial translation can be found at www.kurdmedia.com/news.asp?id=4057.)

Many elderly captives were initially resettled in the Nuqrat al-Salman concentration camp in Southern Iraq. In the appalling living conditions there, up to 10 percent of the inmates may have died in the space of a few months. Often, corpses would be refused a proper burial

on and that lower army officers were incredulous at the standing order to execute all captives. Among the Kurdish population at large, and also among Arab civilians and even among some government officials, there were a few but significant episodes of resistance to support for the victims. In the third Anfal, the local population of Chamchamal rose up in revolt against the deportation of villagers. During the fifth, resistance to the peshmerga (Kurdish guerrillas) turned out to be so strong that two further operations against the same area were mounted, keeping government forces occupied for over three months.

Especially in Arbil, the local urban population, at times at great personal risk to themselves, made a prolonged effort to help the deported villagers. Several survivors of the executions, notably Taymur •Abdallah from Kulajo near Kifri and Ako Izzedin Sayyid Ismael from Warani near Tuz Khormatu, were harbored by Iraqi army personnel or Arab tribesmen. (Note: For fragments of Taimour •Abdallah•s testimony, see Account 3 below; for Ismael•s story, see www.globeandmail.com/servlet/story/RTGAM.20030403.unlen0405PBNStory/International.) Unlike many other cases of genocide, then, the Anfal operations were made possible far less by mobilizing latent or open ethnic hatred among the population at large than by a highly efficient, centralized, and secret organization.

In the operations, the Kurdish irregular troops, or jash (•donkey foal•) as they are disparagingly called among Kurds, have played an important but ambiguous role. F lr

several months. It was not until July 1988 that Iraqi troops reoccupied the city, which they then proceeded to demolish. The remaining population was relocated in "New Halabja" (mujamma'a), a few miles down the road.

The Anfal operations cannot simply be explained away as a drastic form of counter-insurgency; but, then again, characterizing the mind-set that made them possible is no easy task. The question of whether, and how far, the Anfal operations were driven by racist animosity has not yet adequately been answered; but this question does not, of course, minimize in any way their criminal character. Racism does not appear to be an obvious feature of either Iraqi society, Baathist ideology, or the perpetrators' personalities. Although there have been, and are, occasional ethnic tensions among the different segments of the Iraqi population, there is no widespread racial hatred between Kurds and Arabs in Iraq.

In official Baathist discourse, categories of loyalty, treason, and sabotage (which, ultimately, are of a Stalinist inspiration) are much more prominent than ethnic or racial terms; the latter appear to have been rather flexible items, given the Baath regime's at times rather arbitrary and voluntaristic way of creating and dissolving ethnic identities by bureaucratic fiat. And when overtly racist language was used, this typically concerned Iranians and Jews rather than Kurds. Baathist ideology is of an undeniably Arab nationalist character, but it has always been ambivalent as to the inclusion of Iraq's sizable Kurdish population. There are indications, however, that in the course of the 1980s, emphasizing one's Kurdish or other non-Arab ethnicity was in itself increasingly becoming a criminal offence, if not an act of treason. For example, smaller ethnic groups, like Yezidis, Christians, and Shabak, were forcibly registered as Arabs, and when they changed their ethnicity to "Kurdish" in the 1987 census, al-Majid had them deported and their villages destroyed.

It is even questionable whether al-Majid himself can be simply labeled a racist. On tape recordings of meetings with senior Party officials he can be heard speaking in a coarse and derogatory manner of Kurds, but his remarks hardly betray any generic hatred of Kurds as an inferior race; rather, he speaks of saboteurs and of uneducated villagers who "live like donkeys". Whatever such personal motives and animosities, official discourse consistently proclaimed both Kurds and Arabs as equal parts of the Iraqi people or nation, on condition of their political loyalty.

Religious considerations do not appear to have been a prime motivating or legitimating factor either. The name Anfal, or "Spoils", which comes from the eighth sura of the Quran, has little specifically religious significance here; rather, it appears to refer primarily to the right granted to the Kurdish irregulars involved in the operations to loot the possessions of the captured civilians. The Baath Party, which had ruled Iraq since 1968, is largely secular and was (and is) inspired more by 20th

century ideologies and practices of Nazism and Stalinism than by any specifically Islamic tradition.

Of the violent and indeed murderous character of Baathist rule, however, there can be no doubt at all. After the conclusion of the Anfal operations, only 673 Kurdish villages still stood in the whole of Iraqi Kurdistan. Over the years, the regime had demolished 4049 villages. State violence had increasingly turned towards Kurdish cities. In June 1989, the city of Qala Diza, with a population of close to 100,000, which had not been targeted in the Anfal and was itself a site of relocation camps, was evacuated and destroyed. It is impossible to tell where this continuing process of repression and destruction would have led, if it had not been interrupted by the 1990 Gulf Crisis and the ensuing war and uprising.

Responses to the Anfal

The Iraqi regime made a strong effort to keep the true nature of the ope0 Tf 7.0109 0 TD -1 Tf 0.3945 0 1 0 76.853 0 T 476.853 0 T 476.853 0 T

supported the Iraqi regime, precisely when it committed its worst atrocities, made his administration•s moral arguments for war less convincing. For a credible judicial process, therefore, it would seem that a court under Iraqi or international jurisdiction would be best placed to deal with the Baath regime•s crimes. At the time of writing, it is not clear whether, how, when, and under whose jurisdiction such a trial may take place. There seems to be a realistic chance, however, that the top of the Anfal•s organizational structure, notably al-Majid, will eventually stand trial.

Eyewitness Accounts

As of yet, there is little available about the Anfal in the way of eyewitness evidence in Western languages. Important works, like Ziyad Abdulrahman•s Tuni Merg (Dungeon of Death) and Shorsh Resod•s Dewlety Iraqu Kurd (The Iraqi State and the Kurds), are available only in Kurdish. The main source for published accounts is, once again, Human Right Watch•s Iraq•s Crime of Genocide (1995), from which Accounts 2, and 5 below have been taken. In the future, further testimony that has served as the basis for this report may be made public. Other eyewitness accounts appear in Kanan Makiya•s Cruelty and Silence (1993), especially the lengthy (and excruciating) interview with •Abdallah, at first believed to be the sole survivor of the execution squads. (See Accounts 1 and 3.) Account 4 was recorded by the author and has not previously been published.

Account 1: The Chemical Attacks

This account by •Abdallah Abdel-Qadir al-•Askari, who survived the attack on Guptepe (or •Goktepe Ž according to HRW), provides a sense of the horrors of the chemical attacks. From Makiya•s Cruelty and Silence (p. 135). Note: For additional testimony from al-Askari, see Human Rights Watch•s Iraq•s Crime of Genocide, 1995, pp. 118, 142, 154…55, 156…57.

On the evening of May 3 [1988] the situation in my village, Guptapa, was not normal. We had heard that the regime was preparing a chemical attack, but we didn•t know when they would strike. It felt like there were unusual army maneuvers. Late in the afternoon with my brother-in-law and two friends „ both teachers like myself „ I climbed from our farm, which is on lower ground, to the highest point of the village. We wanted to see what was going on. Two inspection planes flew over. They threw out flares to determine the direction of the wind. Then another group of planes came, we think about 18 of them. The explosions were not very loud, which made me guess they were chemical bombs. When we raised our heads, we saw the sandy brown and grey clouds billowing upward. My background as a chemist left me in no doubt this was a chemical attack.

We climbed to the highest spot possible even though the wind was taking the gas away in the opposite direction. From there I shouted down to the people in the village • This is a chemical attack! Try to escape! Come up the hill, come up here!Ž A lot of people did come to where we were and were saved. But a lot remained in the areas affected by the chemicals.

We discussed what to do. I thought we should wait ten or fifteen minutes, then go down. If we went at once, we too would be in danger and unable to help the others. But my friends wouldn•t listen. So, we went down to the back of the village where the gases had not permeated and a lot of people were gathered. Some were very disturbed; one man shouted at me, • You have lost everybody; they are all killed. They have been bombing your houseŽ This made me worrie

prisoners, who were ordered to squat while the Amn agents took all their money and put it in a big sack. They also took all our documents. The Amn agents were shouting at us to scare us. Bring weapons to kill them, said one. They are poor, don't shoot them, said another. And another: I wish we had killed all of them.

Later that night the Amn came back and took all the young men away. Only the elderly remained. The young men were taken away in Nissan buses, ten or more of them, each with a capacity of 45 people. Their documents had already been taken. They left nothing but the clothes on their backs.

Account 3: The Execution Sites

This account comes from the extraordinary testimony of Taimour 'Abdal-lah, who was taken to an execution site near the Saudi border, but man-aged to escape, albeit wounded. Although he did not speak any Arabic, he found refuge with a Shi'ite Arab family, and eventually managed to return to the Kurdish-held North. From Makiya's Cruelty and Silence, (1993), p. 185, 191…92, 195.

Note: Part of his testimony also appears in Gwynne Roberts' 1992 BBC television documentary, 'The Road to Hell,' which was aired in the United States as 'Saddam's Killing Fields.' See Chapter 9 ('The Firing Squads') in Human Rights Watch's Iraq's Crime of Genocide, 1995, pp. 160…74. See also the story of another Anfal survivor, Ako Izeddin Sayyid Ismael from Warani near Tuz Khormatu (The Globe and Mail, April 3, 2003) (Full text at www.fas.harvard.edu/~irdp/reports/taimour.html).

Q: What happened when you reached the prison of Topzawa in Kirkuk?

A: When we arrived, they put women and children in one hall and the men in another.

Q: In which group did they put you?

A: I was with my mother and my sisters.

Q: Did you see your father again after being separated?

A: I saw him once more in Topzawa and then I didn't see him again.

Q: What was happening when you saw him?

A: They were taking off his clothes except for the underclothes. They manacled his hands and then they put all the men in the lorries and drove them away.

Q: After that you never saw your father again?

A: No. [p. 185]

Q: What happened next?

A: ƒ Just before reaching the place of the shooting, they first let us off the lorries and blindfolded us and gave us sips of water. Then they made us go back inside. When we arrived, they opened the door, and I managed to slip aside my blindfold. I could see this pit in the ground surrounded by soldiers.

Q: Were your hands tied?
A: No.

Q: When they opened the door of the lorry, what was the first thing you saw?
A: The first thing I saw was the pits, dug and ready.

Q: ƒ How many pits did you see?
A: It was night, but around us there were many.

Q: Four or five holes?
A: No, no, it was more.

Q: More than five, six, seven holes?
A: Yes, yes.

Q: Describe your pit.
A: The pit was like a tank dugout. They put us in that kind of a hole.

Q: They pushed you directly off the truck into the pit?
A: Yes.

Q: How high was it? One metre? Two metres? Could you stand up inside?
A: It was high.

Q: How high?
A: Up to the sals of a man.

Q: How many people were put inside?
A: One pit to every truck.

Q: And how many people were on a truck?
A: About 100 people.

Q: Was it just a massive hole?
A: It was rectangular.

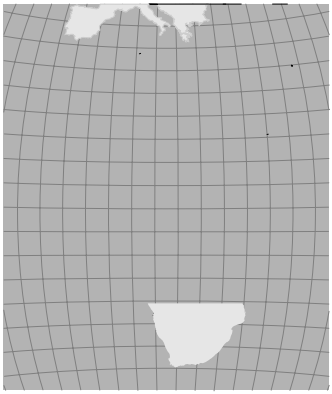
Q: Was it cut very precisely by a machine?
A: By bulldozers as you would make a pit for a tank. [pp. 191…92]

Q: ƒ Did you look into the soldier•s face?
A: Yes.

Q: Did you see his eyes?

References

Human Rights Watch/Middle East (1994). Bureaucracy of Repression: The Iraqi Government in Its Own Words. New York: HRW/ME.
Human Rights Watch/Middle East (1995). Iraq•s Crime of Genocide: The Anfal Campaign Against the Kurds. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
Makiya, Kanan (1993). Cruelty & Silence: War, Tyranny, Uprising, and the Arab World. New York: W.W. Norton.
Meiselas, S. (1997). Kurdistan in the Shadow of History. New York: Random House.



Rwanda

CHAPTER 13
The Rwanda Genocide

RENÉ LEMARCHAND

Since April 1994 Rwanda has become a synonym for one of the worst genocides of the 20th century. An estimated half a million people, mostly Tutsi, were killed in the course of a carnage that claimed twice as many victims in one month as the Bosnian civil war in two years. To this must be added almost as many deaths caused by military engagements, cholera, dysentery, famine, and sheer human exhaustion.

As much as the appalling scale of the bloodletting, it is the element of planned annihilation that gives the Rwanda killings their genocidal quality. The parallel with the 1972 genocide in Burundi immediately

homeland „ now in a homeless limbo and determined to go back to their country, by force if necessary „ the revolution planted the seeds of the refugee-warrior militancy that led to the creation of the RPF in 1990 (Reyntjens, 1993). By the same token, to the extent that the Hutu revolution came to be identified with a •democratic,Ž •anti-feudalŽ mass movement, its enemies could only be described in opposite terms, as feudal counter-revolutionaries bent upon restoring minority rule. It is not by accident that, during the killings, the Tutsi were collectively identified by Hutu ideologues with the •Feudo-HamiticŽ enemy.

The Ideology of Genocide

The root cause of the Rwanda genocide lies in the extent to which collective identities have been mythologized and manipulated for political advantage. Today Hutu and Tutsi are not just ethnic labels; rather, they are social categories that carry an enormous emotional charge. Tutsi are seen by many Hutu as culturally alien to Rwanda, their presence traceable to •Hamitic invaders from the northŽ who used ruse and cunning „ gifts of cattle and beautiful women „ to enslave the unsuspecting Hutu agriculturalists. Only the Hutu „ that is, the Bantu people, as distinct from the Hamites „ qualify as authentic Rwandans. That such portrayals are at odds with every shred of evidence available is immaterial. The point is that they are critical elements in the cognitive map of Hutu ideologues. The Hamitic frame of reference is central to an understanding of the ideology of genocide. This is where the legacy of missionary historiography „ evolving from speculation about cultural affinities between Hamites and Coptic Christianity to fiat

supplied the middle-level cadres in charge of engineering and supervising the killings in the communes.

3. The militias (interhamwe), often operating in tandem with the police and the gendarmerie, formed the ground-level operatives in charge of doing the actual killing. Many also played a key role in •persuading Ž (at gunpoint) Hutu civilians to kill their Tutsi neighbors. Although the term came to designate a variety of self-appointed killers, the core group has been described as •forming up to 1 or 2 percent of the population; they killed out of conviction; they were trained to kill, they often smoked hashish and are thought to have killed between 200…300 people each Ž (Physicians for Human Rights, 1994 p. 11).
4. The presidential guard, numbering approximately 6000 and recruited exclusively among northerners, were trained specifically to assist civilian death squads. The systematic killing of opposition figures, Hutu and Tutsi, in the days immediately following the crash of the presidential plane, on April 6, 1994, was essentially the work of the presidential guard.

The sociological profile of the killers reflects the diversity of their social and institutional ties. Especially noteworthy, however, is the number of intellectuals and professional people who participated in the slaughter. Despite many exceptions to the rule, one cannot fail to notice the number of journalists, medical doctors, agronomists, teachers, university lecturers, and even priests who were identified by survivor

Postgenocide Rwanda: The Quest for National Reconciliation

For the Kagame government and the international community, justice and accountability are essential preconditions for national reconciliation. The first important step in this direction was taken by the United Nations Security Council on November 8, 1998, with the establishment in Arusha, Tanzania, of the International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR). The objectives spelled out in the UN resolution vis-à-vis national reconciliation, peacekeeping, and the fight against impunity and support for the Rwandan courts and judicial system are indicative of the scope of its jurisdiction. Rwandan national courts were given concurrent jurisdiction with the ICTR, but the latter has priority to select and bring to trial Hutu suspects. While domestic tribunals are free to mete out capital punishment, life imprisonment is the maximum sentence for the ICTR. Despite these auspicious beginnings, nearly ten years after the genocide the shortcomings of both jurisdictions are a legitimate cause for concern.

The assessment offered by the International Crisis Group (ICG) in June 2001 draws attention to the lack of professionalism of some judges, and the extreme slowness and high cost of the ICTR proceedings. With more than 800 employees, three trial chambers presided over by nine judges, and a budget of around $90 million, the performance of the ICTR is lamentable. Between July 1999 and October 2000, the only substantial case heard was the trial of a s

thinly veiled military ethnocracy. The security threatsposed to the regime by Hutu exiles (i.e.,remnants of the ex-FAR [Forces Armées Rwandaises] and interhamwe) are seen asthe main justification for the limits placed on the exercise of basic freedoms „ in effect,denying Rwandans,whether Hutu or Tutsi, the right to participate effectively in the political life of the country. An ICGreport aptly sums up the political climate at the close of 2002:

> The political partieshave either beendismantled or forced to accept the consensusimposed by the RPF [Rwandan Patriotic Front], the independent presshasbeen silenced, and civil society forced to exist betweenrepression and coercion. The RPF wields almost exclusive military, political, and economic control and tolerates no criticism or challenge toits authority. The opposition has beenforced into exile, and anti-establishment speecheshave relegated to secrecy. In the name of unity and national reconciliation, the various segments of Rwandan society are subjected to a paternalistic and authoritarian doctrine and cannot expresstheir themselvesfreely (International Crisis Group, 2002,p. 1).

The absence of a significant political overture is a source of immense frustration for both Hutu and Tutsi. Among the latter, the so-called rescapés, representing some 150,000 Tutsi survivors of the genocide, are not the leastresentful of their growing marginalization „ socially, economically, and politically. Meanwhile, through the annual commemorations of the genocide, every effort is made to keep alive the memory of the horrific slaughter perpetrated by the killers, yet nothing is said of the thousands of Hutu opponents of the Habyalimana regime who fell under the blows of the génocidaires. Symbolic memory reflects the patterns of exclusion inscribed in the new political dispensation. How to restore the impulses of civility and the rules of democratic governance in the aftermath of an unparalleled carnagewill remain the central issuefaced by the new Rwanda in the years to come.

Eyewitness Accounts

Unlike the events surrounding the 1972 genocide in Burundi, a number of eyewitness accounts of the horrors surrounding the Rwanda genocide are available from a variety of sources. Journalists,human rights activists, and members of the clergy have collected a rich harvest of firsthand testimonies. Nowhere, however, are the human dimensions of the cataclysm conveyed in more chilling detail than in the London-based African Rights publication, Rwanda: Death, Despair and Defiance(Omaar, 1994). Except

for Account 3, excerpted from a report by Physicians for Human Rights (1994), all of the testimonies below are drawn from the African Rights report.

Account 1

The following account addresses the critical role played by local government authorities „ bourgmestres, communal counselors, prefets, and sous-prefets „ in organizing the killings in the countryside. It draws from the testimonies of Antoine Mugambira, from the Kivu commune (Gikongoro prefecture), and Francois Nzeyimana, from the Muganza commune, also in Gikongoro:

We were attacked by interhamwe, CDR [the Coalition pour la Defense de la Republique], MDR-Power [Hutu hard-liners in the MDR], and MRND [the Mouvement Revolutionnaire National pour le Developpement]. Among those who led the attack were a certain Mukama, a soldier, together with the bourgmestre of the commune Kivu. They set fire to houses, destroyed our property and ate our cows. We fled to Muganza parish. When we arrived there we met many other people from Muganza *f*. We were with white nuns who said, • Fight those people because they are killers Ž The second day they came back with four soldiers, reservists from Ngara and two from Nyabimata. They shot at us and left us with fourteen wounded and six dead. That was on Saturday. On Sunday, we fled again, to Cyahinda. Soldiers shot at us. Interhamwe too. We fought them one day, the day we arrived 8.m62D (o)Tj /F6(t t)Tj /F6 1 Tf nS

In mid-May, injured soldiers from the Kanombe barracks started being brought to Butare Hospital and no more civilians were being admitted. They also started deciding who were Tutsi on the basis of their features, looking at the nose, height, and fingers because the identity cards were no longer accurate. Some of the doctors at the hospital risked their lives by helping threatened staff by hiding and feeding them *f*.

When the patients' wounds had healed, some of the doctors „ t he 'bad' doctors „ ex pelled the Tutsi even though everyone knew they would be killed outside. At night, the interhamwe and the soldiers came in but these doctors were colluding willingly. If people refused to go, they were taken out at night. They could be seen being killed by the interhamwe waiting at the gates. Later the prime minister came down to Butare „ apparently the educated people in Butare asked him to come „ and while here he had a meeting with medical staff. They all said peace had returned and told the patients that it was safe to return home. They wanted those who were remaining here to go. Those who did were then killed *f*.

No one knew who my family were. We had good neighbors who said my family were Hutu. My wife was taken twice by interhamwe but neighbors insisted that she was Hutu. We have a 6-month-old daughter. My sister, mother, and father fled to Burundi but all my aunts and uncles and in-laws were killed except for my mother-in-law. In other words, more than 40 of my relatives were killed.

I spent my time hiding in a toilet at the hospital. Eventually I left the hospital and stayed with another friendly Hutu doctor who took me to another Hutu friend who hid me in his toilet *f*. On July 2, there was general panic as the FPR arrived. That night I moved from his friend's house to my own home (Omaar, 1994, pp. 27…28).

/Span <

Bosnia-Herzegovina

independence, with the republic of Bosnia-Herzegovina following in 1992. While the war in Slovenia, where very few Serbs lived, lasted only ten days and caused fewer than 50 deaths, the conflicts in Croatia and Bosnia were vastly more deadly and destructive.

In Croatia, Serbs constituted 12 percent of the population, and many of them feared that their status and security in an independent Croatia would suffer significantly. Assisted and armed by the Serb-dominated federal government in Belgrade, the capital of Yugoslavia, Croatian Serb military forces temporarily occupied approximately 33 percent of the territory in Croatia. The conflict lasted seven months and included „on all sides" the deliberate destruction of towns and cities, massacres of defenseless civilians, and the forcible removal of an ethnic group from its territory, which came to be known as "ethnic cleansing." (For the definition of "ethnic cleansing" that was used, see The Final Report of the UN Commission of Experts [1994], Annex IV, paragraph 2.)

Ten thousand people were killed. Efforts by international negotiators helped bring the war to an end in December 1992, without, however, challenging the "Republic of Serbian Krajina" that had been erected by the Croatian Serbs on the territory they had seized. UN peacekeepers were deployed and the war zone remained divided until summer 1995, when Croatian military forces, in a massive offensive dubbed "Operation Storm," retook the Serb-controlled territory. Looting and burning tens of thousands of Serbian homes and killing civilians, the Croatian units forced more than 150,000 Croatian Serbs to flee their ancestral homelands, in what constituted the single largest act of ethnic cleansing during the entire war in Bosnia (cf. Prosecutor v. Gotovina, Indictment, June 8, 2001, paragraphs 17…20).

The war in Bosnia-Herzegovina (Yugoslavia's most ethnically diverse republic, with approximately 40 percent Muslims, 33 percent Serbs, and 12 percent Croats) began only a few months after the war in Croatia ended. It was a complex, vicious conflict that lasted more than three years and resulted in the death of as many as 200,000 people, including many civilians. Among the armed factions engaged in the conflict were Bosnian Serbs, Bosnian Muslims, Bosnian Croats, regular army and paramilitary forces from Croatia and Serbia, mercenaries, United Nations troops, and NATO soldiers. As in Croatia, but on a much larger scale, atrocities were perpetrated widely and by all ethnic groups. These crimes included rape; massacres; the obliteration of villages, towns, and cities; and ethnic cleansing, when both Bosnian Serbs and Bosnian Croats attempted to remove each other and Muslims from areas they claimed for themselves.

In March 1992, shortly after the Bosnian referendum for independence (which was boycotted by most Bosnian Serbs), the residents of the capital city of Sarajevo were subjected to an ordeal that lasted until the war ended

in December 1995. Part of the city was controlled by Serb forces, who also occupied most of the mountains that surrounded it. The part of the city not controlled by the Serbs was essentially cut off from the outside world, and its inhabitants suffered from deprivation of food, water, heat, and other necessities. Only the provision of humanitarian aid by the United Nations,

aggression. At the same time, it was evident that the Muslim enclaves could not continue to exist permanently in the midst of Serbian territory without receiving external help. The safe areas were places of extreme suffering, as the desperate refugees were subjected to frequent shelling, as well as shortages of food, medical supplies, and other necessities caused by Serb refusal to allow UN aid convoys to reach the areas (Rijsdijk, 2002).

In this situation, the Serbs committed the largest massacre in Europe since World War II. It took place in the safe area of Srebrenica, where approximately 40,000 people had eked out a bare existence, many since the spring of 1992. Encountering no significant resistance from either the Muslim fighters, who tried to flee the town into Muslim-controlled areas, or the tiny contingent of Dutch UN soldiers responsible for protecting the safe area, the Serbs entered Srebrenica on July 11, 1995.

On July 13, women, children, and elderly people were put on buses and driven to the front line, to Muslim-controlled territory. Within 30 hours, the Bosnian Serb army deported more than 20,000 people from the enclave „ but not the •battle-age Ž men. Instead, between July 13 and 19, more than 7000 thousand boys and men, mostly civilians, were systematically slaughtered in a carefully planned operation. Thousands were carried on buses to execution sites where they were murdered with automatic weapons and machine guns. After the mass shooting, killers walked among the corpses, looking for survivors, who they then shot with their pistols. After the slaughter, trucks were brought in to collect the bodies and haul them to mass graves.

The so-called safe area of Srebrenica had fallen without a single shot fired by its international protectors; in fact, the UN soldiers observed the deportations and supplied the fuel for the buses used by the Bosnian Serb army. A few days later, after the news about the events of Srebrenica began to spread in the international community, the Bosnian Serbs took another safe area, Zepa „ again, without encountering any serious international opposition. This safe area fell on July 25, two weeks after the Serbs had announced their plan to conquer it. Up to 2000 men of fighting age were in danger of experiencing the same fate as their compatriots in Srebrenica, but the Croatian offensive in the Krajina forced the Serbs to withdraw troops from Zepa (UN Commission of Experts, 1994 paragraphs 394).

Essential Facts behind the Conflict

Some observers, including world political leaders who wanted to avoid direct forms of intervention, suggested that •ancient hatreds Ž stemming from centuries of conflict in the region were responsible for the outbreak of war and its barbarity. For example, in her Pulitzer Prize-winning exposé of what she calls U.S. President Bill Clinton•s administration•s •ungainly wiggle campaign to avoid calling the events in [Bosnia]

genocideŽ. Samantha Power (2002) quotes Clinton•s Secretary of State Warren Christopher as follows: ••The hatred between all three groups is almost unbelievable. It•s almost terrifying, and it•s centuries old. That dhriD 0.

Germans and Italians. The multiethnic Communist Partisans, under the leadership of Tito, fought for three years against the Axis forces, and became the ultimate victors, taking over leadership of the county after the war. In addition to fighting against Axis forces, the Chetniks and Partisans engaged in a civil war against each other, which the Partisans won. Finally, the Croatian •Ustasha Ž regime of Ante Pavelic ruled the so-called Independent State of Croatia, which at that time included large parts of Bosnia and parts of Serbia, as well as Croatia. Pavelic enthusiastically allied with Hitler and patterned his regime after Nazi Germany, from the official policy of racism to the details of uniforms.

The Independent State of Croatia willingly cooperated with the Nazi •Final Solution Ž against Jews and Gypsies, but went beyond it, launching a campaign of genocide against Serbs in •greater Croatia Ž The Ustasha, like the Nazis whom they emulated, established concentration camps and death camps. The most infamous of them was Jasenovac, in which captured Serbs were worked to death, starved, tortured, and killed. Between 1941 and 1945, more than 180,000 Serbs were deported, approximately 250,000 forcibly converted to Catholicism from Orthodox Christian faiths, and more than 300,000 murdered (Lampe, 2000 pp. 210…14).

Unlike Tito, who had not encouraged commemoration of this dark chapter in Yugoslav history, Milosevic used the government-controlled Serbia media to revive memories and suggest to Serbs that genocide against them was possible again. (cf. Milosevic, Kosovo Case, Transcripts, September 26, 2002 p. 10216 et seq.) Graphic documentaries of the Ustasha genocide „ including many photographs of mutilated corpses „ were broadcast on Serbian television. Mass graves of Serb victims of the Ustasha were exhumed and the bones ceremoniously reburied. Provocative, propagandistic books and articles on the genocide were also published. Additionally, academics were sent into areas of Croatia with high populations of Serbs to lecture on the past genocide.

At the same time that Milosevic was resurrecting traumatic memories of Serb victimization under the Ustasha, Croatian President Tudjman was •rehabilitating Ž the Ustasha regime. In an important speech in February 1990, Tudjman referred to the Independent State of Croatia as •an expression of the historical aspirations of the Croatian people Ž (quoted in Stitkovac, 1999 p. 155). His government also renamed streets and squares after leaders of the genocidal regime and selected, for the official insignia of the newly independent nation, a coat of arms very similar to that of the former Ustasha government. Tudjman, an academic historian, published a book in which he denied that the Ustasha regime had been guilty of genocide and drastically lowered the estimates of Serbs killed by the Ustasha. These actions, combined with new laws disadvantageous to Serbs in Croatia, fanned the flames of fear and anger.

Thus, not •ancient hatreds Ž but the deliberate exploitation of the traumas of the recent past by two skillful, 7022 0 TD 0 Tc (52nt)]TJ /F6 1 p

The prosecution at the ICTY has since charged more than 20 persons, all Serbs, with the crime of genocide. Goran Jelisic and Dusko Sikirica, both in leadership positions at Serb detention camps, have been found not guilty on this charge (while being convicted for crimes against humanity and war crimes), as they were found to have lacked the requisite genocidal intent. Conversely, on August 2, 2001 Bosnian Serb General Radislav Krstic was found guilty of genocide for his role in the mass executions at Srebrenica, constituting the first genocide conviction by an international tribunal in Europe (Prosecutor v. Krstic, 2001). With the Krstic judgment under appeal, it remains to be seen how the ICTY ultimately will classify the Bosnian war. So far, only cases against suspects of the executioner rank (i.e., persons involved in camps and military operations) have been concluded, while those responsible for the overall conduct such as Milosevic and Radovan Karadzic, the political leader of the Bosnian Serbs, still have to be judged for their role in Bosnia. Notwithstanding these questions, it can be concluded that the ICTY has indicted or convicted some of the major war criminals of all ethnic parties to the Bosnian conflict and thus contributed much to the restoration of peace in the region and to a clearer understanding of the legal definition of genocide. (cf. Mennecke and Markusen, 2003, pp. 310 et seq.)

Largely unobserved by the general public, the International Court of Justice (ICJ), the highest judicial organ of the United Nations, is also the forum for legal proceedings on charges of genocide allegedly committed in the Former Yugoslavia. The ICJ addresses, however, not the criminal responsibility of individuals, but exclusively questions of state conduct; that is, whether a state has violated rules of international law, such as, for example, the prohibition against genocide. In one case filed in March 1993, Bosnia claimed that the Muslim population of Bosnia was victim of a genocidal campaign organized and supported by Serbia.[3] However, almost ten years after Bosnia asked the ICJ to determine whether Yugoslavia was legally responsible for genocide, the Court has still not issued a judgment. This enormous delay is due both to the successful tactics displayed by Serbia and to repeated requests by both parties to extend the time limits for submitting the written pleadings. An eventual decision could provide for a thorough assessment of the question as to whether the criteria of the UN Genocide Convention were met in Bosnia „ agreeing with, or possibly dissenting from, findings of the ICTY. It could also address the critical question of compensation for the victims of the mass atrocities in Bosnia.

In addition to these international efforts, several nations have conducted trials of individuals from the former Yugoslavia and have charged them with genocide. German courts, for example, have conducted a number of such cases, leading to three convictions (Ambos and Wirth, 2001,

p. 769). In the Former Yugoslavia, itself, the legal system is slowly recovering from the turmoil of war, while problems such as observing fair trial guarantees and prohibiting ethnic discrimination remain. The ICTY, supported by the UN Security Council, intends to defer more and more cases involving lower-ranking suspects to the local courts in order to be able to fulfill its mandate by 2008439 0 TD 0.015951 Tc G-0.0069 Tc 0 Tw F3 1 Tf

Politically, the relations between the two •entitiesŽ established at Dayton „ the Muslim-Croat Federation, which occupies 51 percent of the territory of Bosnia-Herzegovina, and Republika Srpska, the Serb entity that occupies the remaining 49 percent „ are strained, and cooperation is minimal. The Bosnian elections of October 2002 further darkened the prospects for cooperation between the two units, as nationalistic parties were able to increase their number of mandates considerably. (Kovac and Katana, 2002). During the Yugoslav presidential election campaign in September 2002, then Yugoslav President Vojislav Kostunica expressed his view of the Bosnian federation and spoke of the Republika Srpska as a •member of the family which is dear and close to me, temporarily separated, but always ours, in our heartsŽ (cf. Radio Free Europe/Radio Liberty, 2002.)

While large parts of Sarajevo and other cities have been rebuilt, the countryside is littered with the ruins of hundreds of villages and countless destroyed homes. Even worse, hundreds of thousands of Bosnians who fled the violence have not yet returned, mainly because the local authorities cannot guarantee their safety. Unemployment is extremely high, illicit work booms, organized crime thrives, and the recruitment for public service positions is still largely based on ethnic and religious bias. Many educated people seek to leave for better opportunities and a more secure future, creating a •brain drainŽ that further weakens prospects for economic and social recovery in the region.

Another enduring challenge to post-war Bosnia is that, despite mass atrocities and human rights violations on the scale experienced in Bosnia, victims and perpetrators will have to live together. The former safe areas of Srebrenica and Zepa, for example, form „ since the end of the war „ part of the Republika Srpska. Srebrenica, whose population prior to the war was 73 percent Muslim, today includes a little over 100 Muslim families. For the annual commemoration ceremonies for the massacre of July 1995, other Muslims do visit the site „ but only when accompanied by a strong police force to ensure their safety. The first 600 identified victims were buried at Srebrenica in March 2003, attended by 15,000 people and under protection of 1800 police troops and NATO forces. A 2002 UN report stated that the town •remains the area that is the most tragic emotonally, unreconstructed physically and devastated economically in the entire countryŽ (UN Secretary-General, 2002, paragraph 22).

At the same time, in September 2002, the Bosnian Serb authorities issued a report contending that there never were mass executions, that a large number of the victims were members of the Bosnian Muslim army who were killed during the fighting, and that many of the victims were probably counted twice (Katana, 2002, p.). Other examples demonstrating lasting difficulties in coming to terms with the past are the popular

support wartime leaders such as Karadzic and Mladic still enjoy among Bosnian Serbs, the very mixed perception the Milosevic trial receives in Bosnia, the persisting lack of Serbian (Tj /F6 1 Tf252j /F3 28 2 2f 0.4967 0 TD F3 1

man, and then Brano came too. And I said, •Why don•t we investigate and see whether this man actually did what he said?Ž „ to save him, and they said as one that they didn•t want to have any witnesses.

Q: Was that man executed?
A: Yes. I think Vlastimir Golijan killed him.

Q: Now, Mr. Erdemovic, did you see Brano Gojkovic order the bus drivers, who were transporting these prisoners to the Branjevo farm, to do anything?
A: Yes. After the second bus, or the first „ I don•t know exactly „ they started drinking and the spirits started to have their effect. And then Vlastimir and Brano were saying that the drivers could also be witnesses, and I know that one of the drivers did shoot at a man and Brano gave him a gun to do that. He shot at a man.

Q: Shot at him or killed him?
A: He shot at him. Now, whether that man died straight away, I don•t know, I can•t remember, I can•t say. But he did shoot at him.

Account 2

Witness R admitted to participating in a mass killing of Kosovar Albanian civilians, including children, in March 1999, as part of a Serb campaign of ethnic cleansing against Albanians. Witness R is being questioned by an attorney for the Office of the Prosecutor in the trial of Milosevic. The testimony was given on September 6, 2002, and is excerpted from pages 9,763 through 9,782 of the transcript.

Q: And during that time period between the 9th of September, 1998, and the 10th of June, 1999, were you ever involved, personally involved, in field operations including military operations?
A: Yes. I did take part on several occasions.
[Note : Ellipses indicate the testimony has been deleted for editorial reasons.]

Q: And what „ briefly, what in fact happened and when did it occur? When did this operation take place?
A: That military operation took place „ I think it was in December. And we were told that we would be going to demonstrate our might. But when we arrived at the village, we saw that there was no demonstration of might or power of any kind. And when we came to Ljubizda Has, we passed through the village, and we went beyond the village and we set up an ambush there. And they told us that anybody coming into the village was to be shot at. And we remained there the whole day until nightfall.

And in the evening, we withdrew to the first houses in the village. And it is from these houses that we were told „ we were told to expel the people from houses. And after that, when the people had been expelled from their houses, we took our positions in the houses and spent the night there. In the morning, once again we went back to our positions at the ambush spot, and we stayed there until the following night. And after that, we withdrew once again and went back to barracks.

f

Q: All right. Can you describe, sir, in a brief way, if you would, what happened with respect to the village of Jeskovo?

A: In the village of Jeskovo, we were placed on the alert sometime around 3:00, after midnight. We did not know exactly where we were going. The next day, when they transferred us by trucks to above the l9c (t)Tc 0

Q: How old was your sister?
A: I will have to calculate it.

Q: Was she older or younger than you?
A: She was four years my senior.

Q: In 1992 were you still in school?
A: Yes.

Q: What grade were you in?
A: Second grade of secondary school.

Q: Where did you go to school?
A: The Nikola Tesla Secondary School centre in Foca.

Q: Is that the same school that•s located in the Aladza neighbourhood of Foca?
A: Yes.

Q: Do you know when the war in Foca started?
A: I think it was on the 8th of April, though I•m not quite sure.

Q: At that time could you hear or see anything?
A: Yes. We could hear shooting, explosions, sometimes houses set on fire, and things like that.

Q: Did you see soldiers?
A: I didn•t see soldiers until roughly the 3rd of July.

Q: Before the 3rd of July, how did the war affect your life? Did you continue to go to school?
A: No. The school work was suspended, I think it was at the beginning of April.

Q: Were you able to continue living in your house?
A: For a very short time. Afterwards we had to hide in the woods.

Q: Why did you have to hide in the woods?
A: Out of fear that we would be killed or something like that.

Q: Did you feel that you were targeted because you were Muslims?
A: Yes.

Q: Who else was in the woods with you?
A: My family and two other families. That was at the beginning. Later, a short while before we were attacked, there were several families in one group.

Q: What ethnicity were all these people in the woods with you?

A: They were all Muslim.

Q: When was your village attacked?
A: On the 3rd of July, 1992.

Q: Do you recall what time of day it was?
A: I couldn•t tell the exact time, but it was about 6:00 in the morning. It was very early.

Q: Where were you when the village was attacked?
A: We were sleeping in a tent in the woods.

Q: What did you hear?
A: We heard shots.

Q: What did you do?
A: When we heard the shots there was panic, and the people started fleeing. Nobody knew where to go, in which direction. When the first man was hit or, rather, wounded, then we were swept by real panic.
ƒ.

Q: ƒ Did you see anyone else get hit?
A: Yes. I saw three persons who were shot. One was a man and two women.

Q: Do you know approximately how old the man was?
A: I don•t know exactly. About 50 maybe.

Q: What else did you see the soldiers do?
A: When they started shooting at us, we were fleeing, and they ran after us. Then they surrounded a group of us, and they beat the men, demanding that they tell them where the weapons were, where they had hidden the weapons and things like that.

Q: Were there any weapons with you in the woods?
A: No.

Q: Was your father one of the men being beaten?
A: Yes.

Q: What did the soldiers do then?
A: You mean after that?

Q: Yes.
A: They separated the men from the women and the children. They took us out of the woods to a meadow. It wasn•t far. Then they lined us up, and then they asked whether we had gold, money, and the like. Then in our tents they found quite a number of old photographs and documents,

and then they showed us those photographs, asking us wh

aiding and abetting to genocide „ not of directly committing genocide. The Appeals Chamber judges held that Krstic himself did not have the requisite genocidal intent, i.e., the intent to destroy the group of Bosnian Muslims in Eastern Bosnia. Instead he knew that he, with his actions, contributed to implementing a genocidal plan devised by others who were in the command of the Bosnian Serb Army. While some of the survivors may be dismayed with the fact that Krstic, one of the highest ranking officers involved at Srebrenica, was convicted only for aiding and abetting genocide, this very finding conveys an important, potentially preventive message. In similar scenarios in the future, military officers and cabinet members likely will know of the potential consequences of supporting a genocidal operation: they too could end up being convicted as accomplices to genocide. Due to this lesser degree of personal culpability Krstic•s sentence was reduced from 46 to 35 years in prison. The potential implications of this ruling are enormous „ both within the realm of international law, for the field of genocide studies, and in Bosnia and Herzegovina. The judgment also contains numerous significant findings that will require further research both in international law and within genocide studies. The Appeals Chamber continued, for example, to clarify the borderline between the crime of ethnic cleansing and genocide, pointing out that forcible transfers under certain circumstances can form part of a genocidal policy. Moreover, the judges proposed a new understanding as to which part of the attacked group must be affected in order for the legal definition of genocide to be met. The Appeals Chamber warned against overly focusing on the sheer number of victims, but suggest de taking into consideration whether the targeted part is in a particular way •emblematicŽ for the overall group.

Also regarding the process for reconciliation and truth-finding in Bosnia and Herzegovina, the Krstic Appeal judgment bears great potential. As of May 2004, Republika Srpska still has not issued the revised version of its initial report on what happened at Srebrenica in July 1995. In March 2003, the Bosnian Human Rights Chamber had ordered the Bosnian Serb authorities to redraft an earlier version which had belittled the massacres. After the Krstic Appeal judgment, this revision appears even more timely and needle9 0364D (765 -1.1429 TD 0.009TD 0.0029 Tc [(au009 g0 TD -0.02

Allen, Beverly (1996). Rape Warfare: The Hidden Genocide in Bosnia-Herzegovina and Croatia. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Ambos, Kai and Wirth, Steffen (2001). "Genocide and War Crimes Before German Criminal Courts," pp. 769…97. In Horst Fischer, Claus Kress, and Sascha Lüder (Eds.) International and National Prosecution of Crimes under International Law: Current Developments. Berlin: Berlin-Verlag Spitz.

Andelman, David. A. (1980). "Yugoslavia: The Delicate Balance," Foreign Affairs, 58(4)835…52.

Burg, Steven L. (1997). "Genocide in Bosnia-Herzegovina," pp. 424…33. In Samuel Totten, William S. Parsons, and Israel W. Charny (Eds.) Century of Genocide: Eyewitness Accounts and Critical Views. New York: Garland Publishing.

Burg, Steven L., and Shoup, Paul S. (1999). The War in Bosnia-Herzegovina: Ethnic Conflict and International Intervention. Armonk, NY: M.E. Sharpe.

Cigar, Norman (1995). Genocide in Bosnia: The Policy of "Ethnic Cleansing." College Station: Texas A&M University Press.

Fein, Helen (1990). "Genocide: A Sociological Perspective," Current Sociology, 38(1).

Fein, Helen (2000). "Civil Wars and Genocides: Paths and Circles," Human Rights Review, 1(3):49…61.

Honig, Jan Willem, and Both, Norbert (1996). Srebrenica: Record of a War Crime. London: Penguin Books.

Human Rights Watch (2001). The Milosevic Case: Questions and Answers "Is There an Anti-Serb Bias at the Tribunal? August. Available at www.hrw.org/press/2001/08/icty-q&a-0829.htm.

International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia (1995). Press Release, CC/PIO/026-E, The Hague, November 16, 1995.

Janicc, Mirna (2002). "Call for Bosnian Croat Policeman to be Tried by a Local Court," IWPR Tribunal Update 280. Available at www.iwpr.net.

Katana, Godana (2002). "Regional Reports: Bosnian Serbs Play Down Srebrenica," IWPR Tribunal Update 279. Available at www.iwpr.net

Klarin, Mirko (2002). "Courtside: Brdjanin," IWPR Tribunal Update 287. Available at www.iwpr.net.

Kovac, Janze, and Katana, Godana (2002). "Bosnia: Nationalists Prevail in Elections," Balkan Crisis Report 373. Available at www.iwpr.net.

Lampe, John R. (2000). Yugoslavia as History "Twice There Was a Country. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Lemarchand, René (2003). "Comparing the Killing Fields: Rwanda, Cambodia, and Bosnia," pp. 141…73. In Steven L. B. Jensen (Ed.) Genocide: Cases, Comparisons, and Contemporary Debates. Copenhagen: The Danish Center for Holocaust and Genocide Studies.

Markusen, Eric, and Mirkovic, Damir (1999). "Understanding Genocidal Killing in the Former Yugoslavia: Preliminary Observations," pp. 35…67. In Craig Summers and Eric Markusen (Eds.) Collective Violence: Harmful Behavior in Groups and Governments. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield.

Markusen, Eric, and Mennecke, Martin (in press). "Genocide in Bosnia and Herzegovina," In Samuel Totten (Ed.) Genocide at the Millennium "A Critical Bibliographic Review. Volume 5. New Brunswick, NJ: Transition Publishers.

Melson, Robert (1996). "Paradigms of Genocide: The Holocaust, the Armenian Genocide, and Contemporary Mass Destructions," Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Sciences, 548:156…68.

Mennecke, Martin, and Markusen, Eric (2003). "The International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia and the Crime of Genocide," pp. 293…359. In Steven L. B. Jensen (Ed.) Genocide: Cases, Comparisons, and Contemporary Debates. Copenhagen: The Danish Center for Holocaust and Genocide Studies.

Netherlands Institute for War Documentation (2002). Srebrenica, a "Safe" Area "Reconstruction, Background, Consequences, and Analyses of the Fall of a Safe Area. Amsterdam: Boom Publishers de

introduced in the late 1980s and early 1990s by the new Yugoslav leader Slobodan Milosevic were a response to the perceived marginalization of Kosovo-Serbs and increased the political tensions in Kosovo considerably.

The international community, however, chose to refrain from interfering in this explosive situation. The decision not to present an outline for the future of the Kosovo at the Bosnian peace talks in Dayton, Ohio, in November 1995 proved to be a detrimental omission, as it weakened the position of moderate leaders such as Ibrahim Rugova and radicalized the Albanians. Soon after, by 1997, an armed separatist movement, the so-called Kosovo Liberation Army (KLA), began to commit attacks primarily on Serb police forces, but also on Kosovar "collaborators" (see, for example, Prosecutor v. Fatmir Limaj et al., 2003).

The Serb response towards the Kosovar opposition and isolated acts of terror by the KLA was frequently indiscriminate and disproportionate, even if officially aimed exclusively at KLA fighters and their strongholds. In a campaign that resembled the war in Bosnia, Serb forces attacked villages, killed and brutalized inhabitants, and burned down houses in order to force them to leave (Prosecutor v. Milosevic, Pre-Trial Brief, paras. 15, 30…31, 52). By the end of 1998, approximately 3,000 Kosovo Albanians had been killed and more than 300,000 expelled from their homes (Power, 2002, p. 465). In 1999, the Serb campaign to create a Serb majority in Kosovo by means of ethnic cleansing continued, only temporarily put on hold when international negotations or the presence of international observers required it.

In the course of the conflict, approximately 800,000 of the roughly 2 million Kosovo Albanians fled the province to neighboring countries, while several hundred thousands more became internally displaced persons (Krieger, 2001, p. 14). The number of Albanians killed continues to be unclear. Non-governmental organizations" (NGOs") estimates range between 5000 and 30,000 victims, while Milosevic has been charged with responsibility for the murder of more than 900 Kosovo Albanians (Prosecutor v. Milosevic, Indictment, para. 66 and annexes). The figure of more than 100,000 victims, which was indirectly suggested by NATO officials and Western politicians in the context of justifying the military intervention that started in March 1999, seems to be greatly exaggerated.

The Response of the International Community

The international community seriously turned to the Kosovo issue only in the fall of 1998. In October of that year, the Serbs and Albanians agreed to a verification mission of the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE) in order to establish an enduring truce. Sent originally as an impartial, mutually accepted observer, the OSCE mission soon was perceived by the Serbs as biased towards the Albanians since the KLA was

not hindered from taking advantage of the international presence when it renewed its military activities.

It was in this context that the OSCE brought the "massacre of Racak" in which Serb forces had allegedly cold-bloodedly executed 45 villagers on January 15, 1999 "to the attention of the international media. Despite Serb efforts to explain the deaths as resulting from battles between KLA and police

Rudolf Scharping (1999), for example, stated that "[t]he genocide has begun" (quoted in Associated Press, March 29, np.), and his British counterpart George Robertson declared that "[t]hese air strikes have one purpose only: to stop the genocidal violence" (quoted in Dunne and Droslak, 2001, p. 35)

Does the end – the humanitarian intervention on behalf of the victims – just ify the inaccurate use of means (e.g., the use of the label "genocide")? Labeling the conduct of the Serb forces in Kosovo genocidal undoubtedly smoothed the way for armed intervention without the requisite UN Security Council mandate and thus emphasized the potential of the term "genocide" – not least in light of the fruitless discussions at the United Nations in 1994, in wake of the Rwanda genocide. After all, the aerial attacks on Serbia were carried out without a mandate of the UN Security Council and thus constituted prima facie a violation of the prime rule of international law – that is, of the prohibition of the use of force. At the same time, other massive human rights violations, such as crimes against humanity, deserve similar concern and condemnation and armed intervention; but deeming them all genocide is neither wise nor accurate. Indeed, the political utilization of the heavily connotated term "genocide" in relation to the Kosovo conflict reinforces ongoing concerns about the abuse and trivialization of the term.

References

Amnesty International (1999). Amnesty Welcomes Milosevic Indictment, EUR 70/81/98, May 27, available at www.amnesty.org.

Dunne, Tim, and Droslak, Daniela (2001). "Genocide: Knowing What It Is that We Want to Remember, or Forget, or Forgive", pp. 27–46. In Ken Booth (Ed.) The Kosovo Tragedy: The Human Rights Dimensions. London: Frank Cass Publishers.

Final Report of the Independent International Commission on Kosovo (2000). Available at www.kosovocommission.org.

Human Rights Watch (2001). Under Orders: War Crimes in Kosovo. Available at www.hrw.org/reports/2001/kosovo.

International Helsinki Federation (1999). Genocide and Ethnic Cleansing in Kosovo. March 30, available at www.ihf-hr.org/appeals/990330.htm.

Jones, Adam (2000). "Kosovo Orders of Magnitude", IDEA – A Journal of Social Issues, 5(1), available at www.ideajournal.com/joneskosovo.html.

Krieger, Heike (Ed.) (2001). The Kosovo Conflict and International Law: An Analytical Documentation, 1974–99. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Mennecke, Martin, and Markusen, Eric (2003). "The International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia and the Crime of Genocide", pp. 293–359. In Steven L.B. Jensen (Ed.) Genocide: Cases, Comparisons, and Contemporary Debates. Copenhagen: The Danish Center for Holocaust and Genocide Studies.

OSCE Report (2002). 9th Assessment of the Situation of Ethnic Minorities in Kosovo, May, available at www.osce.org/kosovo

Physicians for Human Rights (1999). War Crimes in Kosovo. Boston: Author.

Power, Samantha (2002). "A Problem from Hell": America and the Age of Genocide. New York: Basic Books.

Prosecutor v. Fatmir Limaj, et al. Case No. IT-03-66. Initial Indictment, January 24, 2003. Available at the ICTY Web site.

454 € Martin Mennecke

Prosecutor v. Krsti

than 200,000 people, mostly civilians, had been killed. Thousands of others had been raped, tortured, or deported.

In 1994, the Museum held the annual Holocaust Remembrance Day ceremony in the Rotunda of the U.S. Capitol on April 6. Around the time that the ceremony was concluding in the early afternoon in Washington, it was evening in central Africa. A surface-to-air missile hit the plane carrying Rwanda•s Hutu president, Juvenal Habyarimana, as it prepared to land at Kigali•s airport. The assassination was taken as a signal by extremist Hutu to launch a calculated campaign of genocide that very nearly succeeded in liquidating the Tutsi minority. From 500,000 to 800,000 people perished in 100 days. As many as three out of every four Tutsis living in Rwanda were exterminated in that brief time (Human Rights Watch, 1999, pp. 15…16).

Sometime during those 100 days, the Holocaust Memorial Museum received its 2 millionth visitor.

Acceptable Once, Acceptable Again

In the late 1980s, the writer Cynthia Ozick criticized what she called •an urge *f* in the direction of redemption Ž that she perceived in discussions of the Holocaust. •Let us get some good out of this, we tell ourselves, let us look for spots of goodness on the rump of evil, Ž she said. She deemed that view unacceptable. •We cannot pry redemption out of events that are in their nature not amenable to redemption, Ž she asserted. • The only thing that the Holocaust can give birth to is further images of itself. •Never Again• is not the message we get from the Holocaust. The message we get is that the Holocaust will replicate itself *f* . What was acceptable once will be acceptable again Ž (Ozick, 1988, pp. 278, 280…81).

The juxtaposition of the opening of the Holocaust Memorial Museum with Bosnia and Rwanda seemed to vindicate Ozick•s pessimism. It certainly made clear that remembering the Holocaust by itself did not have any discernible effect on responses to genocide. As the journalist David Rieff (1996) acidly observed, • The failure to intervene decisively in Bosnia suggested that the rhetoric of •Never Again• associated with Holocaust remembrance meant nothing more than that •Never Again• would German skill Jews in Europe in the 1940 Ž (p. 27).

Wiesel and the President•s Commission on the Holocaust had confronted this issue in 1979 when they first recommended the creation of a national Holocaust memorial. The commission told President Jimmy Carter that •of all the issues it addressed, none was as perplexing or as urgent as the need Ž to prevent future genocide. Acknowledging how little appeared to have been learned since the Holocaust, they believed that combating future genocide had to be an integral part of any memorial for Holocaust victims. And it was not just because they felt that such a

memorial could make a difference, that remembrance of the past could influence the course of the future. They also said that •a memorial unresponsive to the future would *f* violate the memory of the pastŽ Truly honoring the memory of the victims, in other words, meant working for a world where what was acceptable once would no longer be acceptable.

In addition to calling for a museum as part of a •livingŽ memorial, the commission recommended the formation of a Committee on Conscience (COC) that could •alert the national conscienceŽ to contemporary genocide (President•s Commission on the Holocaust, 1979). Congress acted in 1980 by chartering the U.S. Holocaust Memorial Council. The authorizing legislation directed the Council to construct the proposed museum and carry out the presidential commission•s other recommendations. But the recommendation for a Committee on Conscience was set aside as attention turned to building the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum.

Bosnia and RwB

The expansion of slave trading provoked international calls for its suppression. Such was the lucrative nature of the trade, however, that attempts by Ali•s successors to rein it in met with limited success. But discontent with those attempts among the northern Sudanese who benefited from the slave trade was one source of support for the religiously inspired revolution that ended Turco-Egyptian control of Sudan (Holt and Daly, 2000). Around the same time that the British Empire was supplanting Ottoman rule in Egypt, a Sudanese religious leader named Muhammad Ahmad announced that he was the Mahdi, chosen by God to bring justice to the earth. In January 1885 the Mahdi•s forces completed their conquest of most of Egyptian-ruled Sudan by capturing Khartoum. Although the Mahdi himself died shortly thereafter, his followers ruled in northern Sudan until 1898, when they were deposed by an Anglo-Egyptian army.

Neither the Turco-Egyptian regime nor the Mahdist state fully established their control of Sudan•s periphery in the east, west and, most especially, the south. The British, ostensibly ruling Sudan jointly with the Egyptians in an arrangement known as the •Condominium,Ž enjoyed more success, eventually establishing effective administrative control over all of Sudan and delineating its modern borders. But British rule had the ultimate effect of accentuating the differences between the north and south. The British largely closed the south to northern traders and officials; created a southern military force called the Equatorial Corps; allowed Christian missionaries to set up schools in the south; and discouraged the speaking and learning of Arabic, while promoting English as a common language among the many southern ethnic groups.

Though Christianity and the English language provided a limited basis for establishing a common southern identity, the British policy of Indirect Rule, which relied on local tribal rulers and which was followed for most of the Condominium, reinforced southern divisions. Most development resources were directed to the north, so the south remained much poorer and less developed.

When Sudan gained self-government in 1954, followed by full independence in 1956, political power and the nation•s wealth were controlled by northerners who saw themselves and Sudan as part of the Arab world, though they were only a plurality of the country•s population. On the periphery of the north were groups who had embraced Islam, but not an Arab identity. In the south, the people still possessed a strong cultural memory that associated the Arab northerners with the slave trade that the British had successfully suppressed. They retained an African identity.

The Sudanese Arab elite envisioned a country unified culturally, linguistically, and religiously under its leadership, aspirations that were imbued with a sense of racial and cultural superiority. Southerners, on the

other hand, wanted to preserve their Africanness and their diversity. As the British hastened to depart, a rapid process of •Sudanization Ž replaced British administrators in the south with northerners. Little heed was given to southern views on the political structure of the new country or to southern calls for a federal system. The result was what the scholar and former Sudanese diplomat Francis Deng (1995) has called a •war of visions Ž

This war of visions has defined Sudan for the past five decades, with only a brief interlude of relative peace. An agreement negotiated in Addis Ababa, Ethiopia, in 1972 established regional autonomy for the south and provided for southern rebels to be integrated into the national armed forces as part of a Southern Command. But 11 years later, the military dictator who s

the past few years, Khartoum has tried to secure the oil fields with a vicious scorched earth campaign that has laid waste to a broad swath of territory (Amnesty International, 2000; Veney, 2000; Hicker, 2000; Christian Aid, 2001; Gagnon and Ryle, 2001).

Progress Toward a Just Peace?

To •alert the national conscience‚ to the threat of genocide in Sudan, the Committee on Conscience has undertaken an ongoing series of actions, including publishing an educational brochure, over 150,000 of which have been distributed; presenting a display in the Museum of text, pictures and artifacts that alerts Museum visitors to the genocide warning; publishing an op-ed in the Washington Post; hosting numerous public programs; and focusing on Sudan on the COC•s Web site, www.committeeonconscience.org. Reports from the field indicate word of these activities has been a source of hope for the beleaguered in Sudan. Comments from various government officials (who must be left unnamed) suggest that they have helped frame and sustain the debate over policy options.

Two activities bear particular mention. In February 2001, the COC hosted a policy forum on building a just peace in Sudan. Participants included U.S. Senator Bill Frist and U.S. Representative Frank Wolf, both of whom had long been speaking out on Sudan, as well as a number of other present and former (and as it turned out, future) government officials, scholars, and activists. The discussion focused on the report of a task force organized by the Center for Strategic and International Studies (CSIS), which itself had included a broad array of participants (Deng and Morrison, 2001). By hosting the discussion in the nation•s Holocaust memorial, the COC helped establish a moral context for grappling with a seemingly intractable situation.

Sudan was also prominently mentioned at the April 2001 Holocaust remembrance ceremony in the Capitol Rotunda, which was attended by the recently inaugurated President George W. Bush. Rabbi Irving Greenberg, then the chairman of the USHMM•s board, stressed the connection between remembering the Holocaust and speaking out on contemporary genocide, and highlighted the COC•s genocide warning for Sudan. Vice-Chair Ruth Mandel also drew the new president•s attention to the genocide warning. •It is because Holocaust remembrance imposes a permanent moral obligation to speak out against potential genocide,‚ she said, •that the Committee on Conscience most recently has sought to focus on the threat of genocide in Sudan.‚

President Bush already had heard about Sudan from others, particularly his conservative Christian supporters. Christian leaders such as Franklin Graham, who delivered the prayer at President Bush•s inauguration, had been working to call attention to Sudanese suffering, because many of

those targeted by the NIF regime are Christians. The president•s attendance at the Days of Remembrance ceremony, and his tour of the Holocaust Memorial Museum the evening before, provided an additional context, a new moral frame, in which he could view Sudan.

In a major speech two weeks later, President Bush declared that some crimes are so monstrous that the American conscience has to assert itself. •Such crimes,Ž he said, •are being committed today by the government of SudanŽ He committed his administration •to speak and act for as long as the persecution and atrocities in the Sudan lastŽ He also announced the appointment of USAID chief Andrew Natsios as special humanitarian coordinator for Sudan. He later appointed John Danforth, a former senator from Missouri, as his special envoy for peace in Sudan.

Senator

The questions that Linenthal raises are real, and they are difficult. Translating the moral imperative of responding to genocide or threats of genocide into practical and effective policy is not easily done. And even the predicate step „ translating the articulation of the moral principle into a commitment to find ways to act „ is not automatic, as the example of Bosnia illustrates. President Clinton easily articulated the moral principle, but it does not appear to have been taken as guidance in formulating Bosnia policy.

As frustrating, even heartbreaking, as that is, it is not really so surprising. Few if any broad moral principles have automatically translated into a commitment to act. After all, for almost a century after the founders of the United States of America invoked the self-evident truth that •all men are created equal,Ž slavery was legal in the United States, and for another century that principle was vitiated by Jim Crow and the legal fiction of •separate but equal.Ž Articulation of the principle did not automatically change reality. But articulation of the principle over time was essential, because appeals to the principle were a vitally important part of the struggle to change reality.

So the fact that the opening of the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, Wiesel•s appeal to President Clinton, and President Clinton•s own invocation of memory did not have a demonstrable affect on policy in Bosnia is not cause for despair, or for abandoning the basic belief that remembering and studying the past can influence the course of the future. To the contrary, the fact that we are now confronting the failure to live up to the principle that we cannot remain indifferent to genocide is cause for hope.

That principle is gaining greater acceptance in the United States, both among the public and among policymakers. The example of Sudan suggests that the principle is starting to be taken into account, however haltingly, in the formulation of policy, which it was not during the Holocaust, nor in Bosnia or Rwanda. A U.S. president who came into office expressing skepticism about U.S. responsibility to respond to genocide has insisted that sometimes the American conscience must assert itself and has backed up that insistence with the resources and prestige of the U.S. government. Two major, bipartisan commissions established to review U.S. foreign policy at the end of the 20th century independently arrived at the conclusion that preventing and responding to genocide ranked among important U.S. •national interests.Ž (Commission on America•s National Interest, 2000, p. 6; U.S. Commission on National Security in the 21st Century, 2000, p. 8). The Commission on America•s National Interest, for example, listed preventing genocide as one of nine •extremely important national interests,Ž defined as •conditions that, if compromised, would severely prejudice but not strictly imperil Ž U.S. security and well-being.

And through the U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum, with its location adjacent to the National Mall, within sight of the Washington Monument, the Jefferson Memorial, and the Lincoln Memorial, the principle that we must not be indifferent to genocide has been placed in the metaphorical heart of the United States.

Ozick•s challenge remains „ t he possibility that this is simply another urge in the direction of finding redemption in a horror that is beyond redemption. The darkness into which so many disappeared is so utter, so black, that her challenge is not easily dismissed. But she goes beyond acknowledging the depth of that darkness and accords to it an inevitability that renders those in the present powerless, stripping for all time any choice. Certainly, what has happened once

CHAPTER 17
The Intervention and Prevention of Genocide: Where There Is the Political Will, There Is a Way

SAMUEL TOTTEN

Introduction

As is readily apparent from the mass killing fields that stained the globe throughout—and, indeed, late into—the 20th century, there is a dire need for an efficacious system of intervention and prevention of genocide. Although humanity is far from accomplishing the latter goal, progress has been made, and there is hope on the horizon. Such hope, though, will only become reality if there is the will to act early and effectively when genocide early warning signals are first detected.

Confronting Genocide

Over the course of the past century, many perpetrators of genocide have gone unfettered in their efforts to exterminate certain groups of people, while attempts to prevent or halt genocide have been, for the most part, unsuccessful. The terrible fact is, in more cases than not, when the world community did act, it was after a particular genocide had already begun; because of that, the murdered and the maimed already numbered in the tens of thousands, if not more.

Indeed, far too little has been done to intervene in ethnic strife and other types of conflict prior to the outbreak of genocide. Granted, it is not

a simple task to ascertain whether, for example, a civil war is creeping towards or has the potential to explode into a genocidal situation. Furthermore, in light of the plethora of violent conflict in the world, it is no small task to keep a hand on the pulse of such conflicts in order to ascertain the likelihood or possibility that any one of them is going to •go genocidal.Ž Also, not all extrajudicial killings or massacres of innocent victims culminate in genocide.

Many (scholars and activists, alike) have argued that in the Information Age it should be fairly easy to detect a genocidal situation in the making. Such individuals have pointed out that the 24-hour news coverage by such outlets as CNN, along with the daily coverage of world news by major newspapers and the Internet, provide ample windows of opportunity into ascertaining genocidal situations early on. Furthermore, they argue, the hundreds of nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) „ those whose focus, for example, is human rights, the plight of refugees, and conflict resolution „ that operate across the globe constitute an unofficial and quasi early warning system. Finally, as some have pointed out, there also exists sophisticated government surveillance (e.g., space-based satellites) systems that provide around-the-clock information on •hot spots.Ž across the globe. If only detecting genocide were as easy as it is often made out to be.

First, it must be noted that none of the aforementioned news sources have the mandate, let alone the means, to monitor, month-in and month-out, the day-to-day statements, decisions, actions, and reactions of human rights violators in order to ascertain the evolution of „ let alone the intentions behind „ such actions. Indeed, time and again, the media „ due, in part, to the way information is gathered „ have misinterpreted and misjudged the nature of mass slaughter. In fact, conflicting reports of the same situation by different media sources, humanitarian groups, and government officials have often confused the issue. The 1994 Rwanda genocide presents a classic example of the aforementioned situation. In The Limits of Humanitarian Intervention: Genocide in Rwanda, Kuperman (2001) reports:

> Starting on April 11, [1994,] just four days into the violence, news reports indicated that fighting in Rwanda had •diminished in intensity.Ž Three days later it was reported that •a strange calm reigns in downtown Kigali *[sic]*. The commander of Belgian peacekeeping it[s] 1 Tf 10.4995 0 0 ( )Tj /F6 1 Tf 0.291 t t i

> massacres in January 1991 and the February 1992 massacre at Bugesera, describing the involvement of military and local government officials. In some communities, Tutsis had been repeatedly attacked and the military had distributed arms to civilians who supported [President] Habyarimana *f*.
>
> So bad did the situation in Rwanda become that, in January 1993, a group of international human rights experts from ten countries collected testimony from hundreds of people, interviewed witnesses and the families of victims, and reviewed numerous official documents. In March 1993, a report was published revealing that in the previous two years those who held power in Rwanda had organized the killing of a total of 2,000 of its people, all Tutsi *f* (pp. 55…56).
>
> The word •genocideŽ was not used in the report, being considered too highly charged by some of the group•s authors, but a press release distributed with the report carried the headline: •Genocide and War Crimes in RwandaŽ
>
> *f* There was little international concern when the human rights report came out [italics added]. Only the Belgian government recalled its ambassador from Kigali for consultations, and the Rwandese ambassador in Brussels was told that Belgium would reconsider its economic and military aid unless steps were taken to rectify the situation. The French ambassador dismissed the massacres as rumors (p. 56).

Similarly, Kuperman (2001) notes that prior to the 1994 genocide in Rwanda

> *f* death lists containing hundreds of names came to light in the succeeding two years. In spring 1992, the Belgian embassy in Kigali reported an anonymous allegation of a •secret headquarters charged with exterminating the Tutsi of Rwanda to resolve definitively *f* the ethnic problem in Rwanda and to crush the domestic Hutu opposition.Ž In March 1993 an international human rights panel reported that most victims of sporadic massacres in Rwanda were killed because they were Tutsis. During the first week of December 1993 several ominous indications arose. A Belgian cable reported the Presidential Guard conducting paramilitary training of youths; a Rwandan journal reported weapons being distributed to militias; and the UN Assistance Mission to Rwanda (UNAMIR) received an anonymous but credible letter,

purportedly from leading moderate Rwandan army officers, warning of a •Machiavellian Mac

> The goal of early warning *[is]* proactive engagement in the earlier stages of potential conflicts or crises, to prevent or at least alleviate their more destructive expressions. The chances for successful, cost effective, preventive conflict peacebuilding and pre-emptive peacemaking initiatives *[are]* usually more cost-effective strategies than late attempts at crisis avoidance, containment (peacekeeping) and/or humanitarian assistance (as in Bosnia or Congo/Zaire). The former requires longer-term risk assessments, but even reliable short-term early warnings allow for more effective late-stage crisis management, facilitating advance planning and deployment of supplies and personnel (italics added) (p. 2).

Among some of the many situations an early warning system would need to monitor are: massive human rights violations; extreme nationalism, resulting in the scapegoating of, discrimination against, and ostracism of particular groups; • the exclusion of the victim from the universe of obligation Ž (Fein, 1990, p. 5); • pervasive racialistic ideologies and propaganda [endemic] in the nation-state • s society Ž (Porter, 1982, pp. 17…18); extreme political strife; internecine strife/civil war; state failure; food crises (Davies and Gurr, 1998, p. 3); mass exodus of refugees; mass internal displacement of citizens; • the possibility of retaliation for genocidal acts by kin of the victims of an earlier genocide Ž (Porter, 1982, pp. 17…18); and a total breaking off of communication/interaction with other nations, or the total closing of borders by a nation (e.g., such as the Khmer Rouge • s actions in Cambodia in 1975).

The • exclusion of the victim from the universe of obligation Ž might include, for example, any of the following: governmental actions that dehumanize or isolate groups of people from the body politic; threats of actions taken to commit • ethnic cleansing Ž (as in Bosnia-Herzegovina in the 1990s); and television, radio, or newspaper commentary in a country that systematically disparages, maligns, or attempts to ostracize a particular group (e.g., the Nazis • scurrilous comments on the radio and newspapers about Jews and others) or calls for the removal, harm, or destruction of a particular group of individuals (e.g., broadcasts calling for the destruction of the Tutsis on the Rwandan government-controlled radio prior to and during the 1994 Rwandan genocide, and the television commentary broadcast in the Former Yugoslavia during the 1990s during which both Slobodan Milosevic and Franjo Tudjman controlled the media and used them as propaganda tools to incite their followers against their declared • enemies Ž).

Tentativeness to Intervene

As noted earlier, over the past century or so most nations have been extremely tentative to undertake or even support humanitarian efforts to attempt to prevent genocide. Among the key factors impacting such tentativeness are the primacy of sovereignty, the concept of internal affairs, realpolitik, and the lack of political will.

The Issue of Sovereignty (and •Internal AffairsŽ): A Sticking Point that Is Undergoing a Metamorphosis of Sorts

Ever since the Treaty of Westphalia in 1648, state sovereignty has not only been a defining principle of interstate relations an

The precedent was thus set for conducting interventions in the face of potential or actual cases of genocide.

Certainly three other events that point to the shifting perception of sovereignty are the relatively recent establishment of the International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR), the International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia (ICTY), and the International Criminal Court. All three bodies, which were established by the United Nations, have the mandate to arrest and try individuals suspected of crimes against humanity, war crimes, and genocide. (For an in-depth and outstanding discussion of these and related matters, see The Responsibility to Protect by the International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty [and its supplementary volume, subtitled •Research, Bibliography, BackgroundŽ]. (International Development Research Centre, 2001)

Garnering the Political Will to Act in Order to Effectively Halt a Genocide

Without the willingness of an international body, a group of nations, or, at the very least, a single nation to act to prevent a genocide or intervene early on, not even the most sophisticated and most efficiently operated genocide early warning system will be of much, if any, use. Discussing various factors that complicate the issue of •political will,Ž Bruce Jentleson (1998), a professor of public policy and political science at Duke University, argues that:

> Even if early warning is achievable, there remains the problem of mustering the political will necessary to act. Although the essence of the strategic logic of preventive diplomacy is to act early, before the problem becomes a crisis, it is often the same lack of a sense of crisis that makes it more difficult to build the political support necessary for taking early action. In a traditional realist calculus, such situations have had difficulty passing muster both because the immediate tends to take priority over the potential, and because many contemporary ethnic conflicts involve areas which, as the U.S. ambassador to Somalia candidly put it, are •not a critical piece of real estate for anybody in the post-Cold War worldŽ (italics added) (p. 306).

The latter comment parallels the cavalier assertion by then U.S. Secretary of State James Baker regarding the Bush administration•s (1988…1992) position vis-à-vis the conflict brewing in the Former Yugoslavia: •We don•t have a dog in that fightŽ (quoted in Ronayne, 2001, p. 115).

And it is not just the United States that is guilty of such a stance „ and thus, inaction. As Donald Krumm (1998), Humanitarian Affairs Consultant with the U.S. Committee for Refugees, observes, •[W]hat is missing is the vision and sense of mission to redesign the international response system to move quickly to prevent or limit the damage resulting from conflictŽ (p. 248).

In the Executive Summary of the Organization of African Unity•s (OAU•s) •International Panel of Eminent Personalities (IPEP): Report on the 1994 Genocide in Rwanda and Surrounding EventsŽ, which was formed to investigate the Rwandan genocide and to contribute to the prevention of further conflicts in the region, it is reported that

> The Panel endorsed the finding of the earlier Carlsson Inquiry report that •the UN•s Rwandan failure was systemic and due to a lack of political willŽ (italics added) (p. 140). The Panel found that •[j]ust about every mistake that could be made was madeŽ (p. 140). Further, the Panel found that the UN did not perceive the UN Assistance Miss w

> consistent position, distorting historical precedent when convenient. Peacekeeping is not feasible in a raging war, nor is diplomacy, unless it is backed by military force. While UN personnel saved many lives, they also may have prolonged the conflict [italics added] (p. 187).

Elsewhere in his article, Gutman (1996) discusses the debacle of Srebrenica, one of the so-called UN "safe areas." In 1993

> after Srebrenica came under renewed attack [*sic*], the UN Security Council, under pressure by non-aligned states, responded in mid-April by proclaiming the town a "UN safe area." Three weeks later, the Security Council extended the concept to five other mostly Muslim cities: Tuzla, Gorazde, Zepa in the east, Bihac in the northwest, and Sarajevo. In June 1993, it authorized "necessary measures, including the use of force," to deter bombardment or armed incursion and to ensure the movement of humanitarian aid. This was classic "mission creep," with a vague statement of goals and no agreement on means. Secretary-General Boutros Boutros-Ghali said 34,000 troops would be needed to police the safe areas, but in the event, UN members promised 7,000 and only 3,400 were finally deployed, according to Human Rights Watch, quoting UN observers in the field. When foreign ministers met in Washington in late May, with diplomacy failed and the U.S. government backing off from its "lift and strike option," they endorsed the plan to protect "safe areas" as the alternative.
> But two years later, when Bosnia Serbs conquered Srebrenica, the "safe area" policy collapsed. All the flaws of the UN Mission combined to ensure

human rights infractions that often serve as catalysts to mass violence „ and, in certain cases, genocide. In other words, real progress must be made in addressing key structural changes that often serve as underlying factors of violent conflict. Not to do so is bound to result in situations where the international community is repeatedly •condemnedŽ „ Sisyphean-like „ to reacting to grave crises already under way in which hundreds, thousands, and tens of thousands or more may have already been killed.

Among some of the many systemic issues that need to be addressed are racism; rabid or racial anti-Semitism; other types of extreme prejudice or discrimination that •marksŽ a particular group of people as •otherŽ „ be they of a particular ethnic, racial, religious, national, or political group; international or national economic policies that exacerbate social tensions and fuel conflict (including harmful economic inequalities); and scarcity of resources (land, food, water, energy, etc.) and overpopulation, which, in turn, exacerbates the former.

Each and every one of these problems is complex and will require in-depth study in order to address them in an effective manner. To neglect them entirely, to address them in a piecemeal fashion, or to attempt to •patchŽ them with a band-aid approach is tantamount to inviting genocide to rear its ugly face yet again.

Progress and Hope on the Horizon

Despite all of the bad news, there is good news in that several real advances have been made in the battle against the perpetration of genocide. Six of the most notable are mentioned here. First, numerous institutes and think tanks have been established in various parts of the world whose goals are, in part, conducting research germane to the issues of intervention and prevention of genocide. Such organizations are based in such diverse locales as London; New York City; College Park, Maryland; and Washington, D.C.

Second, as Kuper (1985) noted „ and as mentioned above „ one of the most suceo4D -0.0186 Tw B02w [(on; N)27(e)]TJ /F6 1 Tf 2.651em /F

Notes

1. Among some of the earliest ideas put forth in regard to the intervention and prevention of genocide are the following: the establishment of a Genocide Bureau (or genocide early warning system) that would monitor "hot spots" around the globe that have the potential to explode into genocidal acts (Knight, 1982); a Committee on Genocide that would periodically report on situations that have the potential to degenerate into genocide or actual genocidal actions (Knight, 1982; Whitaker, 1985; Charny recommended that such a committee be "empowered to indict a State against which charges of genocide were raised" [1988, p. 25]); the convening of mass media professionals to examine and develop more effective ways of disseminating information about genocidal acts (Charny, 1982); a specially organized and systematic effort to collect first-person accounts of targeted groups, relief workers, and journalists in areas where a potential genocide was brewing (Totten, 1991); and the development of a World Genocidal Tribunal that would have the authority to try individuals as well as governments that have committed genocide (Kutner and Katin, 1984). Although some of the ideas were spawned as early as 1982, none of them have been implemented. It is, of course, one thing to conjure up such ideas and concepts, and something altogether different to implement them. The lack of implementation does no one any good, especially potential victims of genocide.

References

Alvarez, Alex (2001). Governments, Citizens, and Genocide: A Comparative and Interdisciplinary Approach. Bloomington and Indianapolis: Indiana University Press.

Charny, Israel W. (1982). Innovating Communications Initiatives for Human Rights. Paper presented to the Amnesty International Conference on Extra-Legal Executions. Amsterdam: mimeographed.

Crossette, Barbara (1998). "Dictators (and Some Lawyers) Tremble." The New York Times, November 29, pp. 1wk, 3wk.

Davies, John L., and Gurr, Ted Robert (1998). "Preventive Measures: An Overview," pp. 1…14. In John L. Davies and Ted Robert Gurr (Eds.) Preventive Measures: Building Risk Assessment and Crisis Early Warning Systems. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers.

Fein, Helen (1990). "Genocide: A Sociological Perspective." Current S

2.51 4.24 1.16 2.46 5.6

Index

A

•Abdal-lah, Taimour, 389…391
Abdul-Hamid, 67…68, 72
Abdul-Hamid II, 54
Adana massacre, 68, 76, 77…79
Addis Ababa
    Ethiopia, 459
Adlersburg, Sidonie, 192…193
Adrouni, Yevnig, 77, 83…86
African Union (AU), 328
Africans
    black
        contempt for, 21
Agojian, Sarkis, 77, 79…81
Ahmad, Muhammad, 458
Akayesu, Jean-Paul, 485
Aktion T-4 Euthanasia, 205…225
    impact and response, 214…216
    origins in history and thought, 212…214
al-•Askari, •Abdallah Abdel-Qadir, 386…388
Albanians
    dispute with Serbs, 447…448
    Kosovar
        mass killing, 435
Alexander, Leo, 217, 224
al-Ghazal, Bahr, 457
al-Mahdi, 459
al-Majid, Ali Hasan, 375…376, 383…384, 392
    resignation of, 379
Am Spiegelgrund, 218
Am Steinhof, 218
American diplomats
    reaction to Armenian massacre, 70
American Jews
    Holocaust impact on, 137
American missionaries
    reaction to Armenian massacre, 70
Amin, 388
Anatolia, 53, 63
Andersson, Charles, 16
Anfal operations
    antecedents and characteristics of, 379…380
    beginning, 377
    cease-fire, 378
    chemical attacks, 386…388, 392
    course of, 376…377
    current interest, 385…386
    deportation, 391…392
    document authenticity, 380
    execution sites, 389…391
    eyewitness accounts, 386…392
    final surge, 378
    historical forces and trends, 382…384
    interpretation, 385
    Iraqi Kurdistan, 375…392
    nationwide census, 376…377
    organization and implementation, 380…382
    responses, 384…385
    transit camps, 388…389
Annan, Kofi, 264, 354, 426
Anti-Communist army units
    killing Indonesian Communist Party members, 233…258
Anti-Semitism, 130, 131, 133…134, 138, 139…140

Anti-Tutsi violence, 400
Arab Bedouins, 57
Arab elite
  Sudanese, 458
Arabs, 61, 70, 457
Arbil, 381
Armee Patriotique Rwandaise (APR), 405
Armenian execution
  Syrian desert, 56…57
Armenian genocide, 53…86
  concern today, 73…74
  deportation, 55…57, 63…75, 79…86
  distinctiveness of, 60…62
  events leading to, 65…68
  execution, 55…57, 63…75, 79…81, 83…86
  eyewitness accounts of, 76…86
  impoverished, 69
  learning from, 74…75
  long-range impact on victims, 69…73
  map, 52
  methodology, 55…57
  perpetrators of, 53…55
  persons involved in, 62…65
  reasons for, 57…60
  responses to, 70…71
  scholarly agreement about, 71…73
  secret police, 67…68
  starvation, 55…57
  victims of, 60…62
  women
    enslaved, 64
Armenian massacre, 68
  American diplomats reaction to, 70
Army. See also Soldiers
  Bosnian Muslim, 428…429
  Burundi, 327
  German
    Hereros genocide, 15…50
  Muslim
    Bosnian, 428…429
  Pakistani, 300
  Vietnamese
    invading Cambodia, 350
Army units
  anti-Communist
    killing Indonesian Communist Party members, 233…258
Arrest
  preventive, 166
Arusha Accords conference, 401…402
Assassination
  Jema, 71
  Ndadaye, 331…332
  political
    of Indonesian generals, 235…236
  Talaat, 71
Atrocities
  Burundi, 333
  East Timor, 270…279
Atrocity order
  Hereros, 26…28
Atrott, Hans Henning, 216
Auschwitz, 129, 148, 155, 184…186, 191
  decree on Gypsies, 170, 173
  French deported to, 139
  twins experiments, 174
Auschwitz-Birkenau, 150…151, 174, 186…189
  Gypsy camp, 170
Australia, 267
Austria
  disabled people genocide, 216…217
  Gypsies, 167
  Jews, 139
Awami League, 297…300, 307, 308
Ayub, Khan, 297

B

Baathist rule
  character, 384
Babies
  German killing, 42, 141, 190
Baboons, 20, 35
Baglishema, Ignace, 404
Bagosora, Theoneste, 402
Bahá•í community
  Iran
    protection, 484…485
Baker, James, 352, 477…478
Balkans, 58
Bangladesh
  intellectuals, 302
  map, 294
  nationalist movement, 296
  professionals, 302
  professors, 309…318
Bangladesh genocide, 295…318
  background, 295…298
  eyewitness accounts, 308…318
  India, 304
  international response to, 304…305
  lessons from, 307…308
  long-range impact on victims, 305…306

methods of, 300…303
people today caring, 306…307
perpetrators of, 303…304
reasons for, 299…300
Bangladesh Nationalist Party, 308
Banteay Chey
Cambodia, 362…366
Bantu, 16, 398
Barbie, Klaus, 139
Bartlet, Leslie Cruikshank, 49…50
Barzani, Massoud, 376
Barzani clan
deportation, 382
Bashir regime, 460
Basters, 24
Battle at Hamlairi, 25
Battle of Beresonia, 26
Bechuanaland
British, 38
Bedouins
Arab, 57
Bello, Carlos, 263
Belzec labor camp, 129, 179…180
Bengali collaborators, 303, 305…306
Bengali Muslim

American
reaction to Armenian massacre, 70
Disabled people, 175
deportation, 176
execution, 176
German physicians killing, 205…206
Disabled people genocide, 205…229
Aktion T-4 Euthanasia, 205…225
Austria, 216…217
public demonstrations against, 211, 217
Disregarding, 470
Djindjic, Zoran, 429
Drechsler, Horst, 34
Dress codes
for Armenians, 67
Drina Corps, 433
Düsseldorf Höherweg camp
Gypsies, 166
Dutch UN soldiers, 419
Dyhrenfurth, 182

E

Early warning, 473…474
East Timor, 485
annexation of, 272
map, 262
East Timor genocide, 262…291
contributions to genocide studies, 283…284
eyewitness accounts, 285…292
Indonesia destroying, 262…291
invasion and aftermath, 270…279
perpetrators of, 279…282
public executions, 271
refugees, 273
resettlement camps, 274
setting for, 265…266
special characteristics of, 282…283
Economic instability
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 420
Egypt
Ottoman viceroy of, 457
Ehrhardt, Sophie, 164, 173
Eichmann, Adolf, 137, 168
Enver, 53…55, 59…60
Epstein, Nechama, 140…158
Equality
opposing view of, 66
Erdemovic, Drazen, 430, 431…435
Erzberger, Matthias, 21
Esman, Daniel, 44…46
Ethiopia
Addis Ababa, 459
Ethnic cleansing, 454
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 417, 429
Khartoum, 462
Ethnic violence
Rwanda genocide, 397…398
Euphrates River, 57
Europe
Western and Eastern
map, 160
European Christian counties
Armenian appeals to, 58
Europeans, 70
Euthanasia
Aktion T-4, 205…225
impact and response, 214…216
origins in history and thought, 212…214
children's program
Austria, 218…220
institutions, 209
wild, 211
Evans, Gareth, 352
Execution
Armenian, 55…57, 63…75, 79…81, 83…86
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 429
handicapped, 176
public
East Timor, 271
Execution sites
Anfal operations, 389…391
Extermination
Hereros, 39…42
Extermination centres
Jews, 129
Eyewitness accounts
Anfal operations, 386…392
Armenian genocide, 77…86
Bangladesh genocide, 308…318
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 430…443
Burundi genocide, 332…336
Cambodian genocide, 359…370
dearth of, 7
disabled peoples genocide, 216…229
East Timor genocide, 285…292
Gypsies, 177…194
Hereros genocide, 36…50
Holocaust, 140…159
importance of, 2, 5
Indonesian genocide, 245…258
peasants

Cambodia, 366…370
Rwanda genocide, 406…412
Ukraine
Soviet man-made famine, 104…123
value and limitation, 6

F

Faiz Lake massacre
Bangladesh, 317…318
Family camp
Gypsies, 170
Fein, Helen, 478
Field Hereros, 16
Final Anfal, 378
First-person accounts. See Eyewitness accounts
Floggings
Hereros, 31…32, 46
Focarape case, 431, 438…443
Forced labor camps
Jews, 129
Former Yugoslavia, 477…478
France, 70
Gypsy census, 167
Francona, Rick, 384…385
Frankfurt
Gypsies, 164
Franz, Hugo, 180…183
Fraser, Hendrick, 46…47
French
deported to Auschwitz, 139
Frist, Bill, 461
Front Patriotique Rwandais (FPR), 395…412
sympathies, 402…403
Fur tribes, 462…463
Furnace on wheels, 209

G

Gandhi, Indira, 304
Garang, John, 459
Gas
poison, 129, 182
Gas chamber, 185, 189, 209
Gasana, James, 400
Generals
killed in Indonesia, 235…236
Genocide. See also specific countries
confronting, 467…468
definitional issues, 3…4
denial of, 1…2
detecting early on, 473…474
education, 10…11
by scholars, organizations, and educators, 11
emergency, 456
Genocide Convention definition, 4
halting, 477…478
intervention and prevention, 467…487
legal system input, 3
Lemkin's definition, 3
organizational activity, 3
pledge, 2
prevention, 12
organized effort, 9…10
21st century
responding to, 453…465
studies needed, 8
United Nations' definition, 4
voice
activists vs. governments, 8…9
legal systems, 3
warning, 456
watch, 456
German army
Hereros genocide, 15…50
German physicians, 175
killing disabled people, 205…206
German scientists, 175
German South West Africa, 15…50
Germany
map, 126
Gestapo, 146, 152, 153, 176
Ghetto
Jews, 129, 141
Miedzyrzec, 144
Global response. See International response
Goebbels, Joseph, 176
Goering, Hermann, 128
Golijan, Tc 6Rgc

Kurdish guerrillas
Iraq, 376, 381
Kurdish irregular troops
Iraqi, 381
Kurdish tribesman
raiding Armenian convoys, 64
KurdistanDemocratic Party (KDP), 376
Kurds, 64, 70
deportation, 388…389
Iraqi amnesty, 379
Iraqi extermination of, 375…392

L

Labor camps
Belzec, 129, 179…180
forced
Jews, 129
Hereros, 31
Labor days, 99
Laborers
Hereros, 48…50
Land loss
Hereros, 19
Lenin
Ukraine Famine, 95
Leutwein, Theodor, 18…20, 22…25, 27…28
Levonian, Takouhi, 77, 81…83
Lewis, Robert, 18
Linden, Herbert, 206
Linenthal, Edward, 463…464
Lon Nol, 349
Lüderitz, Adolf, 17…18
Luderitzbucht, 49

M

Madium Affair, 234
Maherero, 18, 38
Maherero, Samuel, 17, 23…24, 40
Majdanek, 129, 147, 151…152, 154, 190
Makuramanzi, 408…409
Malaria
Cambodia, 346
Malik, Adam, 267
Malik, Amita, 311…317
Malkki, 332
Malraux, Andre, 304
Maly, Hans, 174
Mandate, 479…480
Mandel, Ruth, 461…462
Mann, Ernst, 214
Manoogian, Sisak, 78
Map
Armenia, 52
Bangladesh, 294
Bosnia-Herzegovina, 414
Burundi, 320
Cambodia, 338
East Timor, 262
Europe
Western and Eastern, 160
Germany, 126
Indonesia, 232
Iraqi Kurdistan, 374
Nazi camps, 126, 160
Rwanda, 394
South West Africa, 14
Ukraine, 92
Marriages
collective
Cambodia, 365
Marxism, 96…97
Masaalit tribes, 463
Mass graves
Indonesia, 252
Masskilling
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 429
Mass murder. Seealso Execution
German scientist participation in, 175
Massacre
Adana, 68, 76, 77…79
Armenian, 68
American diplomats reaction to, 70
Dhaka
Bangladesh, 298
Faiz Lake
Bangladesh, 317…318
Jagannath Hall
Bangladesh, 309…311
videotape, 311…317
Nyamata, 408…409
of Racak, 449
Santa Cruz, 264, 276
Mataim, Pak, 247
Mauthausen, 166, 191…192
McKim, W. Duncan, 213
Medak Pocket, 417
Melvern, Linda, 470
Mengele, Josfe, 174
Mesopotamia, 53
Micombero, 325, 329
Miedzyrzec ghetto, 144

Milosevic, Slobodan, 421, 430, 448, 450
trial, 415
Mishchenko, Oleksandr, 122…123
Missionaries
American
reacton to Armenian massare, 70
Christian
Hamitic lucubrations, 397
Hereros, 20…25
Mitscherlich, Alexander, 215
Mitscherlich, Margaret, 215
Mlaten
Indonesia, 247
Indonesian genocide, 247
Mobile killing squads, 128
Mok, 342, 343, 353
Mongols, 61
Monks
Buddhist, 365
Cambodia, 344…345
Moral clarity, 454
Mouvement Democratique Republicain (MDR), 399, 402…403
Mouvement Revdutionnaire National pour le Developpement (MRND), 399, 401…402
Movies
advocatng euthanasia, 214
Mugambira, Antoine, 407
Muhitira, Juvenla, 407…408
Mujibur, Rahman, 298
Mukeshimana, Josanne, 408
Muller, Jakob, 178…179
Mungunda, Hosea, 39…40, 48
Munpurua, Elephas, 38
Munqunda, Johannes, 38
Murdani, Benny, 268…270
Murtopo, Ali, 268…270
Musicians
Gypsies, 168, 180…183
Muslim(s), 362
army
Bosnian, 428…429
attacks
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 418
Bengali, 296, 302
Bosnian, 416, 417
execuiton of, 454
vs. Christians, 65
in Indonesia, 234
killing Communists, 236…237
overlord, 59
resentment toward A-9Tj /F3 . ie s

Russia, 69
defeating Ottoman Empire, 59…60
Gypsies, 188
Jews, 134
Russo-Turkish War, 66
Rwanda, 456, 464, 468, 469, 470
death lists, 471
lack of political will, 478
map, 394
Rwanda genocide, 395…412
courts, 405
descentnto hell, 402…403
eyewitness accounts, 406…412
halting, 480
ideology of, 398…399
inadequate judicial system, 405
killers sociological profile, 401
killing methods, 403
legacy of revolution, 397…398
local government authorities, 407…408
militia, 401
mythologies, 396…397
national reconciliation, 404…406
postgenocide, 404…406
presidential guard, 401
road to apocalypse, 399…402
victim dehumanization, 410

S

Sachsenhausen, 180…181
Saloth Chhay, 341
Saloth Sar. SeePol Pot
Samir Amin, 355
San Stefano, 66
Sanatoria, 206
Santa Cruz massacre, 264, 276
Sarajevo, 428
Satellites
space-based, 468
Schlosser, Katesa, 34
Scholars
synergy among, 482…483
School
Burundi, 326
Schutzstaffel. SeeSS
Scientists
German, 175
Secret police
Armenian, 67…68
Security Police, 176
Serbia
uprisings, 65
Serbs
Bosnian, 416, 418
Croatian, 416
dispute with Albanians, 447…448
Sermon
von Galen, Graf, 226…229
Shankar, Ravi, 304
Shawcross, William, 350
Sihanouk, 340, 341, 348
overthrow of, 363
Sikirica, Dusko, 425
Simbananiye, Artémon, 325
Sinta, 161…194
Slave trading, 458
Sobibor, 129
Soldiers
Dutch UN, 419
Solomon, Richard, 352
Son Sen, 353
Sonnenstein, 209
South West Africa
map, 14
Sovereignty, 475…476
Soviet deportations, 5
Soviet man-made famine
Ukraine, 93…123
Soviet Union
Jews, 133
killing fields, 189…191
Space-based satellites, 468
Special Organization, 63…65
Srebrenica, 415, 481
fall, 418…419
safe area, 419
SS
Gypsies, 164, 176, 179…182, 188…189, 190
Jews, 128, 129, 131, 132…133, 152
Stalin, 5
Ukraine Famine, 93, 95…96, 100…101
Starvation
Armenian, 55…57
Ukraine, 93…123
Sterilization
handicapped, 176
Streicher, Julius, 176
Students
Bangladesh massacre, 309…318
Burundi, 326, 334
Sudan, 461
genocide threatened in, 457
Sudan People•s Liberation Army (SPLA), 459, 460
Sudanese Arab elite, 458

Sugama, Yoga, 268…270
Suharto, 244, 264, 266, 267, 275, 280, 283
Sukarno, 235, 266
Suleimaniyah, 392
Surpik, 78
Surveillance
government, 468
Survivor syndrome, 135
Swartbooi, David, 43
Syarifuddin, Amir, 234
Syria, 53, 63
Syrian desert
Armenian execution, 56…57
Systemic issues, 483…484

T

Talaat, 53…55
assassination of, 71
Talabani, Jalal, 376, 392
Tatarian, Heleen, 77…79
Taxes
for Armenians, 67
Tecklenberg, Hans, 31
Tecklenburg, Regierungsrat, 28
Television news networks, 469
Telli, Diallo, 328
Testimony
Philippovic, Emma, 222…223
Widerhofer, Leopold, 216…220
Wödl, Anny, 220…222
Thoun Cheng, 362…366
Timbu, Manuel, 40…42
Timor
location of, 265
Tito, Josip, 420
Tiutiunyk, Larionivna, 121…122
Tjetjo, 18
Tjetjoo, 40
Tjienda, Traugott, 48…49
Tjongarero, Traugott, 38
Topzawa prison, 389…391
Totalitarianism, 134
Totten, Samuel, 6
Transcaucasia, 59
Transit camps
Anfal operations, 388…389
Traugott, 40
Treachery
German army to Hereros, 38
Treaty of Berlin, 66
Treblinka, 129, 190
Troops. See also Army
Kosovo Protection Force, 449
Tropical frenzy, 21
Trosanj, 438
Tudjman, Franjo, 421, 422
Turco-Egyptian control of Sudan, 458
Turk, Marianne, 218…223
Turkish dynasties, 53
Turkism, 58
Turks, 61, 64, 70
unification, 59
Turner, Michele
eyewitness account, 289…291
Tutsi, 321…336, 395
inequality, 396
Twins experiments
Auschwitz, 174
Typhus, 102, 150, 158, 182, 186, 191
Tyseista, Michael, 37

U

Ukraine
churches, 113
map, 92
national revival, 94
social development of, 94
Soviet man-made famine, 93…123
Ukraine Famine, 93…123
Stalin, 93, 95…96, 100…101
Ukrainization, 97
Ullah, Nurul, 312…314
UN International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia (ICTY), 424…426
UN official reports
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 426…427
UN peacekeeping operations
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 423…424
UN safe areas
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 418…419
UN soldiers
Dutch, 419
Under-Chief Albanus, 38
Under-Chief Elephas, 38
Under-Chief Traugott, 38
Unionists, 54
United Nations
Bosnia-Herzegovina genocide, 423…424
United Nations Commission for Refugees (UNHCR), 404
United Nations Mission in East Timor (UNAMET), 277

United Nations Transitional Administration in
East Timor (UNTAET), 265, 279
University
Burundi, 326
Uprisings
Greece, 65
U.S. Cambodia Genocide Project, 351
U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum
(USHMM), 453, 455, 465
Ustasha regime, 351